

THE MAGUS ERA

BOOK 11

Blood Red

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

The Magus Era

(巫神纪)

by

Blood Red

(血红)

Synopsis

Long ago, there were people who stood upon the earth with their heads held high. They never bowed to anyone because of their indomitable spirit. They were capable of controlling wind and lightning, and conquering dragons and serpents. They seemed strong enough to split the earth and shatter the stars with their fists. They traveled throughout the land and called themselves Magi. Eventually, one of them would become a Supreme Magus! These men are the ancestors of human beings. Their blood is what we all share today.

Qing Long is the former strongest man in the world. He traveled through space and time and was reborn as Ji Hao in the Fire Crow Clan of the Southern Wasteland. It's a complicated world. Forces from both inside and outside of the clan want this young and talented boy to die. Under great pressure, Ji Hao makes a deal with a mysterious man, who resides in his spiritual space, never showing his real face. He gains two drops of blood from a dragon and phoenix. Afterwards, Ji Hao becomes increasingly more powerful.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Law @ Qidian International

Translation Edit by Hitesh_ @ Qidian International

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1001: Arrow Fight

In front of Tushan Palace, Yi Tian growled furiously, while the thunder roc transformed from him fiercely slapped on the golden arrow released by Feng Xing with his right claw. Cyan-purple thunderbolt clashed against the shining golden arrow and generated another sky-shaking bang.

The arrow released by Feng King exploded into countless thin beams of frigid light and struck on the ground, stirring up hair-like strands of dust from the ground. The thunder roc quivered intensely, and followed by a puffing series of noise, countless electric bolts blasted, showing the tall and slim figure of Yi Tian, who looked like a sharp sword forged from the hardest metal. He staggered a few steps, then ragingly, viciously yet surprisingly, looked where the golden arrow came from.

"Yi Feng? You lowly b*stard!"

Yi Tian popped out his eyes and fixed them on Feng Xing’s divine bow.

"Yi Shen, that useless thing failed to kill you and get back the greatest divine bow of our clan. Now he’s dead, and I am the prince of Ten Sun Country!" Yi Tian clenched his fingers in the sky, as large bolts of thunder silently gathered towards his palm. Soon, they condensed into an oddly shaped longbow in his hand, coiled around by dazzling purple thunderbolts.

"How dare you show your lowly face? Yi Feng, you’re seeking death!" Yi Tian sounded extremely anxious as he screamed hoarsely, "Today, I will kill you! I have to kill you! The divine bow is mine! As long as I bring the divine bow back, I will become the next dominator of Eastern Wasteland!"

Man Man leaped up from the ground and yelled, "Oi, oi, didn’t you come to snatch the bride?"

Yi Tian paused slightly, then suddenly turned around, gave a large grin to Tushan Princess, who was standing by the gate of the palace and said, "Tushan Princess, just wait for a moment. I have to kill this traitor who stole the greatest treasure of my clan, then I will take you away!" Yi Tian surely believed that the grin of his was quite charming.

Threw a sideway glance at Si Wen Ming, who stood beside Tushan Princess, Yi Tian's tone turned extremely cold, as he continued to the princess, "I know you don't like him. He's not good enough for you! He's no one but the son of Si Xi from You Chong Clan. How can he be good enough for you? Only me, only the prince of Ten Sun Country deserves someone like you!"

Tushan Princess slightly knitted her eyebrows and helplessly shook her head. She took a small step towards Si Wen Ming and said with a very gentle and low voice, "Wen Ming, I have only met him a couple of times, all at new year banquets of Tushan Family. I don't know why he believes in his unreal imaginations so much."

Si Wen Ming raised his eyebrows, laughed brightly and clearly, and said, "Don't worry, I've seen many idiots like this. Girl, you shall worry about nothing. I am not that kind of a suspicious, narrow-hearted man!"

Tushan Princess smiled, shyly, yet with a beautiful vision for future.

Si Xi and Tushan old man glanced at each other, then these two old foxes grinned together.

All of a sudden, Emperor Shun, Si Xi, Si Wen Ming and the other human leaders on the scene, who had nearly reached the level of Supreme Magi, knitted their eyebrows simultaneously. They turned away from Yi Tian, who had been yelling at Feng Xing, and looked at the direction of Buzhou Mountain.

In Pu Pan City, only a hazy silhouette of Buzhou Mountain could be seen. Despite the fact that human Magi never cultivated their

souls and spirit, because of the great powers of Emperor Shun and the other human leaders, their physical bodies were extremely strong and were perfectly harmonious with nature. Therefore, they all had great senses, that allowed them to sense that some tremendous change was happening, and the source was in Buzhou Mountain.

Emperor Shun slightly waved his hand, and followed by his moves, from a forest hundreds of miles away, a few winged-dragons with cyan-black scales rose into the sky. They carried heavily armored dragon knights while flying to Buzhou Mountain at lightning speed.

Feng Xing walked down the hill step by step. There was a distance of tens of miles between Yi Tian and Feng Xing, and at the moment, they slowly and cautiously walked to each other.

Over ten-thousand Eastern Wasteland archers brought over by Yi Tian quickly spread out in all directions, nervously looked at Feng Xing and preparing to attack. They held their bows in their hands, with arrows between their fingers. As long as they grasped an opportunity, they would launch attacks on Feng Xing.

Tushan old man abruptly raised his eyebrows. Yi Tian’s warriors had shown an intention to start a great fight in the place of Tushan Family, which was an unforgivable disrespect to Tushan Family! Tushan old man gritted his teeth and raised his right hand, prepared to order Tushan warriors to stop these Eastern Wasteland archers from doing anything wrong. But next, he changed his mind, put down his hand and murmured to himself, "Be nice, be in peace, so money can be generated. We’re business people, no conflicts are needed!"

Si Xi and Emperor Shun speechlessly looked at Tushan old man. As the human emperor, Emperor Shun shouldn’t easily step into things like this. As for Si Xi, he snorted coldly, then as his mouth corner twitched slightly, a shrill whistle was let out.

The earth suddenly began quaking, and following a deep, rumbling, buzzing noise, enormous and especially sturdy flying bears with iron armors marched over wildly, with their thick, feather-less wings flapping loudly. These armored flying bears with thick furs were over ten meters tall. Their strengths were immense, and defensive powers were shockingly great.

Tens of heavily armored, elite You Xiong Clan warriors, whose faces were covered in masks with ghost-face embossments, stood on the backs of those flying bears. They held long and sharp spears, fiercely and violently piercing into the battle formations of Eastern Wasteland archers like numerous destructive axes, forcibly splitting those archers into over a hundred small groups.

Flying bear knights circled up from every direction and surrounded those archers, without leaving them any space to run or even move. As these formidable flying bear knights were less than ten meters away from each group of archers, those Eastern Wasteland archers helplessly dropped their bows while staring at these suddenly appeared cavalrymen in shock.

Without an advantage of space and distance, these Eastern Wasteland archers would be committing suicide by starting a fight against these flying bear knights.

Yi Tian barfed in anger, "Marquis Chong, how dare you interfere an inner affair of our Eastern Wasteland?!"

Si Xi chuckled and responded with his voice tailed off, "Yi Tian, kid, you came to try to ruin my son’s wedding. If Feng Xing fails to kill you with his arrows, I will personally chop your head off! Guess, will those old dudes from your Ten Sun Country and the other Eastern Wasteland clans dare to try to reason it out with me?"

Yi Tian’s face had even turned blue because of the rage. He turned around and looked at Si Xi, but even at such a moment, he didn’t forget to throw a glance at Tushan Princess.

By now, the distance between Feng Xing and him was only less than ten-mile. Facing a deathly fight, he was actually distracted and turned his eyes away from his enemy. Feng Xing silently pulled his bow open. Nine long golden beams of light dazzled brightly and flew to every vital body part of Yi Tian quietly, leaving sparkling traces in the sky.

Yi Tian shouted out in a fury, ‘Shameless!’. Then, a pair of thunderbolt wings spread behind his body and brought him swiftly up into the sky, reaching thousands of meters high from the ground within a blink of an eye.

The nine beams of golden light almost brushed against his body. Meanwhile, on Feng Xing’s back, a hurricane condensed into a pair of cyan-colored wings. As Feng Xing let out a long and resonant roar, those wings brought him up into the sky as well, chasing behind Yi Tian. The look on Feng Xing’ face was fierce and determined.

"Yi Tian, back then, I witnessed you kill so many people of my family!"

The divine bow buzzed, while a storm of golden light beams screamed and tore the air apart.

Chapter 1002: The Ring of Pangu Bell

In front of Buzhou Mountain, Ji Hao trod on clouds and slowly rose into the sky. Before his face, Buzhou Mountain rose from underground inch by inch.

This part of Buzhou Mountain was buried in the earth of Midland for countless years, and was wrapped in thick layers of dirt and sand. At the moment Ji Hao pulled it up from the ground, it made large pieces of rocks fall off from it, smashing down from the sky, as if the sky had broken. The ground was shaking slightly. Countless thin cracks appeared on the earth around the mountain, with large streams of earth power surging out, transforming into colorful light streams, and coiling around the mountain.

Back then, Spirit Wa, Donggong, Ximu, Priest Netherworld, Priest Dachi, and Priest Qing Wei combined their powers to melt the collapsed part of Buzhou Mountain. But still, Ji Hao suffered a great pressure by watching it, that even made him feel hard to breathe. But today, it was much easier than the last time. The remaining part of the mountain was nearly ten times larger than the collapsed part, but it was swallowed by the Taiji Creation cauldron quite easily, section by section.

In his spiritual space, the mysterious man showed up. Standing on that large round plate, his eyes shone with a dark-blue light while strong streams of Chaos power swished around his body. Added with his sturdy body which seemed to be immeasurably tall and strong, he looked just a pillar of the world, standing in Ji Hao’s spiritual space, which was now hundreds of times wider than before.

"This treasure followed me for so many years." Said the mysterious man while lowering his head and looking at the round plate under his feet, seeming to be reluctant to part with it, "It followed me till the last...Some pieces of it had been seen as supreme treasures by mortal people...However, following me... is

such a waste of it."

The mysterious man reached out his pair of hands, slowly and unhurriedly made the four moves on the plate-like platform. Sky-opening, earth-splicing, everything-grow, everything-perish. At last, the four moves were combined into one, then he silently locked his fingers together and made a fifth move.

As this powerful and mysterious move was made, the platform under his feet suddenly collapsed and transformed into countless streams of light, merging into his locked fingers like birds flying back into the forest.

A thunderous noise could be heard without an end. The remaining part of Sky Pillar had already been swallowed up by the Taiji Creation cauldron, leaving a bottomlessly deep sinkhole on the ground. A strong earth power was released from the hole that even shook Gong Gong's face, which was condensed from dark clouds, and had still been silently roaring in the sky.

"Melt!" Ji Hao gave a deep shout, then heavily slapped his both hands on the cauldron.

The cauldron had just expanded to tens of millions of miles in radius, but following Ji Hao's voice, it shrunk at an amazing rate. Ji Hao didn't notice that along with this heavy slap he made, the light streams transformed from the round platform that used to be resting under the mysterious man's feet, all flew into the Taiji Creation cauldron. None of those powerful human beings, who had been watching Ji Hao with their great powers, noticed that either.

A magical light emitted from the cauldron, and what came next was thunder. A faintly sensible, strange power of Dao emerged in the world. Visibly, a white sound wave spread out from around the cauldron, then along with a bell ring, another sound wave was sent out to all directions.

Nine bell rings were heard in a row, after which, an indescribable

light of Chaos was released from the cauldron. From within it, a simple-shaped large bell slowly rose from the cauldron. This bell was surrounded by the power of Chaos, and on its surface was an embossment of a giant holding a world with his hands.

"A bell?" Ji Hao raised his head and asked in surprise, "I haven't yet to decide what type of spirit treasure I want!"

In his spiritual space, the mysterious man had disappeared already. Only his voice came slowly out from the dense mist, "That's it, call it Pan Gu bell. This name is not bad. After all, it's made from Pan Gu's spine."

Ji Hao didn't know what the mysterious man did, but all of a sudden, he felt that his heart began drumming and his body began trembling. A mouthful of blood was squeezed out of his mouth and spread on that more than three meters tall, heavy and thick Pan Gu bell.

A slight bell ring quaked the entire world slightly. Meanwhile, a stream of Chaos power rose from the bell. Above Ji Hao's head, a red sun was spinning. The bell slowly merged with the red sun, floating in the middle of the sun like a sunspot.

No process was needed, Ji Hao and Pan Gu bell naturally shared the same mind and heart. He felt that this bell was a part of his body, such that he could clearly sense it, and knew every deep secret of it.

'A bell rings, all turns to Chaos!'

Pan Gu bell didn't have any special functions or powers. It couldn't twist the time or break the space. The only thing it could do was sending everything in the world back to Chaos, destroying everything. No matter time or space, Yin or Yang, the sun, the moons or the stars, the mountains or the rivers, once Pan Gu bell released its power, everything would cease to exist, and return to Chaos.

Pan Gu bell was able to turn everything in the world to Chaos, which meant, it could suppress all natural powers. With this bell floating above Ji Hao's head, nothing would be able to harm Ji Hao, even if the whole world was turned back into Chaos.

However, at this stage, Ji Hao could do no more than triggering the defensive power of Pan Gu bell, enabling it to suppress all kinds of natural powers. He wasn't powerful enough to trigger the destructive power of the bell at the moment. Probably because of the mysterious man, the bell and Ji Hao were perfectly intertwined and connected. Pan Gu bell was like a new arm of Ji Hao, and he could feel it and easily control it with his mind!

The only problem was that Ji Hao's body was a body of a human being, while Pan Gu bell was like an arm of an ancient giant! With Ji Hao's current tiny body, he couldn't trigger the full-power of the bell. When he tolled the bell with all of his strength, the bell rings he created only managed to go to ten-meter far.

In other words, if Ji Hao toll Pan Gu bell as hard as he could, within the area ten-meter radius around the bell, everything could be destroyed and turned back into Chaos. Even Supreme-level powerful beings could be careless and be killed by him!

But ten meters in radius, this striking range was just 'amazing', that brought Ji Hao a complicated feeling.

"Old man, is this the real spirit treasure of mine, the one you mentioned before? It's indeed powerful, but, why isn't it working well with me?"

The mysterious man didn't respond, but after a long while, he slowly said, "If is bell is made merely from Buzhou Mountain. You can indeed freely use it, as easily as using your own arms...It's just that, I was excited, so I added something to it. Therefore, the result is quite unexpected."

Pausing for a second, he continued excitedly, "But, it's really a good piece, a hundred times better than what I planned to give

you. Turning everything back to Chaos and suppressing all natural powers, including the Chaos power, are only its basic functions. You'll understand when you're powerful enough."

Hearing this confusing explanation, Ji Hao asked further questions, but the mysterious man chose to stay silent, without spouting another word.

Under the enormous dark cloud face of Gong Gong, tens of large-shaped Northern Wasteland water-kind spirit creatures stood on watery clouds, floating in the sky. They were looking down at Ji Hao while pointing at him, whispering to each other.

Ji Hao gave a cold smile, then the golden bridge suddenly dazzled out from between his eyebrows and allowed him to flash across the air and appear right before the faces of these spirit creatures. Pan Gu bell rose from the red sun, then Ji Hao punched on the bell with all his strength.

A bell ring could be heard within ten meters around the bell, and within this area, all of the powerful water-kind spirit creatures disappeared.

Chapter 1003: An Arrow Shot From Hiding

Most of Eastern Wasteland Clans inherited the powers of powerful ancient birds of prey, with the natures of wind, thunder or lightning.

The power of wind was invisible and immeasurable, the power of thunder was violent and destructive, and the power of lightning was sharp and swift. Because of these powers, the arrows released by Eastern Wasteland archers were always incredibly powerful and unstoppable.

Yi Tian roared towards the sky while his thunder wings sizzled in the sky and dragged him three hundred meters away. The second wave of arrows released by Feng Xing brushed his body once again. Apparently, Yi Tian was protected by an invisible layer of thunder forcefield, because whenever the arrows brushed him, dazzling bolts of thunder would burst.

Before Feng Xing reached his height, Yi Tian had already pulled open his longbow, which was wrapped in eye-piercing thunderbolts. He turned around and released an arrow towards Feng Xing.

Feng Xing's arrows screamed up like a storm, while Yi Tian's arrows roared down like a hammer strike made by the thunder God, violent and dreadful. Once Yi Tian's arrows were sent out by the string of his bow, those sparkling arrows would immediately turn into water-tank-size spheres of thunderbolts, striking at Feng Xing's chest with long dazzling tails.

The cyan hurricane wings flapped airily, allowing Feng Xing to nimbly move in the sky. When Yi Tian moved, thunderbolts blasted loudly. But when Feng Xing moved, he was as quiet as a ghost. Thin shreds of afterimages were left in the air like the shadows of ghosts. Without a great eyesight, one could never see where Feng Xing really was.

The strong thunder arrow shattered tens of shreds of afterimages left by Feng Xing in a row, but at last, it failed to touch even a hair of Feng Xing, and ended up stuck in the ground. The thunder arrow exploded, and sent up a raging flame from the ground. It opened up a, hundreds of meters wide, thousands of meters deep hole before the gate of Tushan Palace.

Scorching hot steam puffing out from the hole, as even the earth in the hole was burned into lava by those sizzling thunderbolts.

Feng Xing dodged that thunder arrow, after which his divine bow buzzed. An overwhelming wave of golden arrows was sent to Yi Tian. Every golden arrow was around three meters long, but was wrapped in a fierce, cyan-colored gale, leaving a long white trace in the sky. Along with shrill swishing noises, those golden arrows surrounded Yi Tian from all directions.

Yi Tian's thunder wings vibrated intensely, and each time those wings vibrated, a bright sphere of thunderbolt would burst from his body. Then, he would suddenly move hundreds of meters away. He was like a flea, leaping around in the sky, and every time he disappeared, and before he reappeared, three to five thunder arrows would be released towards Feng Xing.

Afterimages left by Feng Xing could be seen all over the sky. The loud swishing noise made by Feng Xing had covered the sizzling thunder blasting noise caused by Yi Tian. He carefully dodged those thunder arrows while attacking Yi Tian at his highest speed.

Both of them were swift, and were masters of archery. They both had their unique ways to dodge attacks, and even though they both looked in great danger of getting killed by the arrows of their enemies at any time, in fact, after a quarter of an hour of the intense fight, both of them remained perfectly unharmed.

Yi Tian was much more powerful than Feng Xing, who had just stepped into the level of Divine Magus with the help of the linden seed from Priest Mu, and had just managed to grow half an inner

spirit star inside his body. However, Feng Xing was way too fast, added with the pair of boots made by Yu Yu, which improved his moving speed by over a hundred times; he was as fast as a bolt of lightning. Yi Tian had tried his best, but he couldn't do anything to Feng Xing.

All people who were watching the fight clearly saw that Feng Xing was less powerful than Yi Tian, but he was at least three times faster and more flexible than Yi Tian. For a fight between Eastern Wasteland archers, speed was the most important thing. As long as one was fast enough, even if one were much weaker than the enemy, the latter wouldn’t be able to cause any harm.

Yi Tian roared in anger. Abruptly, he yelled at Feng Xing, "Yi Feng, you lowly b*stard, do you remember your married sister? When I slaughtered her entire family, she was pregnant already. I cut open her belly myself..."

Feng Xing suddenly burst with a shrill long shout, that sounded like the howl of a lonely, wounded wolf. Afterimages that almost covered the sky disappeared, and left Feng Xing floating in the midair.

"Yi Tian, do you dare to take an arrow battle against me?" Feng Xing growled in a hoarse voice. His wings disappeared suddenly, as he had sent all his power into his divine bow and generated a nearly tangible golden long arrow, humming on the bowstring.

The so-called arrow battle was crueler than an arrow fight, and needed the archers to be fearless to death.

In an arrow fight, the archers could still dodge. They still had the chance to show all kinds of great skills they had. Once, two master archers from Eastern Wasteland both remained unharmed after an intense arrow fight that lasted for whole ten days, and this was a glorious experience for both of them.

But an arrow battle was different. In an arrow battle, the archers were not allowed to run or dodge, and they had to fight by risking

their lives.

From a certain distance away, both sides of the battle had to give up on any chance of dodging or running, while attacking each other with their strongest arrows, for three times, ten times or a hundred times as agreed. They were not allowed to dodge, and they could only take the arrows launched by their enemies with their bodies.

If they could take it, they would survive.

If they failed to take it, they would die!

Only for a bone-deep hatred that may never be washed off would an archer suggest starting an arrow battle, which would possibly lead to death. Feng Xing's whole family was slaughtered by Yi Tian and his people, so he had enough reasons to do an arrow fight against Yi Tian.

"Ha!" Yi Tian folded his thunder wings, flashed across the air, and stood in front of Feng Xing. Sneering, he looked at Feng Xing coldly, nodded and responded with a frigid tone, "Good, you're a lowly b*stard, but you are indeed a brave b*stard...It's just... hehe, hehe!"

Murmuring a few words, Yi Tian suddenly burst with a thunderous growl.

From behind Feng Xing, less than two miles away from him, an Eastern Wasteland elderly man who had white hair and was wearing a tight feather armor, abruptly appeared while holding a long black bow. The elderly man pulled the bow open silently, with three six feet long arrows on the string. Without making even the slightest noise, the three arrows transformed into three dark beams of light, flying towards Feng Xing.

Man Man, Shaosi, Yemo Shanye all saw the elderly man under Yi Tian's command sneakily attack Feng Xing, but they didn't have the time to remind Feng Xing.

At this tense moment, Taisi, who seemed to be confused all the time, suddenly raised his head and pointed his finger at Feng Xing.

The three beams of dark light pierced into Feng Xing’s body. One penetrated his head, one penetrated his heart, and the last one went through his lower belly. While these three black feather arrows inside the three vital body parts of Feng Xing were about to explode, the magic cast by Taisi worked.

Feng Xing’s body was blurred, then suddenly being moved two hundred meters away.

What Taisi did wasn't too magical. He had simply moved Feng Xing to where he was in second ago.

From far away, Ji Hao, who had just embarrassed Gong Gong, dashed over like a bolt of thunder. Seeing that white hair elderly man sneakily attack Feng Xing in such an evil and nasty way, and almost killed Feng Xing, Ji Hao was totally enraged. He flashed across the air and showed up beside the elderly man while swinging the Taiji divine sword. An arc-shaped beam of light was left in the air, while the sword edge sliced across the elderly man’s neck.

Yi Tian was laughing loud when the head of that elderly man flew towards him, along with splashes of blood.

Chapter 1004: Cut Yi Tian

Without a doubt, the elderly man who sneakily attacked Feng Xing was a powerful one, who was even beyond the level of Divine Magus. He could even be considered equally powerful as those thousands of years old dragons titled as dragon kings among the dragon-kind, and each dominated a water area.

However, facing such a powerful being, Ji Hao just rushed to him and swung his sword. The black feather armor worn by that elderly man was made from the feathers of ten-thousand-year-old divine eagles, and had an incredibly great defensive power. Nevertheless, under the attack of the Taiji divine sword, the feather armor was as fragile as a piece of tofu, and was torn apart easily.

The elderly man had rich battle experiences, his body could almost be considered invincible in comparison with the other human beings. However, Taiji divine sword wasn’t slowed down, not even by a little bit. The armor feathers broke as the sword sliced across. The elderly man popped out his eyes in a soul-deep shock as he couldn’t believe it. He stared at Ji Hao with pale eyes while his head was sent flying to the sky, along with streams of blood.

Ji Hao cast a sword spell. A black and white stream of light flashed across the sword edge while a cyan-colored thunderbolt descended from the sky and struck on the elderly man’s head. The thunderbolt was powerful, turning the head into a strand of ash that drifted away along a gust of wind. The elderly men’s souls perished along with his body.

"Elder Gu!" Yi Tian screamed heartbreakingly. His long hair stood straight up one after another, turning purple and translucent. Extremely thin bolts of thunder spurted out, transforming into a waterfall of thunderbolt that reached to the higher sky.

Muffled thunders resounded across the entire sky. Yi Tian glared at Ji Hao and screamed, "You killed Elder Gu! Now, you're a sworn enemy of our Ten Sun Country!"

Ji Hao stood on a cloud while looking at Yi Tian, smiled faintly and said, "I am a sworn enemy of your Ten Sun Country since long ago, ever since I became friends with this guy, Feng Xing!"

In the distance, Feng Xing, who was saved by Taisi from a hopeless situation, took a long breath. A strange redness appeared on his face. Although Taisi twisted the time and saved Feng Xing from that deadly situation, Elder Gu was way too powerful, and Feng Xing suffered pretty badly.

Spirit blood surged inside his body, healing him quickly. He looked at Ji Hao and nodded heavily.

Ji Hao chose to become a sworn enemy of Ten Sun Country for no one else but him. Therefore, he would point his arrow at any enemy in the world for Ji Hao. A devil, a ghost or a God, as long as it was Ji Hao's enemy, Feng Xing would dare to shoot his arrow at it.

Yu Mu chuckled, took a few steps forward with his large belly puffed out. He pointed at Yi Tian, laughed, "Is your Ten Sun Country so scary? It has been so many years, I didn't see you do anything to Feng Xing though. Oi, Yi Tian, did you come to snatch the bride today, or to do anything else?"

Yi Tian paused, then threw a threatening glance at Ji Hao. He turned around, looked at Si Wen Ming and Tushan Princess, who stood by the gate of the palace. Abruptly, he roared towards the sky and yelled, "I will deal with the lowly thing that murdered Elder Gu myself. My warriors, follow my order. Attack Tushan Family and take Tushan Princess...I love her so much, but she is planning to marry herself to a nobody. This hatred is deep-seated!"

Tushan Princess's beautiful face turned slightly pale. She clenched her fists, staring at Yi Tian with an ice-cold look.

This guy said ‘Take Tushan Princess’!

He hadn’t even been seeing Tushan Princess as a living human being. He saw her as a thing that could be treated any way he liked. How could such a disgusting man say something like ‘true love’?

Tushan Princess felt sick, as if tens of worms had fallen on her hands and she couldn’t get rid of them.

Swishing noises were started, following which, large groups of Eastern Wasteland archers with wings showed up from all directions. They were holding large bows, with quivers hanging around their waists. Behind their bodies, their wings were condensed from wind, thunder or lighting, as they approached Si Wen Ming and Tushan Princess with vicious looks.

Those archers who were divided into small groups by the flying bear knights from You Chong Clan roared out together. They neglected those threatening flying bear knights around them, spread their wings and sent themselves up into the sky, pulling their bows open.

In many areas, flying bear knights raised their weapons and tried to stop these surrounded archers. Long spears pierced into these archers’ bodies, cut their bodies into pieces and brought out large streams of blood. However, these archers insisted on trying to fly up into the sky by risking their own lives. Those who managed to fly up all pointed their sparkling arrows at those flying bear knights.

Some flying bear knights were quite brutal and fierce. As they swung their long spears, arms or legs of some archers would be cut off by those sharp spearheads. Over a thousand archers were severely injured by these flying bear knights, but they gnashed their teeth, held their bows with the remaining hands, and silently stood on the ground with eyes burning in a fury.

Tens of thousands of flying bears roared unsettlingly. They flapped their enormous featherless wings and created fierce gusts

of wind blowing around their bodies. These fierce beasts fixed their eyes on those archers in the sky, ready to pounce up and tear all those archers into bits.

Emperor Shun finally talked.

"Yi Tian, don’t repeat your mistake! How dare you start a war in Pu Ban City?"

Emperor Shun’s face was badly darkened. Yi Tian’s behavior could be described as unruly and arrogant. No matter what, he had broken the rules of Pu Ban City, and by doing that, he challenged Emperor Shun, who represented those rules!

Both inner and outer problems that the humankind had been facing at the stage hadn’t been solved yet. If people from Eastern Wasteland clans were driven away from the alliance of human clans because of what Yi Tian did, the entire humankind would bear a risk. Emperor Shun could not tolerate Yi Tian doing whatever he wanted.

"Emperor Shun, not even you can stop me from taking Tushan Princess!" Yi Tian narrowed his eyes, fiercely staring at Emperor Shun and said, "She has to be mine! If you don’t give her to me, I will let blood splash all over Pu Ban today. You’re the ones to blame!"

Before Emperor Shun and Si Wen Ming said anything, Yi Tian roared out again, "Kill him!"

Just now, Yi Tian ordered those Eastern Wasteland archers who came to reinforce to attack Tushan palace and snatch Tushan Princess. But just now, he suddenly pointed at Ji Hao and ordered all Eastern Wasteland archers on the scene to kill him!

Over a hundred-thousand archers pulled their bows open. Among them, over a hundred were Divine Magi, over ten-thousand were Magus Kings, and the rest were Senior Magi. These elite archers roared shrilly while releasing countless beams of arrow lights,

screaming out and merging into a water-tank-sized, dazzling and enormous arrow in the air, striking at Ji Hao's chest.

This was a killing arrow formation that originated from Eastern Wasteland. The powers of all those elite archers were combined and compressed into an invincible giant arrow, that could kill an enemy at a higher level.

This killing arrow formation was only used in large-scale battles. But today, it was used for killing Ji Hao!

Ji Hao laughed out loud. Taiji Universe mirror silently emerged above his head, with a clear stream of light flashing across its surface. The enormous glowing arrow touched the surface of the mirror, paused, and next, flew back to Yi Tian at a much higher rate.

Ji Hao was only less than ten miles away from Yi Tian. Therefore, the giant arrow flashed to Yi Tian in no time.

Behind Yi Tian's body, that pair of thunder wings burst with a thunderous blasting noise. He flashed away, but the giant arrow brushed against this shoulder, evaporating his left shoulder and a big half of his chest.

Ji Hao roared out and teleported himself to Yi Tian.

The Taiji divine sword created another arc-shaped beam of light while it hacked down, cutting Yi Tian into two.

Chapter 1005: Take The Responsibility

With a single sword hack, Yi Tian, the new prince of Ten Sun Country, was killed.

Before the two pieces of his body landed on the ground, the natural powers agitated by the Taiji divine sword created a cyan-colored thunderbolt that descended from the sky and struck on them. As the eye-piercing thunderbolt flashed across, a puff of ash dissipated along the wind. Thus, Yi Tian disappeared from this world.

"No!!!"

Over a hundred-thousand Eastern Wasteland archers brought over by Yi Tian roared towards the sky simultaneously. Over a hundred Divine Magi, thousands of Magus Kings and nearly a hundred-thousand Senior Magi growled as loud as they could. The power vibrations they released started a strong hurricane that even shattered the drifting clouds in the sky.

A floating mountain was pushed by a gale, drifting across the sky above Tushan Palace. Being vibrated by the growls of those archers, the tens of miles in radius, thousands of meters tall floating mountain was blown up into pieces.

Tens of thousands of large white birds flew up from the collapsed floating mountain. They screamed, flapped their wings and tried to run. But facing the raging growls of over a hundred-thousand Eastern Wasteland archers and the sharp power they released, all of these large birds paused in the sky were blasted into a blood-red mist.

Countless white feathers drifted down, along with the blood-red mist. Within that beautiful rosy color, Ji Hao trod on a cloud, standing straight in midair, with the Taiji divine sword gripped in his hand.

"Wow!" Man Man popped out her eyes and looked at Ji Hao, seeming to deeply attracted, "He is even more handsome than Abba!"

Shaosi smiled silently and raised her little finger, slowly moving it. A magical power was released from that mysterious being behind her, under the effect of which, the figures of all those Eastern Wasteland archers blurred for a moment. Then, faintly visible streams of gray-white mist rose from their heads, merging into a faint gray stream, flowing into Ji Hao’s body

The fortune that belonged to those archers was weakened, almost to zero. Under the control of that scary magic cast by Shaosi, all their fortunes were sent into Ji Hao’s body. Ji Hao gained the fortunes that belonged to over a hundred-thousand Eastern Wasteland warriors, then had a bright beam of divine light flash across his eyes.

All of a sudden, Ji Hao felt that his mind was hundreds of times sharper and clearer than before, and he now was extremely energetic. Every cell of his was filled with vigor. The connection between him and this world was suddenly tightened, and he could even hear the great Dao of this world singing beside his ears, telling him the deepest secrets of Pan Gu world.

"Yi Tian is dead. What can you do now?"

Ji Hao raised the Taiji divine sword with a single hand. The body of the sword was transparent, as clear as water. But from time to time, a black and white light would flash across the slightly buzzing Taiji divine sword. The sword seemed to be merging with the surrounding air, seeming hazy and unable to be seen clearly.

Tens of Eastern Wasteland Divine Magi rushed out together without saying anything. They each gave a heart-breaking, hoarse growl as loudly as possible, and next, pointed their fingers at Ji Hao. All Eastern Wasteland archers pulled their bows open and pointed countless arrows at Ji Hao.

"You killed our prince Yi Tian. We, Ten Sun Country, will hunt you to the end of the day!"

An old Divine Magus screamed towards the sky with a high-pitched voice, "Earl Yao Ji Hao, from now on, you are a sworn enemy of our Ten Sun Country!"

After threatening Ji Hao, this old Divine Magus turned around, pointed at Emperor Shun, Si Xi, Tushan old man and Si Wen Ming, then continued, "Even as the human emperor, you cannot kill Prince Yi Tian of our Ten Sun Country! Emperor Shun, you let someone kill our prince right before your face. You don't deserve to be the emperor of human beings!"

Emperor Shun looked at those Eastern Wasteland archers with a gloomy face.

So unscrupulous, so arrogant. These elite warriors from Eastern Wasteland hadn't been showing any respect to Emperor Shun. They disparaged Emperor Shun, or in other words, they disparaged the power of the human emperor, and the alliance of human clans.

What did they want?

To leave the alliance of human clans and go independent?

Or, did they have any larger plan?

Yi Tian pursued Tushan Prince, but was he truly so infatuated with her? Ten Sun Country had spent countless efforts and resources to cultivate Yi Tian as a prince. How could such a man fall in love so easily with a girl that he only met for a few times, and how could he even be daring enough to directly offend the human emperor for her?

'The resources possessed by Tushan Family, the wealth, countless armors and weapons!' Emperor Shun clearly understood these things, but he couldn't say it out.

Anyone else could say what was in Emperor Shun's mind at the

moment. But he couldn’t say it himself, he just couldn’t.

Si Xi, Si Wen Ming each took a glance at Emperor Shun, both heavy-hearted.

The flood hadn’t been handled completely yet. By now, the flood was only sealed temporarily with the breathing earth and water-sealing magic formations. But, had those Eastern Wasteland clans started to lose patience already? Couldn’t they restrain their ambitions already? If this happened in Eastern Wasteland, what about the rest three wastelands?

"The old one, I killed your prince. I will take responsibility for that alone! If your Ten Sun Country people have the guts, go find me in Yao Mountain territory and take revenge for your stupid prince!" Ji Hao smiled coldly and continued, "This is between your Ten Sun Country and my Yao Mountain territory. What does it have anything to do with Emperor Shun?"

Ji Hao let out the Taiji Universe mirror, as a clear stream of light flashed across the surface of the mirror, and the body of that old Divine Magus suddenly moved. He raised his head in shock, staring at that mirror floating above Ji Hao’s head, as if he couldn’t believe his own eyes. The glow of the mirror flashed across his body, and instantly, the old Divine Magus sensed a coldness from his entire body, even making his internal organs start twitching. More terrifyingly, the power he gained through hundreds of years of severe cultivation was gone without a trace, just like a drop of dew under the burning sunshine.

"Help me!" Without any power remained, the old Divine Magus screamed out.

Tens of Eastern Wasteland Divine Magi reacted fast. They pulled their bows open and shot arrows at Ji Hao. The other archers roared out simultaneously, and the killing arrow formation was activated once again. A splendidly shining enormous arrow tore the sky apart, flying towards Ji Hao.

Ji Hao laughed out loud. These Eastern Wasteland people must have bad memories. Did they forget that just now, it was nothing else but an enormous glowing arrow like this which was generated by their sword formation that injured Yi Tian seriously, and let him be killed by Ji Hao without even being able to resist?

Ji Hao broke the space and flashed across the air, teleporting himself to the old Divine Magus, whose body was all softened by now.

"Remember, this is between my Yao Mountain territory and your Ten Sun Country!" said Ji Hao harshly, "Whatever dirty trick your Ten Sun Country has, you can use it on me, Ji Hao! Ha, regarding the hatred between you and me, I think I don't need to explain those to you one by one, do I?"

A distance away, Feng Xing raised his shining divine bow and shouted, "I am Feng Xing, the old name I had is Yi Feng. This is the best supreme treasure of the entire Eastern Wasteland! Lowly Ten Sun Country people, if you want it back, come to Yao Mountain territory!"

Ji Hao laughed out wildly, swung his arm and killed the old Divine Magus with his sword. Another cyan-colored thunderbolt descended, turning the old Divine Magus into ashes.

The enormous arrow generated by the arrow formation reached to Ji Hao's chest. Ji Hao chuckled while the Taiji Creation cauldron released a clear stream of mist and rolled around the arrow. Following a series of screams, all bows that belonged to those Eastern Wasteland archers were gone.

That enormous glowing sword, which was powerful enough to slaughter peak-level Divine Magi, disappeared as well. It was swallowed by the caldron, along with those bows.

Ji Hao looked at those archers, who were with empty hands now, and laughed, "Remember, whatever your Ten Sun Country want, you shall come for it to me! I, Ji Hao, am taking the responsibilities

for it all!"

Chapter 1006: Accompanying

For Eastern Wasteland archers, ninety percent of their powers and abilities were based on their bows and arrows. Without bows and arrows, Eastern Wasteland archers would be like tigers without claws and teeth, simply powerless. The bows and arrows of all Eastern Wasteland archers on the scene were taken away by the Taiji creation cauldron, this made them glance at each other in panic, without being able to say a word.

Ji Hao trod on that cloud and slowly took out an amazingly pure, valuable metal piece from the cauldron, along with a large number of dragon tendons, flood dragon tendons, dragon horns, horns of other legendary powerful creatures, and many other rare materials.

"Thank you!" Ji Hao cupped his hands to over a-hundred-thousand Eastern Wasteland archers, grinned and said blandly, "Piss off... or, do you all want to die in here?"

Enormous featherless wings of those flying bears from You Chong Clan started a loud series of swooshing noise as tens of thousands of You Chong Clan flying bear knights flew up into the sky. Those gigantic flying bears roared deeply and strongly, and some especially powerful ones even incanted a spell with hoarse voices. These enormous fierce beasts were ready to launch their strongest strikes.

Over a hundred-thousand Eastern Wasteland archers shouted out, and seventy percent of them drew back. But along with the raging roars of over a hundred Divine Magi, around thirty percent of these archers pulled out their backup bows and put the arrows on the strings, aimed at Ji Hao once again.

A coldness abruptly showed in Ji Hao’s eyes as he gave an evil smile.

When Ji Hao chuckled out, Emperor Shun and Si Xi’ looks

changed suddenly, then shouted together, "Earl Yao! Don’t do it!"

However, the Taiji Universe mirror above Ji Hao’s head had already slightly buzzed and released a gray-white, dim stream of light, which was transformed from the extremely negative power. The dim light stream surged out from the mirror and drilled straight into the bodies of tens of thousands of Eastern Wasteland archers. Under the effect of the dim light, the bodies of those archers were like sifters. Their powers and life-force suddenly leaked out from their bodies and disappeared within a blink of an eye, without a trace.

Ji Hao raised the Taiji divine sword and slowly took a circle in the cloud. Along with his movements, the long sword held in his hands drew a perfect circle in the air.

Natural powers moved along with the sword. Within the area of a hundred-thousand miles, all natural powers were absorbed by the divine sword. Sword light dazzled all over the sky, and in the following moment, hundreds of thousands of golden swords were condensed from natural powers. They floated in the air, spurting a raging fire and releasing a terrifyingly great heat.

The Moho staff, which was snatched by Ji Hao from Moho Family people, was also merged with these four new treasures by Yu Yu and Qing Wei. These four new pieces inherited the magical power of controlling natural powers that belonged to the Moho staff. By now, all natural powers within this area were compressed into shining golden swords. Each sword seemed to be tangible, and the essence sun fire releasing from every sword was strong enough to melt iron.

"Kill!" At almost the same time when Emperor Shun and Si Xi shouted out to try to stop Ji Hao, countless shining golden swords descended from the sky. Most of those Eastern Wasteland archers had their weapons taken away by the Taiji Creation cauldron and turned back into raw materials. As for the ones who had backup weapons, they were affected by the extremely negative power and

were now powerless. At the moment, their bodies were so soft that they couldn't even move their little fingers. Those golden swords pierced down from the sky and penetrated the bodies of all Eastern Wasteland archers, as easily as killing a chicken with a machete, and those archers weren't able to even resist.

Essence sun fire rose, as over a hundred-thousand human-shaped torches burned in Midair.

Emperor Shun suddenly raised his voice, growled harshly, "Earl Yao Ji Hao, don't do it! They're human beings after all!"

Ji Hao's fingers twitched slightly. He pondered for a short while, then swung the Taiji divine sword. Following his move, countless beams of fiery light flew out from those human-shaped torches and drilled back into the divine sword.

Ji Hao sighed, took out a golden healing pill given by Priest Dachi, along with a 'spring rain' magic talisman. He threw the pill and the magic talisman out together, and instantly, a drizzle started falling from the sky, while a nice aroma suffused the air. Those archers were burned miserably, and many of them even had half a body carbonized. But showering under the drizzle, they all moaned in comfort.

Their carbonized skins peeled off from their bodies, with new flesh growing. The power of the healing drizzle coordinated with the golden healing pill of Priest Dachi, and the strong life-forces of those Divine Magi, Magus Kings and Senior Magi. Within a few breaths, all those archers were healed perfectly.

Nearly a hundred Eastern Wasteland Divine Magi, who also suffered from the essence sun fire a second ago, stared at Ji Hao, stunned. They heard that Earl Yao Ji Hao earned his power and position with solid military credits, but they always thought Ji Hao was no more than a lucky kid, who luckily became friends with Si Wen Ming and made some contributions in the war. But today, they were nearly killed by Ji Hao. These proud Eastern Wasteland

archers finally realized that Ji Hao could truly fight tens of thousands of enemies single-handedly.

"Retreat!" Nearly a hundred Eastern Wasteland Divine Magi shouted out. They each took a glance at Ji Hao, then with anger and grievance, they quickly retreated from around Tushan Palace, heading back to Ten Sun Market in Pu Ban City. Each of these archers had a bone-deep hatred in their heart.

Ji Hao cast a glance at these retreating archers, dispelled the cloud treading under his feet, and landed in front of Emperor Shun and Si Xi.

He smilingly bowed to Emperor Shun and the others, then grinned warmly at Si Wen Ming. He cupped his hands and said, "Uncle Wen Meng, you're married! This is huge! Haha, you have to drink whole ten buckets of wine with me today! Is this my aunty? Truly...beautiful!"

Emperor Shun and Si Xi shook their heads together. Ji Hao almost slaughtered over a hundred-thousand Eastern Wasteland archers, which was now a huge trouble, waiting for them to deal with. Nevertheless, compared with the fact that he killed Yi Tian, what happened to those eventually surviving archers was not too big a trouble.

What made Emperor Shun, Si Xi and the other human leaders worry more was the attitude shown by those Eastern Wasteland people. That attitude made these human leaders think of something quite unpleasant. More importantly, if Eastern Wasteland people were holding such an attitude, what about the others? What about the other top-grade human clans?

Gong Gong started an endless rain that caused a flood. How many troubles would this disaster initiate within the humankind?

Seeing Emperor Shun and Si Xi' worrying face, Ji Hao laughed, "Emperor Shun, Marquis Chong, what is to worry about? Today is uncle Wen Ming's wedding day. We should do nothing but drink

happily. As for the other things, well, the sky is not collapsing!"

Emperor Shun, Si Xi and some guests they invited, who were all Si Wen Ming's friends, all laughed out.

Wasn't he right? The sky wasn't collapsing. What was to be worrying about?

Hadn't the alliance of human clans been developing through all kinds of difficulties? No matter how difficult these days were, this day was a lucky day for Si Wen Ming. Today, drinking in happiness was the most important thing in the world!

Vats of fine wine were carried out, and countless delicate dishes were served.

Not too many people were invited to the wedding of Si Wen Ming and Tushan Princess. All guests were Si Wen Ming's close friends, such as Huaxu Lie, Lie Mountain Kong, and some other princes, and a group of elder Magi from the Magi Palace. People gathered in Tushan Palace, drinking and laughing, until they sent Si Wen Ming and Tushan Princess into their new bedroom.

At night, when Si Wen Ming and Tushan Princess were trying to make a baby, Si Xi was still in the hall, drinking with his guests.

While happily gulping a glass of wine, Si Xi abruptly took out a magic talisman from his sleeve, then knitted his eyebrows.

"Some people are sneakily approaching a water-sealing magic formation. People, I have to deal with this myself."

Si Xi stood up, walking out directly.

Ji Hao hurriedly stood up, called Shaosi and the others, and shouted, "Marquis Chong, how can you go alone? Let us go with you. Controlling the flood is essential. We all have to do what we can!"

Si Xi nodded, took the lead, and flew into the sky. Ji Hao and a large group of people followed closely behind him.

Chapter 1007: Chen

Leaving Tushan Palace, Si Xi and the others flew fast. Before the Town Hall, a series of teleporting magic formations had been glowing brightly on a new square.

The ten-thousand dragons water-sealing magic formation included ten-thousand sub-formations. Each sub-formation served as an independent water-sealing magic formation, yet all sub-formations were connected. Every single one of these sub-formations built with the breathing earth was a core of the entire ten-thousand dragons water-sealing magic formation, and was essential. Therefore, under the order of Emperor Shun, ten-thousand teleporting magic formations were built with a great cost, each leading to a sub-formation of the ten-thousand dragons water-sealing magic formation.

Ever since Ji Hao purchased a large group of Xiu Clan masters from Black Shark Prison, the humankind had achieved an impressive improvement in the level of technology in the sphere of magic formations. It was especially true for commonly used ones, such as teleporting magic formations, for which a whole new level had been reached.

Ji Hao followed closely behind Si Xi and stepped into a teleporting magic formation.

A jade board floated above the teleporting magic formation, with two characters sparkling on it. On the jade board, the destination of this teleporting magic formation was clearly marked — Feather Mountain.

Ji Hao's heart sank. Feather Mountain was located on the edge of Midland, the most barren area. The mountain was steep, which made it perfect for building the water-sealing formation. The sub-formation in Feather Mountain was highly important. If it were damaged, the entire ten-thousand dragons water-sealing magic

formation would be affected.

For this reason, Si Xi was heading to Feather Mountain himself, to see what was happening.

But to Ji Hao, Feather Mountain meant something else. If he didn't misremember this, according to some books he read in his previous life, Si Xi was killed by Zhu Rong, the Fire God, in Feather Mountain, under the order of a Divine Emperor, because of the flood-controlling mission. By now, Ji Hao surely knew that the ancient heaven had fallen and the five Divine Emperors had gone missing long ago. The friendship had been spanning for generations between Zhu Rong Family and the family of Si Xi. Besides, Zhu Rong family people served the alliance of human clans as the Great Libation for generations, handling all important ceremonies for the alliance and keeping those deepest secrets, such as Chi You, who was sealed in the Devil-suppressing Palace.

Therefore, Ji Hao didn't believe that Zhu Rong would kill Si Xi.

However, the place that Si Xi was going to was indeed Feather Mountain!

Silently, Ji Hao made a few seemingly unintentional hand motions. None of the others noticed his moves. In their eyes, Ji Hao did nothing but tidied his sleeves and touched his belt. But in the eyes of Man Man, Shaosi, Yu Mu, Feng Xing and Taisi, Ji Hao had just given an emergency warning sign.

This trip was going to be extremely dangerous, and everyone had to be extra careful.

Man Man narrowed her eyes and jumped to Yemo Shanye. Feng Xing silently took a sideway step. Normally, he never wanted to be too close to the others. But now, he subconsciously approached Yemo Shanye to keep her under his protection. Man Man curved her lips and threw a glance at Feng Xing, then quickly took two steps backward, laughed and stood side by side with Shaosi.

Yu Mu coughed slightly, then gave an honest smile. He carried his large black iron pot on his back and stood behind Taisi. Because of his enormous fat body, Yu Mu looked just like a mother bear, while Taisi looked like a newborn baby bear. Yu Mu perfectly shielded Taisi's back with his own body. Additionally, if any attack came to Taisi from the front, Yu Mu would be able to react immediately.

More importantly, without drawing any attention, Yu Mu had quietly put a secretly concocted detoxifying magic pill in the hand of each of his teammates. Man Man, Shaosi, Taisi, Feng Xing, Yemo Shanye, they all hid the magic pill under the tongue and slowly melted it with saliva, then swallowed it. A strong coolness spread out in their bodies. Now, all Yu Mu's teammates were protected, and he could cast his scary magics of poison as much as he liked.

Loud metal friction noises could be heard, as tens of flying bear knights from You Chong Clan walked into the teleporting magic formation as well, mounted on flying bears. Si Xi nodded, impatiently waved his hand and gave a deep shout. The guard of the teleporting magic formation inserted a few top-grade pieces of magic formations into the slots of the formation. Strong natural powers started to gather in the teleporting formation, and all of a sudden, the air surrounding all the people dazzled.

Ji Hao and the others disappeared from the teleporting formation, and after an intense shaking, they arrived at the destination, walking out of the teleporting magic formation on the other end.

Yemo Shanye shook her head and slightly opened her erect eye. Within that eye, a pure dark whirlpool had been spinning at a variable speed. "Is this what teleporting magic formations of your humankind are like? Eh, I'm so dizzy...Did you forget to use space-stabilizing magic talismans?" She murmured.

Ji Hao smiled. He wanted to tell Yemo Shane that those Xiu Clan

masters had given the techniques of space-stabilizing magic talismans as well, but with a space-stabilizing magic talisman, a teleporting magic formation would consume ten-times more top-grade magic crystals than usual. Human leaders didn't want to waste any resources. Therefore, no teleporting formation of the humankind was added with space-stabilizing magic talismans.

Besides, Yemo Shanye felt dizzy only because she was too weak physically. Human Magi were strong, so who would care that little bit about dizziness caused by a slight twist of space?

But before Ji Hao could explain anything to Yemo Shanye, his smile suddenly froze on his face. The Taiji cloak released a light. The warm, water-like light looked like a large blooming lotus, spreading out layer by layer. Ji Hao gripped the Taiji divine sword and let the Pan Gu bell float above his head, pouring down a large stream of Chaos power that surrounded him up.

Ji Hao clearly remembered that a second ago, he walked out from the teleporting formation in Feather Mountain with everybody else. When they walked out, Ji Hao was less than fifteen meters behind Si Xi, while Man Man, Shaosi, Taisi and his friends were all by his side, that he could even touch any of them by simply raising his arms. Surrounding them were tens of elite Divine Magi from You Chong Clan, armed to the teeth, and over ten senior Magi from the Magi Palace, who were no more than three meters away from Ji Hao and his friends.

But at this moment, Ji Hao saw nothing around him but barren mountains.

Faint white mist drifted among meter-tall, withered grasses. Ji Hao had a good eyesight, with which, he saw a thumb-sized, jade-green grasshopper standing on a tall grass a few meters away. A breeze blew across, shaking the grass slightly, which startled the grasshopper. It made it leap over a hundred meters away and fall into a grass wood, then leap up again. After a few rises and falls, the grasshopper disappeared.

A thumb-thick, three-foot-long red snake slowly wriggled from beside the grass. Sneakily, he approached Ji Hao's heel, opened its jaws and attempted to give Ji Hao a bite.

Ji Hao snorted while the red snake made the bite. When the snake's shark teeth were still over two feet away from Ji Hao's heel, a Chaos power stream flashed across the air. The red snake exploded and turned into a puff of blood mist.

Ji Hao took a deep breath, then closed his eyes.

A red sun rose from his head. Meanwhile, his strong spirit power spread out in all directions overwhelmingly like a tsunami.

Pop! Ji Hao felt that a thin screen before his eyes had broken, and he saw through the mirage.

On a hill around ten miles away was a thousands of meters long, multicolored glowing clam. Splendid lights spurted out from his body, covering the entire teleporting magic formation.

In Chinese mythology, the Chen (sometimes also written as 'Shen', transliterated from Chinese word '蜃'), literally means 'large clam'. It's a shape-shifting sea monster, believed to create mirages.

Chapter 1008: Boy Chen

The clam was thousands of meters long. Its shell was multicolored and shining. Inside the shell was a silver, nearly transparent flesh, that was squirming slowly. Glowing mist streams were drifting out from the shell, covering half of the Feather Mountain.

Flowers, grasses, trees, all plants on the mountain was wrapped in that glowing mist. Something magical happened to these plants, that made them seem to be strange and unreal. Long grasses were curling, with crystal drops of juice dripping down from the edge; the juice was golden, and had a honey-like, nice aroma.

Beside the teleporting magic formation, a few towering trees had their crowns grown enormous. Countless aerial roots were hanging down, thickly covered in bell-shaped, white blossoms, spreading a comforting aroma that would make anyone want to fall into the deepest sleep.

A group of white mushrooms was coiled around by the glowing, colorful mist. Tiny wings grew out from the stalks of those mushrooms, with which, they even flew up and reached five feet high while singing like birds. They unhurriedly flew across the air, right before Ji Hao's eyes.

From these flying mushrooms, puffs of spores drifted out along the wind like fireflies, landing on the grassland. Soon, different-sized, silver mushrooms drilled out from the earth, glowing with a misty, silver light in the darkness, lighting up the entire grassland.

Ji Hao took a heavy step forward.

His spirit power was strengthened by the extremely negative power and extremely positive power, and was able to break all illusions and see through all mirages. Just now, he released his spirit space and felt that a thin screen was shattered before his face. By now, the illusion created by that enormous clam should

have been broken by him already.

Nevertheless, in his sight, these plants were still unreal, as the only explanation for all these magical scenes was that this clam was way too powerful. Under the effect of his power of mirage, all normal plants had been transforming into magical beings.

Ji Hao looked around and saw thousands of heavy armored human warriors lying around the teleporting magic formation. Their faces were blushed, and eyes rolled fast under the eyelids. From time to time, some of them moaned with strange voices.

These were guards of the teleporting magic formation in Feather Mountain. Obviously, they were controlled by the mirages created by the clam since long ago. At the moment, they had lost the control of their own bodies, and their minds had traveled far away.

When Ji Hao was observing these human warriors, one of them suddenly straightened his upper body and twisted his neck hard. Crack! He broke his own neck by twisting. Blood splashed out, while the head thudded on the ground for twice.

Ji Hao was shocked. This warrior must have surrendered his entire mind to the mirage. In that mirage, his enemy broke his neck and killed him. The mirage was too real to him, even to the extent that both his body and soul firmly believed in what happened in the mirage. Therefore, in the real world, his neck broke itself, that made him die for real.

How terrifying was the power of mirage that could even allow a man to break his own neck by a simple turning his head, even without using his hands?

Puff! Another human warrior suddenly had a thin yet rather deep slash appear on his neck, as if an extremely sharp sword had just sliced across his neck. A thin flake of blood mist sprayed out. Following that puffing noise, this human warrior twitched for a few times, then his life-force drained quickly.

"Damn it!"

Ji Hao growled in rage. His thunderous voice spread out and shattered all grasses within the area hundreds of miles radius, making the area around him withered and empty. Yellow and dry grass bits were sent flying everywhere.

Ji Hao took another heavy step forward, while the Taiji divine sword released a black and white light that reached nearly a hundred meters away. Ji Hao pointed at the clam with the sword tip and shouted, "How dare you kill our human warriors? How dare you?! Aren't you afraid of the endless revenge of our humankind?"

Following a loud series of cracking noise, inside the teleporting magic formation, less than three meters away from Ji Hao, a powerful Divine Magus under Si Xi's command had his chest suddenly dented. His armor was crushed, and so were his ribs. This Divine Magus gasped, boosted up his spirit blood, and speedily healed himself, making his wounded chest bulge back up. However, before he recovered completely, this body of this Divine Magus was broken into two from the waist, just like a thin bamboo stick. His upper body fell to the ground, and along with that bone cracking noise, the back of his head touched his ankles.

Puff! Puff! Puff! Over ten puncturing wounds appeared on this Divine Magus's body, as blood gushed out in streams while he twistingly lied on the ground. Blood surged out from his body, which was incredibly heavy, creating deep ditches on the ground. Despite his powerfulness, the life-force of this Divine Magus drained itself, then faded away.

Ji Hao gave a deep shout. He couldn't pay any more attention to that giant clam. Instead, he hurriedly took out an evil-exorcising magic talisman made by Priest Dachi. The magic talisman was given by Priest Xuandu before Ji Hao went to Pan Xi world for the life-and-death game. Ji Hao activated his Yu Yu's Dao of Qi and shattered the magic talisman.

Soft mist streams sprayed out from Ji Hao’s palm and condensed into fist-sized lotuses, hovering around and bringing that mist to further areas. Eventually, a large mist cover was created, that enveloped Si Xi, Man Man, Shaosi and all the others.

Si Xi slightly quivered and suddenly opened his eyes. Two yellow-colored streams of light dazzled from his eyes as he growled with a thunderous voice, "Such a powerful illusion magic!" gasped Si Xi and continued, "You woke us, Ji Hao!"

Si Xi was truly a famous, powerful one among the entire humankind, that even though he was stuck in a mirage, he wasn’t fooled, nor shaken. Instead, he clearly realized the situation. With the help of Ji Hao’s magic talisman, he freed himself from the illusion immediately, after which, it took him no time to realize the fact that he had already gotten out from the illusion and returned to the real world.

Following Si Xi, Yemo Shanye was surprisingly the second one who managed to struggle out from the illusion. She opened her erect eye, with a dark swirl spinning in it. Faintly, Ji Hao sensed that around Yemo Shanye’s body, the power of mirage released by that clam was devoured by her erect eye.

Yemo Shanye shook her head and stared at Ji Hao in a daze for quite a while, then slapped her chest and said, "Ah, I was in such a fun place just now, with so many rabbits...large cats...large bears..."

The faces of Ji Hao and Si Xi twitched. It seemed that Yemo Shanye’s illusion wasn’t dangerous at all, was it?

Soon, Man Man and Shaosi woke up. Once they woke up, Man Man let a puff of fire out of her mouth while Shaosi trembled intensely, letting out a mouthful of blood. Clearly, she suffered some internal injuries.

Ji Hao frowned, covered Man Man’s mouth with one hand and held Shaosi with another hand.

In the distance, above that enormous clam, the colorful glowing mist gathered. Then, a pink little boy, who seemed to be seven to eight years old and wearing a beautiful colorful cloth, showed up quietly.

"Eh? Have you broken away from the illusions of mine, Boy Chen?"

"I would feel so humiliated if anyone else knew about this!" sneered Boy Chen, as he opened his mouth and sent out a thumb-sized, seven-colored bead.

Chapter 1009: Chaos Monster

Once that tiny multicolored bead showed up, millions of hair-like yet extremely sharp lasers were emitted. The lasers struck on the light screen created by Priest Dachi's magic talisman, making the clear and warm light screen quake like a soft sponge. Pieces of that light screen were sliced quickly off by those dagger-like laser beams.

The light screen disappeared a hundred times faster than Ji Hao estimated. After a couple of breaths, following a popping noise, the clear and warm light screen exploded into strands of mist and dissipated in the air.

Si Xi, Yemo Shanye had just woken themselves up from their illusions. But all of a sudden, beams of laser struck on their bodies. They paused while a faint, seven-colored layer of light covered their bodies. Then, they each showed happiness or sadness on their faces, while softly fell back to the ground without being able to stand up, just like those guards.

"Boy Chen!" growled Ji Hao.

Puff! Puff! Puff! Thousands of laser beams landed on Ji Hao's body in a row, attacking the Chaos power released from the Pan Gu bell. The Chaos power stayed perfectly motionless, while laser beams shattered one after another and turned into colorful light spots, drifting everywhere.

Those drifting light spots landed on surrounding plants, then magical things happened to them. Right beside Ji Hao, a towering tree suddenly gave a roar, while a beautiful girl face appeared on its tree trunk. Next, the branches of the tree became hissing snakes, while large roots rose from underground and wove into an enormous pair of legs. Rumblingly, this towering tree rushed away with huge steps.

Boy Chen grinningly crooked his tender finger towards Ji Hao

and said, "He’s angry, he’s angry. Haha, come, come, come beat me! I’m right here, I’m not going anywhere. I won’t move at all, haha!"

Ji Hao glanced at Si Xi and the others, who had fallen into illusions once again. He took out another magic talisman, but abruptly, the colorful bead floating above Boy Chen’s head released streams of splendid light.

Those misty light streams poured gently onto the bodies of Si Xi and the others along with a beautiful melody, looking like a rain of shooting stars. Surrounding them, the air rippled like the water. Then, Si Xi, Man Man, Shaosi and others were wrapped up by that water-like, flowing air, sparkled for a few times and disappeared without a trace.

Ji Hao clenched his fingers and gripped the talisman in his hand. He raised his head, coldly looking at Boy Chen without saying a word.

"Eh? Wanna kill me?" Boy Chen laughed with a hissing voice while excitedly waving his arms, provoking Ji Hao, "It’s has been so many years. Many, many people wanted to kill me, to take the pre-world dark juice inside me and build their own perfect foundation of Dao."

As a seven-colored dim light sparkled in his eye, Boy Chen shouted in excitement, "But none of them succeeded, none of them. Ever since that big guy, Pan Gu, created this world, till the end of the prehistorical era, no one managed to find me, no one managed to kill me. I, Boy Chen, have traveled across the world. But, people only heard my name, without seeing even my shadows!"

Boy Chen grinned so hard that his eyes now looked like a pair of lines as he continued, "You’re enraged, you’re furious. Do you wanna kill me? Then come do it, come!"

Ji Hao stared at Boy Chen gloomily. Creatures called Chen were

large clams living in the sea, good at creating mirages and illusions. They were not rare in the oceans of Pan Gu world. Many relatively older clams were able to create mirages and illusions, and could be called ‘Chen’.

However, this glowing, seven-colored, thousands of meters long clam, who called himself Boy Chen, was releasing a dreadful, prehistorical power vibration. It gave Ji Hao a strong pressure. Ji Hao thought Boy Chen was a monster who lived since the prehistorical era, but in fact, Boy Chen was a Chaos monster, who had witnessed the creation of this world! This was truly unexpected.

In other words, this scary creature was a Chaos devil God, even possibly, Boy Chen was one of those Chaos monsters who attacked Pan Gu after he created the world and was exhausted and weak!

"You...You’re a Chaos monster!" shouted Ji Hao, "You should know about the power of fortune, the power of weal and woe. You’re going against our humankind, are you ready to die for that?!"

Boy Chen laughed again with that hissing voice, and that taunting laughter of his was extremely provoking.

Scornfully, he crooked his finger at Ji Hao, smiled and said, "Fortune? Weal and woe? What I and best at is nothing else but keeping myself alive. You don’t need to worry about my fortune... This time, I didn’t come to hurt your humankind personally. It’s Gong Gong, he’s doing something big for all water-kind creatures in the world. Gong Gong is taking all the sins. That’s why the old ones like us come out to help him!"

Excitedly taking a few circles in the air, Boy Chen continued while gasping quickly, "Replay the Chaos, turn Pan Gu world into a world of vast water, into the paradise of our water-kind! Even the natural laws of Pan Gu world will change till then! For such a great deal, how can we not help?!"

Replay the Chaos? Turn Pan Gu world into a world of water?

Ji Hao paused briefly. Was what Boy Chen said really true?

Did Gong Gong truly have a plan like this? Was it true? Or did he just fool Boy Chen with his lies…'Us'?

Ji Hao's heart suddenly drummed up. Why did Boy Chen say 'us'?

A deep roar came from behind Ji Hao. That roar was especially strong, that made Ji Hao feel as if ten-million ancient dragon whales had just roared right beside his ear together. That resonant and resounding roar was as strong as a tangible thing, as it struck violently on the Chaos power released from the Pan Gu bell.

Buzz! The teleporting magic formation treading under Ji Hao's feet was shattered by that roar, then a fierce impact wave struck over from behind him, affecting a fan-shaped area around Ji Hao. Along with a shrill swishing noise, the earth in front of Ji Hao disappeared. At last, a fan-shaped, large pit was left on the ground.

The Pan Gu bell stayed perfectly unmoved, and so did the Chaos power streams it released to protect Ji Hao.

After all, the bell was a supreme piece made from ninety percent of Pan Gu's spine and a mysterious magical treasure that belonged to the mysterious man. Even though the power of the one who sneakily attacked from the back was truly terrifying, how could the Pan Gu bell ever be shaken?

Ji Hao turned around and saw an around one hundred-meter tall man, whose body was covered in giant muscles that made him look just like an iron block. He was standing behind Ji Hao in a daze, looking at Ji Hao from head to toe in confusion.

This muscular man didn't have a single hair on his body, all he had were those giant muscles. Even his eyelids were covered with human-fist-sized muscles. When he blinked his eyes, his eyelids thudded loudly against each other.

Was this muscular guy the one who attacked Ji Hao in the back just now?

"You’re not dead?" The muscular man stared at Ji Hao, seeming to be stunned.

"Who’re you?" Ji Hao coldly looked at the guy, whose pale skin was covered by bronze-colored scale-like patterns.

"Die!"

The muscular guy didn’t answer the question. Instead, he swung his arm backward, pulled out an oddly shaped, enormous blade with sawtooth, and hacked down at Ji Hao’s head.

Chapter 1010: Attacked by a Group of Monsters.

Buzz!

The Pan Gu bell rang deeply. The tens of meters long giant blade held in that muscular man's hands started a wave of green-colored, ripping watery light that swept to the surrounding area. The Chaos power released from the Pan Gu bell still remained unmoved. Ji Hao stood inside those Chaos power streams, staring at that muscular man with a dark face.

"Fei'lian King! Didn't you eat your lunch?" Boy Chen taunted viciously, "Or, are you just like those idiots who can only steal leftovers from human beings now?"

Fei'lian?

Ji Hao paused for a short moment. Didn't that mean cockroach? This creature was around hundred meters tall in his human shape, which meant he was a hundreds of meters long giant creature in his original shape. He was so enormous that Ji Hao couldn't connect this muscular man with those normal cockroaches that could be seen everywhere.

The muscular man seemed to discover the doubt in Ji Hao's eyes. He roared in a deep yet thunderous voice, "I am Fei'lian! Chaos monster, Fei'lian! Boy Chen and the other b*stards, how can you use my noble name on those lowly nasty bugs?!"

Boy Chen smirked, "But your true face really looks like those tiny bugs!"

While speaking, Boy Chen clapped his hands, and instantly, the colorful bead above his head released a splendid stream of light. It reached over like a rainbow and covered the area with a radius of around a hundred miles around Ji Hao.

Things around Ji Hao immediately turned strange, as all twisted

scenes kept popping out.

Fire burning in water, stones flying like birds, trees rooted in the clouds in the sky, with crowns drilled into the soil... Mountains were slanting, and from the pools on the ground, drops of water rose into the air. Silver flying fishes were hatching from those flying water drops. These beautiful fishes flapped their wings, which were twice as large as their own bodies, and flew across the sky like a swarm of locusts.

Then, a beautiful, cherry-like pair of lips appeared in the sky. Only the most beautiful woman in the world could have such a pair of lips. This hundred miles wide pair of lips slowly opened, then billions of silver flying fishes flew into this giant mouth, which gulped them all.

The giant mouth seemed to be satisfied and gain its strength. From the snow-white, shining teeth behind those cherry-like lips, a silhouette slowly emerged. That was a strangely attractive, beautiful woman, with dark-green hair and a slim waist. She was wearing a long dark-green dress as she charmingly walked out from between those shining teeth. She flashed across the air, then showed up right before Ji Hao's face.

Ji Hao silently watched all these inconceivable scenes. These were illusions, these were illusion-like true images created by Boy Chen by twisting the light and shadows within this area with his great power, and that seven-colored bead which was definitely a pre-world supreme treasure.

Illusions created by Boy Chen could directly affect the souls of living beings, to trap his targets in those unreal illusions. However, what he had been creating at the moment were called 'real visions'. These supernatural scenes indeed happened before Ji Hao's eyes. No matter what power Boy Chen used to create them, these visions were from truly happened events. These visions were real and unreal. Whether Ji Hao used his physical eyes or his spirit power, these visions seemed to be real to him.

Boy Chen’s face turned slightly pale. Obviously, creating these ‘real visions’ required some solid efforts, even to him. It was far less easy than creating those illusions that he used for attacking Si Xi and the others just now.

Ji Hao looked around vigilantly. Those visions he saw had gone far beyond his imaginations already. That giant mouth had disappeared, but the beautiful woman who walked out from the glow of those teeth was standing right in front of him. She was face to face with Ji Hao, looking at him through the meters thick layer of Chaos power released from the bell.

The woman smiled elegantly, then asked with a gentle voice, "Earl Yao Ji Hao?"

Ji Hao remained silent, while giving a glance at Fei’lian King.

That muscular guy had his eyes narrowed, gripping the hilt of his giant blade, wielding and causing a loud swishing noise. Sharp airstreams stirred up by the blade screamed to tens of miles away, leaving hundreds of deep ditches on the ground.

"Ah, don’t worry about this big guy!" The woman with a green dress smiled, threw a sideway glance at Fei’lian King, and continued in that soft and gentle voice, "He has nothing but strength. Oh, the blade of his is transformed from his horn, and is quite sharp. Beyond that, he was nothing special."

Giving a charming grin, the woman slowly carried on, "His brain is not working well. He survived to the present day by working for Boy Chen, guarding Boy Chen’s place. Otherwise, as such a silly being, he would have been enslaved by someone else as a mount, or simply been turned into ashes long ago."

Before Ji Hao said anything, the woman laughed, "Ah, no, no, no one would take him as a mount. His true face is too, too ugly. That kind of tiny bug...Hehe, which one of those famous powerful beings would be willing to sit on a bug?"

Fei'lian King snorted coldly, then all of a sudden leaped into the sky and reached thousands of meters high instantly. Then, he flashed down like a shooting star and launched a violent hack on the Pan Gu bell.

The power delivered by this hack was immeasurable, because Ji Hao clearly saw that, Fei'lian King's blade had torn the space apart and left a thousands of meters long, hundreds of meters wide, black crack above his head.

Buzz! The Pan Gu bell suffered another fierce attack, yet, it remained unmoved, while nothing but a slight ripple was stirred up from the Chaos power streams it generated. On the surface of the bell, that embossment of the giant dimly sparkled, while the bell absorbed the power delivered by this strong hack entirely. Before Ji Hao activated the power of the bell, the Pan Gu bell had already transformed this powerful hack launched by Fei'lian King into a bell ring.

Dong!

Fei'lian King was apparently much more strengthful than Ji Hao. Bell rings generated by Ji Hao could reach to ten meters far at most, but this hack launched by Fei'lian King sent the bell ring to every corner of the entire area, with a radius of ten miles.

A dim Chaos light sparkled, while all plants, sand, stones, rocks and animals within this area collapsed, as well as the time and space.

The earth power, water power, fire power, wind power, all natural powers in this area had disappeared. Everything was sent back to Chaos, as if the world was never created.

The woman with a green dress was frightened. Her beautiful face suddenly twisted while she screamed in a fury, as is she had just seen a real ghost. While shouting hysterically, she flashed a hundred miles away. But even though she ran pretty fast, her left arm was still touched by the Chaos light, and silently, her left

forearm disappeared from below her left elbow. The wound was as smooth as a mirror, without shedding a single drop of blood.

"Fei’lian King! You brainless b*stard!"

The woman cursed furiously, while Boy Chen screamed in a startle as well.

Fei’lian King howled in pain, as hundreds of extremely deep and long slashes appeared on his body, with blood surging out in raging streams. Staggeringly, he rushed out from the coverage of the Chaos light.

Heartbreakingly, Fei’lian King had two lines of hot tears gushing out of his eye sockets, as he cried, "My blade! my blade! my blade!!!"

Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh! Seven more silhouettes dashed out from all kinds of supernatural scenes, and circled Ji Hao up.

Chapter 1011: A Long-lasting Hatred

When the seven silhouettes, with different shapes yet each releasing a dreadfully strong power vibration, rushed up to Ji Hao, the latter had already made the Big Dipper sword steps, and moved behind Fei'lian King as fast as a bolt of thunder.

Extremely high in the sky, three tremendous stars in the colors of black and red were lightened up. Each of them was filled with the desire of killing and destroying. The Taiji divine sword lunged forward swiftly, while three streams of starlight, with multiple edges, poured straight down from the sky.

The starlights roared and transformed into three hideous and fierce beast heads in the air, less than a thousand meters away from the ground. The three streams of starlight struck into the Taiji divine sword. Ji Hao growled deeply, and following his voice, he made the sword move taught by Yu Yu. The power of the sword wrapped the powers of the three fierce stars, with the names of 'Kill', 'Break' and 'Wolf', piercing towards Fei'lian King's heart from his back in an unstoppable way.

Fei'lian King was still crying for his blade and didn't pay any attention to Ji Hao's moves. He didn't know what the Pan Gu bell was made from, neither did he know how terrifying it was. He launched a full attack, which landed on the Pan Gu bell and generated a bell ring. In the next moment, within the area a hundred miles in radius, the world was destroyed, instantly.

Chaos light lingered on Fei'lian King's body and sent a destructive power inside. It seemed to turn his muscular body into Chaos as well, same as what happened to those plants and sands and stones.

Fei'lian King was a Chaos monster. He was born in the Chaos, and fed on those chaotic energy tides. His shell was washed by countless, extremely dangerous, enormous energy tides in the

Chaos, and was as powerful as an average-level pre-world supreme treasure. He also had an amazing defensive power. However, under the effect of the ring of the Pan Gu bell, Fei'lian King was struck with a heartbreaking pain that made him feel like a tiny bean in a tremendous milestone. He felt that he was going to be crushed into liquid, into ashes, until he ceased to exist in the universe.

His incomparably strong body couldn't withstand the power of the bell ring. At almost the same moment when the bell ringed, hundreds of long and deep rips appeared on his body. His gigantic and sturdy body was nearly torn into pieces.

Fei'lian King didn't have a choice. He could only detonate his blade, which was his spirit weapon and forcibly create a tiny crack through the power of the short-lasting ring of Pan Gu bell. In that critical moment; he had also abandoned a strong armor that he found in the Chaos, then finally rushed out from the coverage of the bell ring, with blood spurting out from all over his body.

That armor was also a pre-world treasure, but it was shattered by the bell ring as well. The good thing was Fei'lian King didn't value that armor too much; he was simply crying for his blade. He made that blade himself with his horn, the strongest part of his body; he cultivated the blade severely for countless years, with incalculable efforts! That blade was his life. He fought with it for so many centuries, and it helped him get through hopeless situations thousands of times! His life, his spirit, all depended on that blade!

His spirit blade was destroyed, and Fei'lian King felt that a large piece of flesh had been sliced off from his heart. It was painful, it truly was. He cried miserably, and even nearly fainted.

Ji Hao took this opportunity, made the sword steps taught by Yu Yu, and flashed behind Fei'lian King. He activated 'Kill', 'Break', 'Wolf', the three fierce stars and let the sword absorb the star powers. Combining the power of Taiji with the powers of the three fierce stars, he lunged his sword at Fei'lian King's heart.

In the distance, Boy Chen growled hoarsely in a fury, "Are you all dead?! If we lose Fei'lian King, we would have one less old brother!"

The woman with a green dress was not yet recovered from the fright. She glanced at the Pan Gu bell that was floating above Ji Hao's head, abruptly leaped up and yelled, "I'm out! What Gong Gong promised me is not enough for me to risk my life for him!"

The woman witnessed the whole thing. Fei'lian King stupidly launched a full attack on the Pan Gu bell, generated a bell ring, and almost got himself killed. Fei'lian King had to abandon his spirit blade that he had fought with for countless centuries, to save his own life. But even then, he was still severely injured!

'Look at those wounds on Fei'lian King's body!'

These powerful spirit creatures were not like human Magi. They didn't have strong spirit blood and life-forces to rely on, and weren't capable of quick self-healing. Once their bodies were wounded, only tons of food and a long-lasting dormancy could help them recover; if any accident happened during the recovering process, they could die at any time!

While yelling and complaining, the woman in a green dress darted away, followed by a series of green light spots.

"Ms. Green Toad! You coldhearted b*tch!"

Meanwhile, the seven silhouettes that showed up just now cast a resonant roar together. Four of them wielded their strangely shaped weapons and pounced on Ji Hao like four violent bolts of thunder, while the other three screamed resonantly, agitating the natural powers around them. Suddenly, dark gusts of wind, blue ice flakes, and green poisonous liquid streams were created, all sent to Ji Hao.

"Welcome!" Ji Hao growled, while the Taiji divine sword cut open the strong skin on Fei'lian King's back and sank deeply into his

body.

The powers of the three fierce stars transformed into three hideous beast heads, roaring inside Fei'lian King's body, ripping his bones, muscles and internal organs. Ji Hao activated the power of the sword itself as well. The extremely positive power and extremely negative power transformed into a fiery dragon and a dark phoenix and drilled into Fei'lian King's body, crazily damaging that strong body.

The essence sun fire burned a sizzling noise out of Fei'lian King's body, and soon, a half of his body turned red, like a shrimp on a hot iron board. Meanwhile, the extremely negative power covered another half of Fei'lian King's body with thin ice flakes. Wherever the bone-piercing extreme negative power reached, Fei'lian King's life-force was drained. The frozen half of Fei'lian King's body was withering and shrinking.

More scarily, the essence sun fire and extreme negative power clashed against each other within Fei'lian King's body, generating bolts of thunder. At first, those thunderbolts were only as thick as hairs. But, within a blink of an eye, they grew to the size of bowls, and blasted thunderously inside that strong body of Fei'lian King.

Under multiple attacks, Fei'lian King screamed in pain. In addition to all the above, the lighting bolts released from the Taiji divine sword were even fiercer, and had caused terrible damage to Fei'lian King's body.

A furious roar burst, following which, Fei'lian King's body began expanding. In a moment, he became a thousands of meters long beetle, which was thickly covered in bronze-colored scales. At first glance, Fei'lian King's real look was indeed around eighty percent similar to a cockroach.

Ji Hao shouted out and raised the Taiji divine sword. As he prepared to behead Fei'lian King, the attack launched joined handidly by those seven silhouettes had already landed on the Pan

Gu bell.

Buzz! The attack generated another short yet especially strong bell ring from the Pan Gu bell.

Chaos light dazzled towards all directions, while all seven of them screamed and teleported themselves to over a million miles away.

However, Fei’lian King was severely wounded and didn’t manage to run. Under Ji Hao’s control, the coverage of the Chaos power delivered by the bell ring this time was concentrated within a radius of merely nine-thousand meters, and had Fei’lian King’s body covered.

This time, Fei’lian King had no more chance to escape.

Following a miserable howl, Fei’lian King’s enormous body suddenly turned into a strand of Chaos power and dissipated quickly.

Boy Chen screamed heartbreakingly in sadness, while tears fell from his eyes like rain.

"Fei’lian!!" shouted Boy Chen.

Chapter 1012: Ju Fu and Lili

While Boy Chen’s colossal body was twitching intensely, a magnificent rainbow, that could even shake people’ souls, was released from his body, and rose straight into the sky. When the rainbow dissipated, Boy Chen’s real body, which was a giant clam, was gone. Instead, a pink boy, who looked exactly the same as the human figure he created to show Ji Hao, showed up on the hill.

The seven-colored bead was in between the boy’s eyebrows, sparkling with a colorful light, and looking like the third eye.

Boy Chen had been trembling slightly while staring at Ji Hao, as he said word by word, "You killed my only friend!"

Ji Hao raised the Taiji divine sword and said in a completely emotionless tone, "You attempted to kill my friends first, and till now, I don’t know where you sent them. You asked for this!"

Boy Chen’s pair of eye turned colorful and glowing as well. The seven-colored light spun in his eyes and looked like the images in two kaleidoscopes. The sky suddenly became colorful, while the ground turned into a multicolored, waving water. Boy Chen looked at Ji Hao and abruptly began roaring frantically.

"Sure! The weak are the prey of the strong, isn’t this a natural law?! I attempted to kill you, and I will... What’s wrong with that? You lowly, weak human beings..."

Ji Hao immediately interrupted Boy Chen and said, "Do you tend to do things by following the rules of the prehistorical era? If so, isn’t it even more reasonable for Fel’lian King to be killed by me? What did he have except for that silly strength of his?"

Ji Hao smiled and continued scornfully, "Compared to me, the Fei’lian king was the true weakling!"

Boy Chen didn’t know how to respond. He quivered slightly, but couldn’t say anything for quite a while.

The Pan Gu bell rang twice in a row, until a hundred-mile radius crater appeared on the ground. Because of Boy Chen's weird power, the ground had now been waving like water, and that giant crater was filling with a colorful liquid. On the surface of the waving liquid in the crater, an enormous face silently emerged.

This face stared at Ji Hao, its eyes filled with lifelessness and viciousness.

The thick lips of that enormous face began moving, generated a high-pitched voice and screamed, "Brothers, what're you waiting for? Together... Kill this kid! Ms. Green Toad! Why're you hiding?"

The woman with a green dress stood on a mountaintop hundreds of miles away, looking at Ji Hao with a dark face. Hearing the enormous face yelling in the crater, she shouted harshly, "Boy Chen, he killed Fei'lian! Are you trying to get all of us killed too? How can it so easy?"

The seven powerful Chaos monsters just survived a destructive ring of the Pan Gu bell. At the moment, they hid away as well. A scrawny Chaos monster with red hair and green skin showed his teeth, while eyes glowed with a dim blue light. He screamed with an ear-piercing voice, "Boy Chen, Fei'lian King was your best friend, not ours. That idiot...Hm, you want us to kill him together, so why don't you do it first?"

"This kid is protected by a supreme treasure. I can't drag him into the illusion! I can only pin him to the ground from the outside. If we truly want to kill him, you guys have to do something!" Boy Chen burst with a hysterical roar.

He leaped in anger and screamed, "Tusk Sandfly King, don't you forget that we're on the same side!"

Tusk Sandfly King and the other six Chaos monsters, and Ms. Green Toad, who was now standing a long distance away, laughed out loud together. Tusk Sandfly King opened his large mouth, showed his dagger-sharp teeth, laughed hoarsely and said, "The

same side? By Chen, did you forget that we're all water-kind creatures? You don't think that we're all going to be drowned by the flood without you as a boat, do you?"

Ms. Green Toad twisted her slim waist and said with a silvery voice, "Do you want us to work for you? But you're just not qualified enough. Boy Chen, do something! Actually, Fei'lian King was drunk once, and he told us...Except for creating illusions, you have another ability, to kill, don't you?"

Boy Chen paused instantly. In shock, he threw a glance at Ms. Green Toad and asked, "Did he really say that?"

Ms. Green Toad and Tusk Sandfly King glanced at each other, then Tusk Sandfly King responded coldly, "He guarded your place for so many years, so he should know pretty much everything about you, shouldn't he? Was what he said true? Do you truly have a hidden ability? Which means, back then, when we attacked Pan Gu, you didn't do your best, did you?"

Boy Chen's facial expression changed quickly, same as the mirages he created.

He twitched his mouth corners, showed a weird smile, then laughed with a hissing voice, "So he told you that... He deserved to die then. I even shed tears for him, what a waste! If I knew he had such a big mouth, I would have killed him myself!"

Ji Hao sighed heavily, sneered at this group of Chaos monsters who had now been doing nothing but arguing, and said, "Did you finish your crap yet? I'm going to start killing!"

Boy Chen snorted coldly and glanced at Tusk Sandfly King and the other Chaos monsters who refused to launch any attack. Abruptly, he screamed out, "Why don't you do anything?! Why are you still watching?! Aren't you afraid of the punishment from Black Emperor?!"

'Black Emperor?'

Ever since the ancient heaven fell, this title hadn’t been mentioned for many centuries. Even in the alliance of human clans, this title only appeared occasionally when elderly people told legends to the children at leisure times.

Who on earth was that ‘Black Emperor’ Boy Chen mentioned? Gong Gong?

"Aw!" A thunderous growl came from a mountaintop a hundred miles away. Abruptly, an enormous ape-shaped monster showed up. This monster was yellow, and had a pair of extremely long arms. The ape raised his arms, clenched his claws and grasped a splendidly glowing, five-colored piece of jade that had multiple edges, and was around hundred meters in radius. The monster quaked his long arms and sent the jade piece out. It crushed the space and created a wave of white air blast, causing a loud popping noise as it struck Ji Hao as fast as a bolt of lightning.

The closer it got to Ji Hao, the smaller this jade piece turned. By the time it reached Ji Hao, it had shrunk to the size of a human fist. However, the power delivered from it and its weight hadn’t changed at all.

The jade piece bumped into the Chaos power streams released from the Pan Gu bell, accurately avoiding touching the bell.

A swishing noise could be heard without an end, as more jade pieces were thrown over one after another, vibrating the Chaos power screen intensely. Yet, they failed to do Ji Hao any harm.

"Ju Fu…It won’t work!"

A boar-like monster that had mantis claws, yellow hair and thick black scales underneath, showed up and said. "Only I can deal with this human being!" yelled this monster.

As this monster pointed at Ji Hao, the ground under Ji Hao’s feet disappeared suddenly, and a bottomless hole appeared on the ground. A strong suction force came from underground, shook Ji

Hao’s body, and dragged him down into the hole, along with the Pan Gu bell.

"Remember!" shouted that boar-like monster, "I am Lili, and that is Ju Fu..."

Buzz! Layers of rock around Ji Hao crushed down from all directions.

Chapter 1013: Original Spirit Creature God

The ground folded back together. Thousands of meters deep underground, earth meridians roared like raging dragons. The nearly tangible earth meridian powers transformed into countless fierce-looking beasts, pouncing on Ji Hao from every direction, and making the surrounding rock layers as hard as diamond.

A dreadful pressure came from everywhere, crushing the Chaos power released from the Pan Gu bell. Under the bell's protection, Ji Hao remained perfectly unharmed. He looked around, and saw those yellow-colored, hideous beasts transformed from earth meridian powers roar without making any actual sound. Countless yellow divine spell symbols were faintly sparkling inside these beasts' bodies, spreading that overwhelming pressure.

That pressure was pure, and came from true natural powers without mixing with any power of spirit creatures. The structure of the magic formation formed underground by these earth meridians beasts even looked similar to some magic formations contained in the blueprint of the Heaven and Earth great formation. What happened down here was caused by natural power, instead of any evil magic formation invented by those spirit creatures or monsters or ghosts.

"Lili?" Ji Hao murmured while locking his fingers together, attempting to cast a magic to free himself from this situation. However, the earth powers around him were sealed, as If he was surrounded by iron walls. No matter how much Ji Hao tried, he couldn't put any earth power to use. Without the help of the surrounding earth power, he surely couldn't cast the magic, that was supposed to allow him to move freely underground. Ji Hao incanted the spell for a couple of times, but he failed to move even an inch. He was stuck.

"Underground moving magic?" Lili's hoarse voice came from not so far away. All of a sudden, a large area of rock glowed. The thick

rock layer turned transparent like glass, then Lili, who looked like a boar but had mantis claws, looked at Ji Hao coldly through the miles-thick rock layer.

"I am a God of earth, raised by the world itself. I am ruling this land, and only I can control the earth power." said Lili while proudly looking at Ji Hao, "It's smart for you to try to cast a magic like that, but...It's useless in front of me, just useless!"

Lili pointed at himself with a claw, and growled proudly, "I am Lili, I am a true God! Earl Yao Ji Hao, you brought disasters to the world. You slaughtered countless living beings, so the Divine Emperor ordered us to kill you and your people!"

Ji Hao was badly confused. He looked at Lili, sneered and said, "I brought disasters to the world? And did you say that you're a true God? What? Are you joking? The ancient heaven has fallen, so where is this Divine Emperor from? And which kind of true God are you?"

Lili looked at Ji Hao in a serious and confident way. As a boar-like, dark and enormous monster, no matter how hard he tried to act like a serious God, he looked funny and ridiculous. Nevertheless, the power vibration released from Lili was truly immeasurable, like an ocean that contained pure and vast natural powers.

His scale began sparkling with a dark-yellow light, and gradually, his body turned translucent, like a yellow crystal. Through his body, Ji Hao saw a three feet and six inches long, half a foot wide and one-inch thick, purple board floating inside Lili's head.

The purple board inside Lili's head was divine and magical. It was covered in embossments of clouds, with countless faintly visible divine palaces. A purple-golden line of ancient divine characters was written on the board vertically. Ji Hao understood ancient divine characters, so he quickly translated this line — 'Commander of Feather Mountain, a true God of the Earth

Department, Lili!’

"A divine talisman from the heaven!" In Ji Hao’s spiritual space, the mysterious man slowly showed up. The round-shaped platform that he normally sat on had disappeared. By now, he sat in the air with crossed legs, as he said to Ji Hao with a deep and strong voice, "It’s true, this thing is really a true God. Feel his power, he should be an original spirit creature God, the first generation!"

An original spirit creature god?

Ji Hao immediately asked the mysterious man what did that mean.

The mysterious man explained it to Ji Hao with simple words.

Back in the ancient heaven, divine Gods were generated by the world itself. They came from the great Dao of nature. As the first generation of true God, these incredibly powerful beings represented the original natural will of this world.

However, in the ancient heaven, there was another kind of Gods, those were the first batch of creatures in this world. After the creation of the world, the original power of Dao merged with these original creatures, and gifted them the greatest divine powers. It enlightened their souls and made them smart. These powerful original creatures were recognized by the ancient heaven as well, and were conferred as true Gods, under the will of the world itself.

These original creatures had fleshy bodies and different shapes. They were pure-blood spirit creatures. Therefore, they were called original spirit creature Gods!

Different original spirit creature Gods married each other and left offsprings. Their bloodlines mixed together, creating many rare and strange species, which were the ancestors of the current spirit creatures.

Standing in front of Ji Hao, Lili had been releasing a pure sense of power. That power of his was completely pre-world, without

being stained by any after-world filthiness. The power vibration that came from him was also pure. He was undoubtedly a true God, and became a God in a fair way, under the will of nature. He was not like White Dragon River God, who randomly occupied an area and called himself a God. Therefore, the mysterious man said that Lili was an original spirit creature God, because all features of his proved that truth.

"But, it's impossible!" Ji Hao was shocked. Didn't all original spirit creatures Gods fall along with the ancient heaven? Even if a couple of them luckily survived all the great wars, their pure pre-world powers must have been stained by after-world powers already. It was completely impossible for them to stay stainless. But the mysterious man said that Lili didn't have even a single slice trace of after-world stain on his body.

This was impossible, and neither was it reasonable.

"Under the order of the Black Emperor, I am now killing the evil being, Ji Hao!" Lili growled resonantly. Meanwhile, he raised his pair of claws, and following his moves, the especially sturdy rock layers around him began quaking intensely. Feather Mountain was a great mountain range, that extended for tens of millions of miles. But now, Lili's power woke it up. All of the natural earth power and mountain power possessed by Feather Mountain surged over through earth meridians and struck on the Pan Gu bell, layer by layer.

The buzzing noise could be heard without an end. The Pan Gu bell was simply shaped, dark, and completely lusterless. As a tremendous power landed on it, from the smooth, undecorated surface of the bell, countless patterns of wind, clouds, thunderbolts, mountains and rivers emerged, looking like the ancient world replaying on the bell.

Among these detailed, complicated patterns, there was a giant, who was surrounded by fire, gale, water and earth power streams, with his arms raised high. He was treading on the ground, his

hands reaching to the sky, as he opened his mouth and growled thunderously.

A shockingly strong power surged out of the bell. Next, along with a clear bell ring, the surrounding iron-hard rock layers shattered. Meanwhile, Lili, who was standing in front of Ji Hao, looking at Ji Hao through thick layers of rock, suddenly burst with a howl. Inside his head, that purple divine talisman disintegrated, transformed into a strand of purple smoke, and slowly flew into the Pan Gu bell.

"Even a true god conferred by the world itself shouldn't attack the remains of Pan Gu." The mysterious man chuckled and said, "Pan Gu was the ancestor of all living beings in this world. He attacked the supreme treasure made with the remains of his old, old ancestor. He showed no respect to his original ancestor, so he should be punished... should be punished!"

Lili vomited blood and curled his body up in the rock while twitching intensively.

He popped out his beady eyes, staring at Ji Hao as if the latter were a true monster from hell. He yelled, "Evil...You, how dare you...hurt a true God?"

The pressure that came from the surrounding rock layers faded away soon. Ji Hao took out the Taiji Creation cauldron, that immediately sent out a stream of mist and wrapped Lili up, dragging him into the cauldron.

After a series of thuds, nothing but tens of dark-yellow blood pills remained in the cauldron, and mountain-like piles of top-grade, yellow-colored magic crystals.

Chapter 1014: Supreme Magus, Si Xi

A thousand miles away from where Ji Hao fought the group of monsters, in a small valley, Si Xi and the others lied on the ground silently, with their facial expressions changing constantly.

The seven-colored bead that belonged to Boy Chen was a pre-world supreme treasure. The bead had an especially strong hallucinogenic effect, as if it was created especially for the use of Boy Chen. Facing this bead, no matter how strong one was, he or she would fall into the illusion it created, unless they had an even more powerful treasure to protect them, such as Ji Hao's Pan Gu bell.

The group of people lied on the ground peacefully, and only Si Xi had been twitching from time to time, like a fish without water.

Si Xi's soul had sunk into a boundless illusion as well. Surrounding him was nothing else but a vast water, as sticky as porridge. No ripple existed on the water surface. However, countless twisted hideous faces had emerged from the water surface, staring at Si Xi with their pale eyes.

Si Xi knew all the owners of those faces. He earned the title of Marquis Chong by treading upon an ocean of corpses, by beheading countless non-humankind beings.

The faces shown on this vast water all belonged to those who were killed directly or indirectly by Si Xi. Yu Clan people, Jia Clan people, Xiu Clan people, dark-kind people, non-humankind slaves, and many human warriors who were enslaved by the non-humankind and had forgotten the names of ancestors, they were all now visible.

Millions of faces on the water surface were lifeless, as they stared at Si Xi straight into the eyes. From the misty air, bitter voices could be heard faintly. These voices were crying, telling their miserable life stories. They shouted and wailed, telling Si Xi that

after he killed them, no one could take care of their wives and children and consequently, all of their family members died too.

Some of them asked Si Xi why he was so cruel, so merciless, that in a battle between the humankind and the non-humankind, Si Xi killed every last non-humankind being in a city of the non-humankind, from elderly ones to babies. Nearly two-hundred-thousand non-humankind beings were slaughtered by Si Xi.

And those enslaved human warriors cursed SI Xi for the fact that he was actually coldhearted enough to kill his own kind. They cursed so viciously, saying that Si Xi would die without offspring, and his You Chong Clan would be destroyed sooner or later.

Si Xi silently stood on the water surface. His pair of eyes looked like a pair of pure yellow gemstones, glowing with a bright dark-yellow light. Behind him, a sphere of yellow mist had been rolling, and within the dense mist, eighty-one dazzlingly shining inner spirit stars had been hovering, forming all kinds of patterns. Among these different patterns formed by those stars, an enormous winged bear was roaring towards the sky, seeming to be immensely strong.

Gradually, faintly visible silhouettes emerged from the air. Those were people covered in blood, reaching their hands to Si Xi from distances away.

"You! Why did you kill so many of us?! What did we do wrong? What sin have we done? From old people to children, from men to women, you killed so many of us! Aren’t you ashamed? Don’t you regret? Don’t you feel even a little bit guilty?"

"Si Xi, Marquis Chong Si Xi, you’re a hero of your kind, you’re a great man. But, where was your heart when you ordered to kill woman and children? How could you order your warriors to kill so many innocent people, without being haunted by your conscience? Look at your hands, look at your hands, it’s all blood!"

Si Xi’s hands were clean, but along with these people’ cries, his

hands turned red, with sticky and stinking blood flowing down from his palms.

SI Xi finally laughed. He laughed calmly and blandly, "Ignorant souls, why should I waste any time on you? This illusion is quite smart though, but my heart is as solid as a rock. What can this illusion possibly do to me?"

Raising his head, SI Xi looked at the grey sky and said gently, "Hands covered in blood? Indeed, I, Si Xi, have killed countless non-humankind beings, slaughtered countless evil creatures. Even I don’t know how many living beings I have killed."

"However, have I been killing for myself? Have I been killing for no reason?"

"Every living being I killed deserved to die!"

"The ones who offended our humankind, I killed them!"

"The ones who humiliated our humankind, I killed them!"

"The ones who harmed our humankind, I killed them!"

"In this world, I, Si Xi, can kill any living being that is going against the humankind! I, Si Xi, can bear killing any of them!"

"What about elderly ones with white hairs? What about innocent children? You people ate our flesh, drank our blood, peeled off our skins, pulled our tendons, broke our bones and sucked our marrow. You treated us like animals, so you all deserved to die!"

"And you, you forgot about the glories of your ancestors. You betrayed the bloodlines of human beings; you worked for the non-humankind, you obeyed them like dogs. You killed your own kind... You are unforgivable sinners. You deserved death. You... how can you so shameless? How can you be crying to me?"

Abruptly, Si Xi burst with a thunderous growl, "Nothing but illusions! Break!"

Buzz! A strong yellow mist spurted out from Si Xi’s body and tore

the air apart like countless yellow daggers, cutting the grey misty water surface into pieces.

In the small valley, a bright yellow light shone from Si Xi's body. Under his body, a yellow stream of mist hovered up, with eighty-one enormous inner spirit stars spinning in it, surrounding that gigantic winged bear.

The flying bear looked so lifelike as it raised its head, opened its mouth to the sky and took a deep gasp.

High up in the air, in the starry void, nine dark-yellow stars dazzled. At this very moment, the light of these nine stars was even brighter than the sunlight in the daytime.

Moving tracks of these nines stars changed largely. The nine stars flew swiftly in the sky, and the mighty power vibrations they released even came straight to the earth of Midland, quaking countless mountains and hills. Strong earth power rose from deep underground, transforming into yellow-colored, giant dragons, roaring at the nine shining stars in the sky.

Tens of millions of enormous yellow dragons roared thunderously, while the nine stars buzzed rumblingly. All human Magi who had been cultivating themselves with the power of earth heard these nine stars from the deepest areas of their souls.

In the yellow mist coiling around Si Xi's body, the eighty-one inner spirit stars disintegrated simultaneously, transforming into an incomparably pure earth power that merged with his body.

All of a sudden, Si Xi broke the limit of a peak-level Divine Magus. Quickly, he achieved a breakthrough, then his physical strength began growing... Ten times, hundred times, thousand times...Within a blink of an eye, he reached an immeasurable level.

On his body surface, countless yellow-colored divine symbols had been emerging and disappearing. Meanwhile, inside his body, all meridians and Magus acupoints disappeared, leaving nothing but a

boundless space.

Si Xi opened his eyes, fixed those eyes on a star in the starry void, waved his hand at it and gave a growl.

"Come!"

That star descended from the starry void, transformed into a tremendous light cross and roared to Si Xi.

Within a single second, this star disappeared after bursting forth with a dazzling yellow light.

This world now had one less star in the starry void. Yet, inside Si Xi’s body, in that boundless space, a giant star floated in the middle, releasing inexhaustible star power with a nature of earth.

From between Si Xi’s eyebrows, a mountain-shaped divine symbol emerged. He slowly stood up and took a serious glance at where Boy Chen was.

In order to break the illusion, Si Xi broke through the limit of a Divine Magus, merged his body with a real star, and became a Supreme Magus!

Chapter 1015: The Power of A Supreme Magus

Every natural star of this world contained a part of the great Dao.

Back in the golden age of the ancient heaven, a star king lived on each star, controlling the power of the star, and guarding an area of the prehistorical starry void. These star kings were the highest-grade divine Gods in the heaven.

The humankind rose. At first, human beings borrowed powers from powerful ancient creatures. Therefore, being as powerful as those creatures were the highest level that the ancient human beings could reach. Taking the old Fire Crow Clan as an example, after Fire Crow Clan people reached the senior level, according to the traditional cultivation method, they needed to do whatever they could to continuously purify and strengthen their bloodlines and refine their bloodline power, which came from the bloodline of Gold Crow. In the end, Fire Crow Clan people would be able to transform their bodies into three-legged Gold Crows, and attain the ocean-boiling power that belonged to Gold Crows.

Not only the old Fire Crow Clan, the original versions of cultivation methods of all human clans were like that.

Among ancient human beings, some had wisdom and perseverance. They dug into this generation by generation, and finally, they created the cultivation methods for Magus Kings and Divine Magi based on the cultivations methods of Senior Magi.

Absorbing natural powers, choosing spirit stars, strengthening human bodies with star powers, and growing inner spirit stars inside to enhance human bodies...

When a Divine Magus successfully grew eighty-one inner spirit stars, the peak-level would be reached. At this stage, the body of this peak-level Divine Magus would be incomparably strong, and

his or her meridians and Magus acupoints would disappear, forming a boundless space inside the body like an inner starry void, to lay a solid foundation for breaking into the level of Supreme Magus.

Nine was a number of extremes. When the eighty-one inner spirit stars divided into nine groups, and the nine stars in each group merged together, a secret magic formation called ‘nine-nine star sealing formation’ would be formed in the body of this Divine Magus.

The eighty-one inner spirit stars would disappear, and the powers of these inner spirit stars would merge with the body of this Divine Magus. Afterward, with the power of inner spirit stars, this Divine Magus would build a connection with the chosen real star in the sky, then bring the real star into his or her body, with the nine-nine star sealing formation.

With a real star contained inside the body, releasing pure prehistorical star power to nourish and strengthen him, the physical strength of this Divine Magus would improve day and night. In addition to that, the nine-nine star sealing formation would send the soul of this Magus into the star, to merge with the star core, which was the most essential part of a star. Thus, the star and the human body would merge completely into one. As long as the star existed, the soul of this Magus would never die, and this Magus would be able to live an immortal life.

With a real star inside the body, a Supreme Magus would be like an ancient star king; with the power of the star, a Supreme Magus could be unimaginably powerful.

Containing a star with a body, merging the soul with the star, living an immortal life and having an inexhaustible power... this was Supreme Mag!

Si Xi was trapped in the illusion created by Boy Chen and could not break out. He was worried about the sub-formation of the ten-

thousand dragons water-sealing magic formation in Feather Mountain. Therefore, without having any other choice, he disintegrated his eighty-one inner spirit stars, activated the nine-nine star sealing formation, and chose one from the nine real stars. He dragged it straight into his body, merged his soul with the star core and turned himself into a Supreme Magus.

No power vibration had been releasing from his body. Si Xi was like an ordinary man at the moment, except for the fact that he floated in midair. Without using any power, he floated in the air only because he wanted to. The natural powers gathered simply under his will, holding him in the air.

Looking at that splendid glow released by Boy Chen from a distance, Si Xi's face turned dark.

"I could have helped Wen Ming for a few more years, till he became powerful enough. Then I would break into Supreme level...Then, You Chong Clan, the Magus Palace and the alliance of the human clan, I could entrust all of it to him."

"But today, I was forced to make the breakthrough...According to the secret agreement of human clans, Supreme Magi are immortal, and are against the nature of human lives. Therefore, as a Supreme Magus, I am no longer a human being! Now, I can do nothing more than protecting human beings behind the scenes, serving as the final line of defense for the humankind. I can't give Wen Ming more help, not anymore."

Gnashing his teeth, Si Xi said blandly, "You shall all die!"

Human Magi never cultivated their souls. They depended on pure physical strength and strong bodies. But after achieving the level of Supreme Magi, the soul of a Supreme Magus and the core of the star inside his or her body would merge, because of which, a connection would be built between this Magus and all stars in the world. Naturally, this Supreme Magus would attain immeasurable magical powers.

Si Xi closed his eyes and clearly saw Boy Chen and the other monsters looking at this area from a thousand miles away.

While sneering, Si Xi raised a finger and slightly crooked it.

In the sky, the other eight spirit stars of Si Xi dazzled again in the sky. The eight enormous stars slowly rotated in the air, releasing a terrifying pressure.

Inside Si Xi's body, the star that had merged with him slightly moved, sending a giant stream of star power roaring out like a flood, striking at those monsters through Si Xi's arm.

The star power stream descended from the sky and struck on Boy Chen's head, without giving him any chance to dodge.

Boy Chen screamed. The lights and shadows twisted around him, generating countless mirages, mountains, rivers, and cities. Meanwhile, Boy Chen disappeared within these mirages.

However, nine streams of starlight fell down in a row and dispelled all mirages. Along with a howl, Boy Chen was forced to transform back into his original shape. The thick, seven-colored shell of that thousands of meters long clam was closed tightly, while eight streams of starlight struck on it violently. Along with a thunderous bang, Boy Chen's screams came straight up into the sky. Struck by the starlight, his shining shell dimmed down, and the colorful glowing mist around him dissipated. Then, more than ten thick cracks appeared on the smooth shell, along with eight water-tank-sized holes.

Large streams of crystal clear cold liquid surged out from those cracks and holes. Next, Boy Chen's body exploded and turned into a strand of colorful mist while drilling into the ground along with a beautiful melody.

From a thousand miles away, Si Xi injured Boy Chen severely with the star power. Boy Chen was completely frightened. As he always believed in the importance of survival, his first reaction

was running, running at the highest speed.

The colorful mist drilled into the ground within a blink of an eye, but the ground quaked slightly. With the earth power, Si Xi brought Man Man and the others, who were still in sleep, flashed across the air and instantly moved to the hill where Boy Chen stayed in.

"Run? Through the underground? Who do you think I am?" Si Xi gave a faint smile and then pointed his right forefinger at the earth. He immediately turned the earth within the area radius one-thousand miles into a whole piece of crystal.

Countless dark-yellow divine spell symbols sparkled in the crystal, which was even harder than diamond. The colorful mist floated in the crystal, and no matter how Boy Chen tried, he couldn’t move forward, neither could he draw back.

"What’re you all waiting for?!" Boy Chen struggled for a while, then suddenly shouted out, "Can he possibly let you go?! Do it together! This guy is only a new Supreme Magus. Kill him together!"

Before Boy Chen’s voice faded, Ju Fu roared out and threw out a few pieces of colorful crystal, which thudded against Si Xi’s chest.

Chapter 1016: Poor Boy Chen

"Break!"

After dragged Lili into the caldron and turned him into blood pills and magic crystals, Ji Hao held the Pan Bu bell up with both arms, put forth all his strength and rang the bell with his head.

On the surface of the bell, a layer of divine light started shaking intensely. Next, the surrounding rock layers broke. Those rock layers seemed to be fragile like pieces of tofu. Surrounding Ji Hao, gales roared as he shattered those rocks and climbed up thousands of meters high, until the rock layers above his head turned as transparent as crystal.

Dong! The Pan Gu bell bumped into the giant crystal piece which was created by Si Xi with his new magical power.

A long-lasting cracking noise was generated, while countless thin, spider-net-like cracks appeared on these thick transparent rock layers. Those thin cracks extended toward all directions for hundreds of miles.

"Eh?"

Si Xi’s voice came into Ji Hao’s ears. "Ji Hao, good boy, I underestimated you! This bell...Hmm, it doesn’t look like any ancient bell recorded by our humankind. Where did you get this nice piece?"

Along with Si Xi’s voice, the transparent rock layers suddenly split up, showing a broad path.

Ji Hao had been wielding the Pan Gu bell to break those rock layers for a while, and by now, both his arms were soft. He dropped the bell, flew up to the ground through the path, released his spirit power and saw what happened on the ground. He saw the few crystal pieces thrown over by Ju Fu smash on Si Xi’s chest, shattering his clothes, but being turned into puffs of ash by the

great counterforce that came from Si Xi's body.

Ju Fu was strengthful and violent. The power generated by those crystal pieces he threw over was destructive, which was the reason why each crystal piece caused a thunderous bang against Si Xi's body, and even caused the earth to quake.

Based merely on the thunderous sound, Ji Hao could imagine how massive that power that Si Xi had just taken with his body was.

However, Si Xi's skin hadn't even changed its color. Those crystal pieces bumped on his chest, yet failed to leave even a mark on his skin. Those crystal pieces were completely being to Si Xi, just like a breeze.

Ji Hao leaped up to the ground, looked at Si Xi, and shouted in shock, "Marquis Chong, you...you are..."

He scanned across Si Xi's body with his spirit power, then clearly found out that his body had just been through a thorough change. Before, Ji Hao could still faintly sense the great inner spirit star power inside Si Xi's body. But now, the density of Si Xi's skin had raised by at least thousand-time. When Ji Hao touched Si Xi's skin with his spirit power, he felt like piercing a needle in a diamond. He couldn't reach even half an inch into that body of Si Xi.

Apart from that, by now, Si Xi was surrounded by a strong and strange power vibration. The source of this power vibration was similar to Ji Hao's spirit power, yet completely different from it; it was a vigorous soul power. This strong and magical power vibration clashed against Ji Hao's spirit power, bringing Ji Hao an overwhelming pressure, as if his spirit power was crushed by a thousand mountains.

Ji Hao never experienced anything like this. Therefore, he looked at Si Xi in a great shock.

"I couldn't free myself from the illusion this thing created, which

left me no choice but force a breakthrough." Si Xi pointed at Boy Chen, who was suppressed underground, sneered and said, "I was planning to help Wen Ming for a few more years, and allow him to take over You Chong Clan and some other works without much of difficulties, before I made this breakthrough...But this thing took my choice away,"

Ji Hao's eye corners twitched, asking in both fright and surprise, "Are you already a...Supreme Magus?"

Boy Chen screamed out once again. From above the colorful mist transformed from his body, the multicolored bead drifted out and dazzled with a colorful light, adding a splendid glow to the surrounding crystal rick layers.

"Green Toad! Tusk Sandfly King! Aren't you going to do anything?!" growled Boy Chen, "Don't you forget that if you attack, you will only offend the humankind. But if you do nothing today, you will piss off that man, and the people behind him!"

Ju Fu stood on the hill in the distance. He waved his long arms, drumming his own chest, and shouted, "Green woman... and all of you! Fight! Kill Si Xi! Otherwise, you will be hunted by us until the end of the day!"

Ms. Green Toad and the other seven Chaos monsters each gave a roar, then helplessly glanced at each other and moved forward. They seemed to attack Si Xi together, but in fact, none of them truly did anything. Each one of them had been waiting for someone else to launch the first move. They stopped, looked at each other, then burst in raging shouts together.

Ms. Green Toad yelled, "Shame on you! I am a woman, how can you expect me to be the first?!"

Tusk Sandfly King growled in a fury, then gritted his sharp teeth and said, "Green woman, you're the evilest one. How can you call yourself a woman? Cut the crap! Let's do it together. Otherwise... troubles would come to all of us!"

Ju Fu howled furiously, then raised his arms and clenched his fingers in the air. He dragged a mountain-huge piece of jade out of the air and threw it at Si Xi.

This time, Ju Fu had obviously put forth all of his strength, because the jade mountain created an ear-piercing noise when it flew over, which even caused Ji Hao an unbearable ear pain. Nevertheless, Si Xi carelessly raised his left arm and stopped the roaring jade mountain, turning it into a stream of smoke. Si Xi's palm skin didn't even turn slightly red when he did this.

Ms. Green Toad and the other seven Chaos monsters glanced at each other, then each burst with a resonant roar once again. They rushed up together and launched their strongest attack.

Dense dark clouds were released that wrapped Si Xi up. Despite Ji Hao's great eyesight, he couldn't see Si Xi and the few monsters.

Boy Chen was still sealed underground, but abruptly, he laughed in surprise and said, "Kid, where is that bell of yours? You're seeking death!"

Ji Hao lowered his head and saw the seven-colored bead spurt a thumb-thick beam of multicolored light, striking straight on the spot between Ji Hao's eyebrows.

The colorful mist, which was transformed from Boy Chen's body, quickly merged with the bead. Guided by the light stream, the bead easily moved across the enchanted ground and drilled into Ji Hao's forehead at lightning speed.

Boy Chen moved so fast that Ji Hao didn't manage to react timely. That bead was a pre-world supreme treasure after all, while Boy Chen was a powerful Chaos Monster. In the next moment, the seven-colored mist emerged in Ji Hao's spiritual space, with the colorful bead floating above it, glowing a bright seven-colored light.

"Earl Yao Ji Hao, this is my secret killing ability. I'd like to know

if you will die or not after I have killed your soul!" Boy Chen screamed in excitement. But soon, he saw the mysterious man who sat in the middle of the spiritual space, with crossed legs.

The mysterious man’s eyes were shining with a dim blue light, while he silently looked at Boy Chen from up to down.

Boy Chen’s voice suddenly turned extremely weird, as he shrieked like a little girl who was surrounded by a group of ghosts, "Ha...haha...hehe...I must be in an illusion. I, I must be having a, a nightmare...I...Right?"

The mysterious man didn’t say a word, but he raised his right hand and slapped down, crushing the colorful mist which was transformed from Boy Chen.

Chapter 1017: He Tu and Lo Shu Great Formation

"This thing..." Ji Hao murmured speechlessly. A red sun shone in his spiritual space. Ji Hao showed his figure from the sun, looking at the Mysterious man, who seemed like a giant, and asked curiously, "Did he know you?"

The mysterious man sat in the midair, changing his hand motions while sealing Boy Chen's seven-colored bead with a magic. Those hand motions made by the mysterious man were similar to the hand motions of The Mantra Dan with Nine Secret Words, but based on it, some profound and complicated developments and changes were made. Every single move made by the mysterious man now seemed to be powerful enough to destroy the world.

Hearing Ji Hao, the mysterious man responded blandly, "I met him after the creation of the world...This thing could do nothing but fool the others with illusions. Hm, he was quite a survivor, nothing special except for that."

As the mysterious man flicked his fingers, the bead exploded. The mysterious man had actually destroyed a pre-world supreme treasure, that was capable of creating endless mirages and illusions, by simply flicking his fingers. The bead exploded and turned into massive streams of colorful light, flowing everywhere. It quickly merged with the colorful mist, which was transformed from Boy Chen's body.

The five-colored cauldron released a stream of five-colored flame from Ji Hao's lower abdomen, hovered around the colorful mist and generated a loud series of cries. Soon, the last little bit of true spirit left in the colorful bead by Boy Chen was dispelled by the five-colored flame.

From this moment on, nothing in this world could prove Boy Chen's existence anymore. In Ji Hao's spiritual space, a thousands

of miles long stream of colorful light had been flowing slowly, spreading a refreshing aroma.

"Illusions are spirit changes. Boy Chen and this bead of his both were generated from the purest soul power." laughed the mysterious man happily, "Anyone who sees it can have a share, so each of us gets a half...Haha, today is a lucky day, such a stupid thing actually sent himself in here to nourish us!"

Ji Hao laughed as well and then wielded his arm, hacking on the colorful light stream with his hand.

The thousand-mile-long splendid stream was cut into two from the middle. Then, Ji Hao and the mysterious man each took a deep breath towards a part of the light stream. Strands of colorful light flew up and drifted into the red sun, which was transformed from Ji Hao's primordial spirit, while another half of the light was swallowed by the mysterious man.

The figure of the mysterious man became slightly clearer than before. The change was not so obvious; it was like adding a few human-head-sized rocks to a towering mountain. A half of the essence of Boy Chen and his spirit treasure could only help the mysterious man so much.

But to Ji Hao, this was huge.

The hundreds of meters in radius red sun suddenly burst with a dazzling red light. With the extreme positive power that shone on the outside and the negative power filling the inside, the red sun was a combination of Yin and Yang. By now, the red sun had been expanding at a shocking rate; its size turned became times larger within a blink of an eye.

Before, the red sun seemed to be slightly hazy, looking like a sphere of coiling red glowing mist. But now, it looked like a tangible thing, shining with an eye-piercing like, floating in the middle of Ji Hao's spiritual space like a giant piece of ruby.

Ji Hao felt that his primordial spirit was never so strong. He released his spirit power and immediately saw everything within an area of ten-million miles. Although he hadn’t attained the universally great power which Yu Yu and his brothers had, that could allow him to observe the whole universe with a single glance, covering the area radius ten-million miles with the spirit power was already impressive.

While Ji Hao laughed delightedly, the mysterious man suddenly slapped on his back and said, "Enemy coming! Go deal with it!"

Ji Hao was slapped out of his own spiritual space by the mysterious man, and saw Ju Fu crazily throwing hundreds of different sized, brightly glowing jade pieces at him.

Si Xi was still wrapped in dark clouds, and Ms. Green Toad and the other seven Chaos monsters had still been attacking Si Xi. But for an unknown reason, Ju Fu turned away from Si Xi and started launching crazy attacks on Ji Hao.

Ji Hao snorted coldly. He didn’t take out the Pan Gu bell. Instead, his Taiji cloak released a clear stream of mist that surrounded his body. Then, he bent his body and rushed up, bumping against those giant jade pieces thrown over by Ju Fu. He wielded his arms, growled thunderously and punched on those jade pieces.

Fists clashed against jade pieces, as thunderous booms came one after another. Ji Hao combined the moves of sky-opening, earth-splitting, everything-grow and everything-perish. Every single move made by him was as effective as a hack launched by a giant with an enormous axe. Black gales were stirred up around Ji Hao’s body, screaming shrilly.

Jade pieces were shattered by Ji Hao’s fists one after another. Ju Fu generated these jade pieces from the air by gathering earth power with his special ability. Therefore, after being shattered by Ji Hao, these jade pieces transformed back into streams of earth power and dissipated in the air. Around Ji Hao, a yellow-colored

layer of earth power grew denser and denser. Dragged by the air streams brought up by Ji Hao's heavy punches, the layer of earth power gradually condensed into the silhouette of a thousands of meters tall, muscular man.

"Ju Fu...Lili is dead. Aren't you going to run? Do you want to die here as well?"

Spirit blood surged in Ji Hao's body. He didn't cast any magic. Instead, he approached Ju Fu with bare hands, while shattering those giant jade pieces Ju Fu threw at him.

His blood boiled and surged through his veins like raging dragons. Ji Hao grew taller, inch by inch. When his spirit blood was agitated to an extreme point, Ji Hao had already become a six-meters tall, muscular man. Thick blood veins bulged on his arms, looking like dragons coiling around them

Ju Fu roared hoarsely, dragging more jade pieces out of the air and throwing to Ji Hao.

Ji Hao had boosted his power up to an extreme level. The fifth turn of the cultivation methods with nine turns was triggered. His bones, flesh and internal organs all turned translucent, like the finest jade. By now, his body condition had surpassed the limits of a peak-level Divine Magus.

He spread his arms and let those jade pieces smash on his chest. Thudding noises were started, and meters long jade pieces were bounced away, heavily landing on the ground.

Compared with Si Xi, who could crush these jade pieces directly into ashes, Ji Hao could only bounce them away with his body. In terms of physical strength, Ji Hao clearly couldn't compare with Si Xi at the stage. But, this strong body of his was already quite terrifying!

Ju Fu was less and less confident. He showed a ferocious look and yelled, "Lili is the true God of Feather Mountain. I, Ju Fu, am a

divine warrior, under his command! You killed the true God of Feather Mountain. Earl Yao Ji Hao, you should die! Die!"

Ji Hao chuckled while he continued approaching Ju Fu with big steps.

Ji Hao should die? Ju Fu could do nothing but throw jade and crystal pieces at his enemies, if Ji Hao were an ordinary Divine Magus, dealing with Ju Fu might still be a bit difficult. But he was Ji Hao, the special one. Facing Ji Hao, the special ability and great strength of Ju Fu led to no better result than making the former take a few serious glances at him.

How could he be daring enough to say that Ji Hao should die?

Ji Hao took a step forward. He was about to reach Ju Fu, but suddenly, the surrounding environment changed. On the ground, a winding river flew across, while in the sky, nine stars sparkled. A soft yet strong power slowed Ji Hao down, making every step he took extremely difficult.

With a scrawny body and a gloomy face, Kun Peng slowly descended from the sky, smilingly shaking his head at Ji Hao.

"Earl Yao Ji Hao, this is He Tu and Lo Shu great formation... Today, you’re going to die in this place."

Lo Shu Square (simplified Chinese: 洛书; traditional Chinese: 洛書; literally: Luo (River) Book/Scroll) or the Nine Halls Diagram, often in connection with the Ho Tu (河圖) figure and 8 trigrams, is the unique normal magic square of order three. Lo Shu is part of the legacy of the most ancient Chinese mathematical and divinatory (Yi Jing 易經) traditions, and is an important emblem in Feng Shui (風水, translate as "wind-water"), the art of geomancy concerned with the placement of objects in relation to the flow of qi (氣), 'natural energy'.

Chapter 1018: Difficult Situation in The Great Formation

"He To? Luo Shu?"

The mysterious man's rumbling voice came from the spiritual space, "Those two pieces? Little guy, you need to be careful!" Dense mist rose in the spiritual space while the mysterious man disappeared gradually.

Ji Hao stood on the ground, coldly looking at Kun Peng, who was not so far away from him. The He Tu and Luo Shu great magic formation had been speedily expanding. At the moment, the tens of meters wide river had already expanded to millions of miles wide. The river water surged in it and sent up clouds of watery mist that covered the entire area. Ji Hao could only see things ten miles around him now.

At every curve of the river, an enormous turtle with a black shell floated on the water surface, and a large water-kind spirit creature stood on the back of each turtle. These water-kind spirit creatures were armed to the teeth, and the power vibrations released from them were prehistorical and strong.

In the air, the nine stars sparkled brightly, and the starlight was as cold as ice; the coldness drilled straight to Ji Hao's bones. Beams of starlight emitting from these nine stars were sharp, and looked like tangible thorns woven together. Ji Hao raised his head and took a glance at the nine stars, instantly feeling blinded. He saw nothing but cold white light dazzling before his eyes. Moreover, the magical power delivered by the starlight disturbed his mind, shook his body, and nearly made him fall to the ground.

"He Tu? Luo Shu?" Ji Hao closed his eyes, healing his wounded eyes with his spirit blood.

He opened his erect eye. His eye of Dao of sun was cultivated by

Priest Dachi as well, and had also merged with the extremely negative power. Yin and Yang combined into one, warming his erect eye. With this eye, he saw no sharp starlight. All he saw were sparkling lights and shadows, as gentle as a deep pool.

Looking at Kun Peng with the erect eye, Ji Hao said blandly, "Using supreme treasures like these on me? Aren't you feeling like trying to kill a chicken with a giant blade?'"

'Aren't you feeling like trying to kill a chicken with a giant blade?' This was something that Kun Peng had never heard before, but he was smart, and understood it in no time. Chuckling with a high-pitched voice, Kun Peng responded unhurriedly, "A tiger has to try its best to catch a rabbit. You hack when you kill a chicken, you hack when you kill a bull, and even for slaughtering a dragon, what you do is hack. Since we can solve it all with a simple hack, the type of blade shouldn't be a major problem."

Kun Peng slowly took his hands out of his sleeves. A black sword with four edges was held in each of this hands. The body of each sword was divided into twenty-four sections. He looked at Ji Hao, smiled mildly, and continued, "With all that you have achieved in these years, using the He Tu and Luo Shu great magic formation on you is reasonable!"

Followed by Kun Peng's laughter, armored water-kind spirit creatures showed up on those enormous stars as well. Those spirit creatures standing on stars were holding long streamers, each having streams of starlight flowing on it like rapidly flowing rivers. They slowly and gently waved those streamers, making Ji Hao sense a dreadful pressure coming down at him instantly.

Ji Hao dared not to be careless, and activated the Pan Gu bell.

The simply shaped, thick bell floated above Ji Hao's head and released streams of Chaos power, pouring down and wrapping Ji Hao up. The Chaos power vibrated slightly and rippled like water, while the bell buzzed slightly from time to time.

Kun Peng abruptly flashed across the air and reached to Ji Hao with a single step. He wielded the pair of four-edged swords and smashed down at Ji Hao.

The pair of black four-edged swords began burning ragingly. The dim blue cold light coiled around the pair of sword light flame, and on every section of each four-edged sword, thumb-sized ancient spirit creature spell symbols were faintly visible.

Two loud thuds were generated. The Chaos power released from the bell quaked, then the bell rang deeply because of Kun Peng's violent attack.

"Amazing!" Kun Peng said in surprise. On the ground, waves rose from the winding river, and in the sky, the nine stars sparkled. Suddenly, Kun Peng disappeared.

The bell ring transformed into visible Chaos power waves, spreading out in all directions. Each wave of Chaos power only managed to reach around three meters far, before being neutralized by the invisible sealing power generated from the He Tu and Luo Shu great formation, layer by layer. At last, the Chaos power was gone.

Kun Peng reappeared ten miles away while wielding the pair of four-edged swords, which was wrapped in frigid blue flames. He looked at Ji Hao with a dark face and said, "Turn everything back into Chaos... This bell...I have never heard of it. Did this kind of a treasure ever exist in Pan Gu world?"

Ji Hao remained silent. The golden bridge darted out from between his eyebrows, transforming into a beam of light. It wrapped him up and flew to Kun Peng, leaving a bright stream of light in the air. The Taiji divine sword created an arc-shaped sword light, as Ji Hao launched a fierce hack towards Kun Peng from ten miles away.

Kun Peng remained motionless. Ji Hao approached him at his highest speed. However, the distance between the Kun Peng and

himself wasn't shortened at all. On the contrary, it was growing more and more. The harder Ji Hao tried to approach, the further away he got.

Three breaths later, the distance between Ji Hao and Kun Peng had reached a thousand miles.

Ji Hao's erect eye shone with a clear and bright light. The water-clear light reached to tens of meters away. Ji Hao glanced around and found out that he was stuck where he was the whole time, even though he had been trying so hard to move forward. Nevertheless, the distance between Kun Peng and himself had indeed raised to a thousand miles.

"Since you know that this formation is based on He Tu and Luo Shu, you should understand that He Tu and Luo Shu can include the whole universe, and are able to create space without limit. In this great formation, you can only be stuck here until you die, unless you are powerful enough to create a world, just like Saint Pan Gu."

Kun Peng laughed proudly, wielding the pair of four-edged swords. In the air, an enormous star shone dazzlingly, then followed by a rumbling noise, golden spheres of thunder-flame fell straight down from the sky and struck on Ji Hao.

The earth quacked and cracked while the sky vibrated and collapsed; the thunder-flame roared and covered Ji Hao's body.

Those thunder-flame spheres exploded, making the earth shake. Frightfully strong impact waves made the Pan Gu bell buzz and buzz. Even under the bell's protection, Ji Hao felt the ground under his feet rising and falling, that made his entire body slightly soft. He could barely remain standing under the storm of the thunder-flame.

Ji Hao cast a deep growl, following which, the Taiji Universe mirror rose a hundred meters high, along with a stream of light. The surface of the mirror glowed as the thunder-flames descended

from the sky, fell into the mirror and disappeared without a trace. In the next moment, the raging thunder-flames abruptly reappeared around Kun Peng, as countless spheres of thunder-flame blasted simultaneously.

Kun Peng snorted coldly. Water-kind spirit creatures standing on stars raised their long streamers. Along with their moves, all blasting thunder-flames disappeared, without leaving even a sparkle of fire.

"You!" Ji Hao didn't know what to say.

"In this great formation, no attack can harm me!" Kun Peng looked at Ji Hao proudly, laughing with a cold and creepy voice, "In this great formation, you can only be attacked by me. You can never kill me, unless you're Saint Pan Gu!"

Ji Hao gnashed his teeth and locked his fingers together, attempted to trigger natural powers to create Yu Yu's divine thunder to attack Kun Peng.

However, no matter how many times he incanted the spell, he couldn't trigger any natural power in the great formation. Within the coverage of the great formation, Kun Peng was the ruler of the world, and Ji Hao could only use his own power, without being able to borrow a slight little bit of natural power from the surrounding environment.

"Kun Peng! If you kill Si Xi..." Ji Hao squeezed a few words out from between his teeth.

"Eh? You're right, we're going to kill Si Xi!" Kun Peng laughed savagely, "This time, we drew him to Feather Mountain for no other purpose but to kill him! What can you do? You're stuck in here. You can only watch us kill him!"

Chapter 1019: The Power of Si Xi

Ms. Green Toad and the other seven Chaos monsters entangled Si Xi. Si Xi now had a thick square-shaped shield held in his left hand, easily defending himself and blocking all attacks launched by all monsters.

This shield was simply designed, even a bit too simple. The shield had a clay texture, and hundreds of simple lines on its surface. If one looked closer, one would find that those lines actually formed a series of mountains. These mountains were simply drawn, but the power vibration they released were incredibly strong.

The few Chaos monsters were all born before the time of creation, and they all had their own specialties. However, all attacks launched by them were turned into nothingness by this shield of Si Xi. Even the fiercest attack could do no more than sending up a few fire sparkes against the shield. They couldn't even touch a hair of his.

Aside from the shield, dragon-like yellow-colored strong earth power streams had been coiling around Si Xi's body, also protection Man Man and the others, who hadn't yet woken up. Thousands of yellow-colored, tremendous earth power streams had woven into a gigantic misty shield, covering Man Man and the others. They lied quietly on the ground. Occasionally, a few attacks landed on the misty shield, but nothing happened except for some ripple.

Si Xi hadn't been paying any attention to those Chaos monsters.

Back at the beginning of time, after the creation of the world, the most powerful Chaos creatures all died in the battle against Saint Pan Gu. Survivors like Boy Chen and Ms. Green Toad indeed had their special abilities, but they were far less powerful than those true top-grade powerful ones.

The square-shaped shield held in Si Xi's hand was also a top-

grade supreme treasure, generated by the world itself. It had no other function except for its incredible defensive power. Especially after Si Xi became a Supreme Magus, he connected all earth meridian power in Yu Mountain area with the shield and raised the defensive power of this ‘thousand-mountain shield’ by a couple of times. Ordinary living beings couldn’t even move this shield by a single inch.

Ji Hao was trapped in a cage transformed from a black and white mist. The hundred miles wide cage floated in the air, while the black and white mist streams flowed quickly. From time to time, starlight and watery mist would spurt out from the cage. The power released from the cage was mysterious and threatening, and even Si Xi sensed the danger from it.

However, Si Xi knew that Ji Hao had top-grade defensive treasures, and behind him were powerful beings who would support and protect him. Therefore, Si Xi hadn’t been worrying too much about Ji Hao’s safety.

What worried Si Xi was the faintly sensible aura of killing coming from the surrounding area. Si Xi was a Supreme Magus now, but under the effect of the not so obvious aura of killing, he sensed coldness from his internal organs. Even his soul, which had merged with the core of the real star inside his body, was unsettled.

Stronger enemies were hiding in the darkness, looking at Si Xi.

Wielding the shield and fending for another round, Si Xi suddenly raised his head and burst out a resonant growl. Next, he stomped both feet on the ground and quaked the earth meridians underground intensely. With the power of the earth, Si Xi broke out from the encirclement of those Chaos monsters and rushed towards Ju Fu.

Ju Fu had been throwing giant rocks at Si Xi to try to distract him. Seeing Si Xi rushed over, this ape-like creature screamed,

leaped up and left shreds of afterimages in the air, attempting to flee.

Nevertheless, the mountains around him vibrated, while nine ancient styled, yellow-colored spell symbols emerged on the ground. A strong gravity force was generated, disabling Ju Fu from moving. Before he could ask for help, Si Xi raised the square shield high and smashed on Ju Fu's body heavily.

Along with a thunderous boom, Ju Fu was crushed by this violent move made by Si Xi.

Blood splashed everywhere. A light color divine talisman rose from Ju Fu's broken head, flying into the sky. Si Xi snorted frigidly white grasping the purple talisman. He clenched his fingers and crumbled it in his hand.

"Divine God? With this little thing?" Si Xi scornfully sneered at the sky and said, "Gong Gong, you stole the heaven. Are these things your creations? This Ju Fu was no better than any ordinary Divine Magus. Did you expect this thing to kill me?"

A shrill howl could be heard, as Tusk Sandfly King trod on a green stream of water and rushed over. His pair of hands had already turned into a pair of meters long sawtooth blades, swishing down at Si Xi's head while leaving shreds of dark afterimages in the air.

Si Xi sneered again. He raised his shield, letting that pair of blades hack on it.

The earth meridians quaked one more time. In the sky, eight bright stars emerged, connected with the star inside Si Xi's body. Si Xi teleported himself to before Tusk Sandfly King's face, then all of a sudden, a triangle-cone-shaped weapon appeared in Si Xi's right hand.

The weapon was undecorated, meters long, and embossed with countless mountains and hills. Si Xi griped the long hilt of the

weapon with both hands and swung it horizontally, sweeping across Tusk Sandfly King's waist and starting a fierce gale.

Water-tank-thick steams of starlight poured down from the eight stars in the sky and landed on the sharp weapon. From the surface of this weapons, images of countless mountains and hills were released. Meanwhile, an incredibly strong and fierce force broke Tusk Sandfly King's body, cutting him into two.

"It's a divine weapon from the heaven...Valley Thorn!" Tusk Sandfly King's upper body thudded on the ground while he stared at the Valley Thorn in fright and said, "It's the supreme weapon that belonged to the head of all Gods of mountains. It was used for ruling all mountains in the world!"

"You're right. This is indeed the Valley Thorn!" Si Xi raised the Valley Thorn, knocked on Tsuk Sandfly King's head, and smashed his head along with his shoulder. The Valley Thorn was a divine weapon from the ancient heaven, and was used for controlling all mountains and earth meridians in the world. A single move made with it could trigger the powers of all mountains and earth meridians in the surroundings.

This move of Si Xi seemed to be easy, but in fact, the power of all mountains in Midland had landed on Tusk Sandfly King's body. Tusk Sandfly King was a Chaos monster, and was ridiculously strong, but still, he was crushed by Si Xi with one move, and even his soul perished.

Si Xi held the shield to protect his back, while he gripped the Valley Thorn with the other hand. Layers of hazy silhouettes of mountains surrounded him, as he flashed across the air like a moving, enormous mountain, dashing into the dense dark cloud along with a muffled swishing noise.

A rumbling series of thuds was started, while six silhouettes flew out from the dark cloud like six bags of garbages

The other six Chaos monsters were thrown out by Si Xi, vomiting

blood as they spun in the air, and fell on the ground. They howled out together, struggled back up, then left shreds of afterimages in the air while attempting to run.

Si Xi's power and the powers of his two supreme treasures were completely beyond these Chaos monsters' estimation. These Chaos monsters weren't wounded too badly, but they were frightened. They had even forgotten about the mission of killing Si Xi already, and only wanted to run.

Si Xi laughed coldly, raised the Valley Thorn high, and pointed at the sky. Following his moves, all mountains and rivers in Midland buzzed resonantly, echoing to the clouds.

Above the head of each of the six Chaos monsters, the silhouette of a towering mountain emerged. The light of the eight dazzling stars in the sky poured down on every mountain silhouette, then the six mountains descended. The six Chaos monsters moaned in pain and began vomiting blood once again. They could barely remain standing now, but they were Chaos monsters after all; they were only injured, and did not die. Their injuries were not even too serious.

Si Xi burst with another great growl and wielded the Valley Thorn. The surrounding earth meridians moved, and the earth waved. The earth power pushed the six Chaos monsters, sending them to Si Xi.

Chapter 1020: The Calculation of the Old Monster

Back in the He Tu and Luo Shu great formation, Ji Hao stood facing Kun Peng.

A miles in diameter, round-shaped light screen floated in the air, showing every detail of the intense fight between Si Xi and those Chaos monsters. He saw Si Xi release a mighty power and kill Tusk Sandfly King, making the other six Chaos monsters desperately run. Only Ms. Green Toad didn't suffer a lethal attack, because she was a female. Seeing all this, Ji Hao smiled.

"Are these your helpers? Kun Peng, isn't Gong Gong ashamed?"

Kun Peng dropped the pair of four-edged swords, glanced at those fleeing Chaos monsters, and abruptly cursed with a low voice.

"What did you say?" Ji Hao sent an ear of his near Kun Peng, frowned, and threw a sideways glance at Kun Peng.

Kun Peng gave a complicated glance at Ji Hao and responded in a cold voice, "Earl Yao Ji Hao, you're protected by supreme treasures, so I'm not gonna waste any time on you. You just stay here in this great formation. I will let you witness Si Xi's death. You will see how he is killed!"

Above in the sky, the nine stars shone brightly. Kun Peng's body was wrapped in the misty starlight, flashed and disappeared from the great formation. That round light screen sparkled, then Kun Peng showed up on the screen with a gloomy face, less than three-thousand meters away from Si Xi.

"My friends, your performances today have failed our agreement." Kun Peng held his hands in his sleeves and said with a grim voice, while an evil sense of power was releasing from his entire body. "If you truly want to gain benefits from us, don't you need to do some real work?"

A Chaos monster, who was tender and chubby, looking like a white meatball, buried his broken head in his arms, gritted his teeth and said, "Boy Chen and Tusk Sandfly King tried to do the work indeed, but Boy Chen is gone, and I can’t sense him anymore. He has fallen already...If you want us to risk our lives for you, give us something first!"

Before he voice faded, Si Xi’s Valley Thorn struck on this meatball’s body, shattered his white and tender flesh and squeezed out large streams of blood that spurted to hundreds of meters away. This Chaos monster screamed in pain. His legs were softened, and his knees thudded on the ground.

These Chaos monsters all had incredibly strong life-force. Si Xi had been launching heavy blows to them without a pause, breaking their bodies and making them bleed. However, they just knelt on the ground, howling and screaming with their eyes fixed on Kun Peng, seeming ready to rather die than submit.

Kun Peng’s face twitched. He glanced at Ms. Green Toad, who stood in the distance, and asked, "Ms. Green Toad, what do you say?"

Ms. Green Toad twisted her slim waist, abruptly laughed out with a silvery voice, and said, "Oi, Old Fei’lian, your invincible opponent is dead. Why’re you still hiding? You poor thing, you were controlled by a crazy being for so many years!"

A hissing noise came from a far distance. Then, following a swishing noise, a fist-sized cockroach flapped its wings and swiftly flew over, leaving a black trace in the air. The tiny cockroach waved the long pair of antennae on his head, then buzzed in the air and released a dense mist. Soon, Fei’lian King, who was killed by Ji Hao earlier, slowly showed up in the mist.

Fei’lian King shook his head, widely opened his mouth and laughed with a hissing voice.

"It’s true. Boy Chen’s power is gone...That kid must have

something in his body. How can Boy Chen be killed so easily? Hehe, if he were truly so easy to kill, I would have done it myself thousands of years ago."

In the He Tu and Luo She great formation, Ji Hao was shocked.

Fei'lian King was still alive! But who was the one slaughtered by Ji Hao with the Pan Gu bell earlier?

The meatball-like Chaos Monster was at his last gasp now. His blood and white and tender flesh was all gone, and only an especially small skeleton remained in a puddle of blood, twitching constantly.

He opened his jaws, laughed evilly and viciously, and said, "But, Boy Chen is dead. This is a good thing for you anyway, old Fei'lian. Hehe...Kun Peng!"

Kun Peng looked at Fei'lian King with a dark face. He didn't respond to the meatball monster. Instead, he growled to Fei'lian King in anger, "Boy Chen's valued by Lord Gong Gong the most! You! You let him...let him..."

Kun Peng was a smart one. How could not tell that Boy Chen was entrapped by this group of Chaos monsters?

Wasn't Boy Chen the best friend of Fei'lian King? Hadn't Fei'lian King served as the close guard of Boy Chen for countless years? Boy Chen wasn't good at close combat, so didn't he survive for so many years by staying under Fei'lian King's protection?

"Don't mention that thing!" Fei'lian King shook his head and said with a dark voice, "In order to let that thing believe that I was truly dead, I even lost my spirit blade!"

Gasping for air, Fei'lian King laughed coldly and continued, "We're not Boy Chen. No matter what Gong Gong promises us, you shouldn't expect us to be like that old crazy thing, to risk our lives for you without having a second thought!"

He spread his hands and said with that cold voice of his, "If you

want us to kill Si Xi for you, what can we get? Where are all those things you promised us? It’s easy for you to speak. You made Boy Chen show his real face and work for you by risking his own life. Mirages created by Boy Chen could even deceive the natural law! But we’re not him! We won’t do it!"

Ms. Green Toad chuckled, "Kun Peng, don’t say that we’re mean as brothers and sisters. It’s just...It has never been easy for us to survive till now. You have promised lots to us, but why don’t you give us some real thing now?"

Si Xi smashed the Valley Thorn on the back of a dragon-head enormous Chaos monster. This Chaos monster had a dragon head and a wolf body, covered in scales and looking quite weird and evil. This monster didn’t dodge. He let Si Xi crush a half of his body, then opened is wide mouth and laughed out hoarsely.

"Good, good, although you promised us to cover the senses of our powers with the Heaven and Earth great formation so that we won’t be suffering thunder trials anymore," This Chaos monster breathed loudly, then continued with a harsh tone, "...we still want something real! We’re not Boy Chen. Natural laws could do nothing to him, so he could deceive the heaven and save himself from the thunder trial. But we can’t...Don’t expect us to risk our lives for you with nothing in return!"

Kun Peng took a deep breath. He glanced at these Chaos monsters and shouted angrily, "Alright, Tusk Sandfly King, still playing dead?" A sphere of purple light appeared on Kun Peng’s hand. The purple light seemed to be holy and mysterious, with a prehistorical power releasing from it. Warm mist streams coiled inside the purple mist, within which, nine gold-rimmed divine talismans were clearly visible.

"These are the divine talismans of the nine divine Gods that belong to the department of war. These talismans will be merging with your souls. After that, you will become true Gods!" Kun Peng gnashed his teeth and smiled frostily, "From now on, you will not

suffer thunder trials ever again. You will be able to live a free life in the world with your real bodies...What are you waiting for?"

Kun Peng glanced at the nine divine talismans in his hand, then threw them out quite reluctantly.

The bodies of the six Chaos monsters around Si Xi disintegrated immediately, transformed into streams of mist and dissipated in the air.

Tens of thousands of miles away, in a barren mountain, a few dreadful torrents of spirit creature power rose into the sky. The raging power streams reached millions of meters high, wove together, and transformed into a massive dark cloud, spreading out. Within a twinkling of an eye, the entire night sky was turned purely dark.

Ms. Green Toad and Fei'lian King laughed out wildly, while their bodies disintegrated as well. They transformed into strands of mist and drifted away.

Chapter 1021: The True Faces of the Ancient Spirit Creatures

Heaven, in a bronze-colored great hall, Gong Gong held his hands behind his body, quietly looking at the images showing up in a large magic mirror.

When Kun Peng threw out the nine divine talismans and a sky-devouring spirit creature power rose, Gong Gong snorted coldly, and said with a grim face, "These evil things...If they were not slightly useful to us...I would have activated the Heaven and Earth great formation, sent down divine thunders and crushed them all!"

Dishi Cha sat on a large armchair, which was carved out of dark jade, with his legs folded. He had been fiddling with an exquisite jade cup, that was embossed with nine dragons. Hearing Gong Gong, Dishi Cha smiled faintly but didn’t say anything.

Yemo Tian reclined comfortably on a couch, with a pretty girl held in his arm. At the moment, Yemo Tian’s entire body was surrounded by a dark mist, that even covered his face. Abruptly, he pushed the girl away and leaped up.

Staring at Gong Gong with a pair of burning eyes, he shouted, "Why is this so troublesome? Marquis Chong Si Xi? Who the hell is he? I can kill all of them all by myself!"

Gong Gong glanced at Yemo Tian, and sighed helplessly.

Dishi Cha stood up, put the jade cup in his sleeve, then politely bowed to Yemo Tian and said, "Dear Lord, your power and your wisdom are shining upon the world like stars, that will never die."

Dishi Cha shrugged, yet continued with a low voice, "But, you’re way too noble. These lowly things are not worthy for you to kill!"

Yemo Tian stared at Dishi Cha, opened his erect eyes, and released a sharp beam of black light. As he prepared to say something, Dishi Cha continued, "Besides, Pan Gu world does have

the power of resistance. They sent you into the deep Chaos with a single magic talisman, which means they are powerful enough to destroy the destructive weapon."

Yemo Tian opened his mouth, but then shut it disappointedly, showed a gloomy face without saying a word.

Earlier, he activated the destructive weapon and showed his strength in front of Ji Hao. But in the end, he was sent straight to the deep Chaos by Priest Xuan Du with a single magic talisman. If Dishi Cha didn't reach to him with a powerful treasure, Yemo Tian might have even gotten lost in the Chaos already. If that truly happened, he would never be able to return to Pan Gu world.

Thinking of himself desperately running in the Chaos without a clear destination in panic, and the destructive weapon being struck by the Chaos tide, even generating fire sparkles, Yemo Tian couldn't help but quiver. That confidence he had was gone immediately.

Nevertheless, his anger never faded. On the contrary, it grew stronger and stronger. He hated Ji Hao so much, and everyone related to Ji Hao!

Dishi Cha glanced at Yemo Tian's angry face and comforted him with a deep voice, "Therefore, let's stick to the plan! We don't need to take any risk. We only need a slight little bit of patience, and to be less emotional... We can win everything."

Gong Gong snorted coldly.

Dishi Cha hurriedly showed a smile and said, "Of course, we are going to share everything with our dear sworn friend, Lord Gong Gong, aren't we? We have signed a covenant, we're the strongest ally!"

Gong Gong's tightened look eased a little bit. He looked at the dense and vast dark cloud rising in the magic mirror and said, "These bloody evil things...Boy Chen was very helpful for me, but

they got him killed."

"They’re so powerful. If they fought with their real powers instead of skimping it with clones, how could Boy Chen be..."

Dishi Cha blinked his eyes, chuckled and responded, "Ah, that’s nothing but an ancient creature, capable of creating mirages and illusions. It is rare, but not irreplaceable. What I’ve been wondering is, will you still be able to control them after you have turned them into true Gods of this world?"

Gong Gong still held his hands behind his body, proudly raised his head and gave a faint smile, but didn’t respond to Dishi Cha’s question.

Dishi Cha shrugged, then slowly sat back into the dark jade armchair while staring at Gong Gong with a slightly taunting look. Then, he glanced at Yemo Tian and laughed in a complicated way.

Midland, Feather Mountain... Nine streams of different colored, dense smoke roared up into the sky. They were dark and evil, and wrapped up those purple golden divine talismans thrown out by Kun Peng.

A series of thunderous roars could be heard from a far distance, while those purple golden magic talismans sank into the sky-covering dark smoke. A warm light flashed across each stream of dark smoke, then the cold and evil sense of power coming from those coiling dark smoke streams began fading, being replaced by a mighty divine power and spreading out.

Si Xi looked at Kun Peng in shock and said, "Kun Peng, you stole the heaven, fine. But, how dare you give divine positions to these... evil creatures?"

Wielding the Valley Thorn, Si Xi growled in rage, "After the prehistorical era ended, the natural laws had changed. Each time these evil creatures showed their true bodies, a divine thunder would descend to punish them...Human beings are the owners of

the fortune of this world, while these evil creatures are against nature... Even the world itself intended to destroy them!"

Kun Pen looked at Si Xi coldly, and said in a bland tone, "So what? We know they're evil creatures that even the world itself wants to kill ...But as long as they are willing to follow our lead, their powers are ours! Lord Gong Gong has a great goal, it can not be achieved without strong helpers. These creatures are just the ones that are needed!"

Si Xi furiously pointed at Kun Peng and roared, "Idiots! Do you even have brains?! These creatures don't belong to Pan Gu world. They are outsiders! They're like those Yu Clan, Jia Clan, Xiu Clan monsters, they're thieves of the natural fortune!"

Kun Peng spread his arms, letting a black mist coil around his entire body as he smiled to Si Xi and said, "So what? Conferred by the heaven, they're true Gods of this world now. Marquis Chong Si Xi, today is the day you die. Nine Chaos powerful beings will join hands, won't they be able to kill you? Even though...you're a Supreme Magus now!"

A long deep roar echoed through the sky, as thousands of miles away, tens of mountains collapsed all of a sudden.

An earthworm-like, hundreds of miles thick creature rose from underground. This creature was Snow White, and it's enormous body rose straight to the sky from underground.

A hundred miles, a, thousands miles, ten-thousand miles...

Friction force was generated between this enormous thing and the air, causing a bright red light. It vibrated the air, stirring up fierce airstreams and clashing against the void gale that came from the higher sky. From time to time, fierce thunderbolts descended from the air, striking to the ground.

This creature was indescribably huge, and within a couple of breaths, its body had reached around thirty-thousand miles high

from the ground.

In Ji Hao’s spiritual space, the mysterious man’s voice came, "Ah, Jade Earthworm? Did you see those silver rings on his body? A jade core exists in the ninth ring on his body. Destroy it, and this thing will die."

Pausing for a second, the mysterious man sighed and continued, "But you have to be careful. This thing is good at splitting his own body and run. Don’t give him any chance of that!"

Ji Hao gave a bitter smile. He was stuck in the He Tu and Luo Shu great formation, and even if he knew how to kill this Chaos monster, he could not just go out and do it!

Now, Ji Hao only wished that Si Xi could deal with this enormous thing.

This Chaos monster was truly, unspeakably huge. Was this a regular size of Chaos Monsters?

Chapter 1022: Mission

"Err..."

Jade Earthworm roared towards the sky, sounding like billions of buffalos roaring together. The strong sound wave even vibrated the sky.

In the sky, dark and purple clouds moved swiftly like running horses, transforming into a tremendous swirl above Jade Earthworm’s head. After the prehistorical ended, the natural laws changed, and human beings became the owners of the fortune of the world. Chaos monsters were not allowed to show up in the world anymore!

Jade Earthworm released a strong spirit creature power, seeming ready to challenge the world. The natural will of Pan Gu world was triggered, generating a thunder trial, sending billions of bolts of divine thunder down to destroy this Chaos monster, both his body and his soul!

Lightning dazzled in the swirl of dark cloud in the sky. As the first divine thunderbolt was about to descend, a golden-purple beam of divine light rose from between Jade Earthworm’s eyebrows.

A divine talisman emerged from the beam of light, releasing a strong divine power that suffused the whole space. The purple-golden light reached into the gigantic swirl cloud, turned the dark and purple cloud into a splendid rosy glow. The swiftly spinning cloud swirl stopped suddenly, then the dragon-like dazzling thunderbolts in it were all gone, without a single trace. Within a single second, the cloud swirl dissipated.

"True God?" Cheers came from Jade Earthworm’s enormous body, "I never thought that I’d be a true God one day! I’ve been hiding for so many years. But finally, I can walk out and stand under the bright sky of this world!"

Jade Earthworm let out a jade-white dense mist from his mouth, then flew up into the sky, transforming into a massive cloud and drifting in the air. He shouted at the sky thrillingly, "Heaven, why don’t you hit me? Why don’t you kill me? Why aren’t you suppressing me? I, Jade Earthworm, have finally brought myself to light once again!"

Roaring again towards the sky, Jade Earthworm curved his gigantic body and slowly turned his head, fixing those, over a thousand eyes of his on Si Xi. On the middle of his head was a hole that had been constantly opening and closing, filled with countless sharp teeth spinning like tops, causing loud swishing noises.

Around this tens of miles radius hole were meters-wide, dark-green eyes. These eyes looked like the eyes of snakes, cold, fierce, and emotionless.

"Marquis Chong Si XI, just now, you hurt that clone of mine very much!" Jade Earthworm laughed and said slowly to Si Xi, "Now, it’s my turn!"

Large streams of saliva gushed out from Jade Earthworm’s mouth. He moved abruptly, as that giant body of his stirred up a strong gust of wind, shattered the air and smashed down to Si Xi. Jade Earthworm used its enormous body as a weapon and threw it down at his enemy. The noise he generated sounded like the sky collapsing.

Si Xi looked at Jade Earthworm seriously. He had no chance to dodge, so he could only take it on.

Behind him, Man Man, Shaosi and the others were still asleep. Boy Chen was already killed by the mysterious man, but the illusions he created still lingered in their heads. At the moment, Man Man and the others had been fighting hard against those illusions, but none of them could struggle out within a short span of time.

Ji Hao could not dodge, because if he did that, Jade Earthworm’s

enormous body would fall on Man Man and the others.

Si Xi raised the thousand-mountain shield. The silhouettes of countless mountains rose from the shield, along with a dense yellow mist that covered the air and transformed into a ten-thousand-mile wide, thick mist shield, reaching up to the sky. Dark-yellow divine light dazzled from every pore of Si Xi. He absorbed the pure earth power coming from surrounding earth meridians, and his body began expanding, quickly reaching thousands of meters tall.

The thousands of meters tall Si Xi was now a frightening giant. Nevertheless, in comparison with Jade Earthworm's gigantic body, Si Xi still looked quite tiny.

The ground quaked intensely, gales in the air vibrated while countless bolts of thunder-flame descended from the sky. A half of Jade Earthworm's body landed heavily on the yellow-colored mist shield. Shocking waves roared in all directions visibly, swept across the surrounding area and flattened all mountains. Even hundreds of floating mountains in the sky were silently shattered.

The water-sealing formation built with breathing earth in Feather Mountain had also been struck by the strong waves of force. The tremendous water-tank-shaped water-sealing magic formation emitted a bright yellow light, yet remained perfectly motionless, no matter how hard the shocking waves struck.

"Si Xi!" Jade Earthworm straightened his body once again, facing Si Xi and called his name hoarsely, "Follow my voice...Si Xi!"

Si Xi trembled intensely. From his body, a faintly visible man-shaped mist spread out.

Jade Earthworm was high-pitched and extremely unpleasant to hear. However, that voice contained a dreadful soul-sealing power. If Si Xi were an ordinary human being, hearing Jade Earthworm's voice, his soul would definitely be dragged out of his body. Then, he would do anything the Jade Earthworm wanted.

Nevertheless, Si Xi was a Supreme Magus now, and his soul had merged with the core of the star inside his body. Hearing Jade Earthworm's voice, the star quaked inside his body, and the dark-yellow light emitted from his body was boosted up. But inside the star core, Si Xi's soul wasn't affected at all.

"Jade Earthworm...I am a Supreme Magus now. I share a body with a real star, and I am as powerful as an ancient star king! This little soul-sealing magic of yours, what can it possibly do to me?" Si Xi growled thunderously while swinging the Valley Thorn, that had also expanded to thousands of meters long, fiercely down towards Jade Earthworm's body.

Bang! A long and bleeding slash appeared on Jade Earthworm's gigantic body. Glowing snow-white blood splashed out and landed on the ground. Plants, rocks, and anything else touched this snow-white blood turned into milky white jade immediately.

Jade Earthworm roared ragingly at the sky, widely opened his mouthpart, and took a deep breath towards Si Xi, "If you refuse to give me your soul, then give me your blood, flesh and life-force!"

A strong whirlwind rose from around Si Xi, screaming towards Jade Earthworm's large mouth.

Other than taking souls, Jade Earthworm had another brutal ability, which was devouring living beings. Back in the prehistorical era, Jade Earthworm had a great appetite. He had swallowed countless living creatures and destroyed many species. At last, he gained incalculable enemies, which gathered together and beat him up, wounding him seriously. Since then, he disappeared completely, till this day!

Si Xi paused, his spirit blood was agitated, seeming about to gush out through his pores. He hurriedly wielded the thousand-mountain shield and covered his body with a dense yellow cloud. Meanwhile, the star inside his body also released a strong power that stabilized his spirit blood. Not even a slight little bit life-force

was dragged out of Si Xi’s body.

"Jade Earthworm, is that all you can do?" Si Xi looked at Jade Earthworm and shouted.

"What about me then?" Deep roars could be heard, while a scaled monster with a wolf body and a dragon head tore the earth apart and leaped up into the sky. "I am Dragon Wolf King. Si Xi, killing you is the mission that Gong Gong gave us!"

Dragon Wolf King opened his wide mouth and let out a sharp, crescent-shaped stream of power, fiercely hacking on the yellow mist shield created by the thousand-mountain shield.

Puff! A big half of the yellow mist shield was cut open, and Si Xi was almost injured.

Chapter 1023: The Fight Never Stopped

In the He Tu and Luo Shu great formation, on the river bend nearest to Ji Hao in the winding river, the water-kind spirit creature standing on the back of the enormous turtle showed his teeth menacingly. He pointed his finger at Ji Hao and said, "Earl Yao Ji Hao, from now on, you should respect our water-kind. If you are willing to be my slave, I might give you some meat to eat!"

High up in the sky, on a large star, another water-kind spirit creature, who had been holding a sparkling long streamer and remaining motionless, laughed out loud as well, "Earl Yao Ji Hao, you are so famous nowadays. We've been hearing your name all the time! But, you have to surrender to fate!"

On another star, a spirit creature with a turtle body and a dragon head grinned, releasing a few frigid streams of mist from his mouth, "Indeed, you have to learn to surrender to fate. Lord Gong Gong has planned for over a thousand years. This Pan Gu world will eventually become a world of boundless water, and our water-kind will become the owner of this world. As for your humankind, you are destined to work for us, serve us, and be our food!"

A muscular, enormous spirit creature, who had a strong power vibration releasing from him, abruptly dropped the sparkling long streamer held in his hand, and leaped down from his star. He trod on a cloud, drifting down hundreds of meters from Ji Hao. He looked at Ji Hao, and provokingly wielded his fist.

A taunting look showed in his fierce eyes, as this spirit creature pointed at Ji Hao and laughed, "Come over here, kneel under my feet, lick my palm! Hehe, if you lick well, I can kindly take you as a slave of mine. From now on, as long as I have something to eat, you can always get some soup."

From between Ji Hao's eyebrows, a clear stream of light suddenly spurted out. Without Kun Peng controlling the whole great

formation, these water-kind spirit creatures, who had been taunting and teasing Ji Hao, didn't manage to react timely. Ji Hao transformed into a clear beam of light and brushed across the spirit creature on a cloud.

He gripped the hilt of the Taiji divine sword reversely and let the sword edge gently slice across the neck of that enormous spirit creature.

The body of this spirit creature was thickly covered in bronze dragon scales. As the sword edge swept across his water-tank-thick neck, that neck was cut off as easily as cutting a piece of tofu. The extremely negative power was as cold as ice, softly drilling into this spirit creature's body.

The cutting edge on the neck was as smooth as a mirror, and no blood was squeezed out. The large head of this creature thudded on the ground. 'Pop', the head exploded, and turned into a pile of white colored fine ice crystals. The soul of this creature was frozen and destroyed by the extremely negative power as well. Not even a slight trace of his soul managed to escape.

"I am Earl Yao Ji Hao. I can't free myself from this He Tu and Luo Shu great formation, but it doesn't mean that you pieces of sh*t can do whatever you want in front of me." Ji Hao sent the golden bridge back into his body, then raised the Taiji divine sword high. The clear stream of light flew around his body, with some faintly visible, mysterious spell symbols sparkling in it.

"Your water-kind beings will become the owners of this world? For the fact that you said something like this, after the flood is controlled for good, I will suggest the human emperor to gather the force of the entire humankind and slaughter all water-kind beings in the world!" The intent of killing burned in Ji Hao's heart like a raging fire, as he said word by word, "From this day on, the humankind and the kind of spirit creatures are enemies!"

The group of water-kind spirit creature were shocked by Ji Hao's

cruelty and fierceness, daring not to make any other sound.

The one killed by Ji Hao just now had cultivated himself severely for tens of thousands of years, and was as powerful as peak-level Divine Magi. He was a famous high-grade warrior commander among the water-kind armies leading by Gong Gong, and had always been a fierce and violent one. Back in the Northern Wasteland, people would even mention his name to scare their children and stop them from crying loudly.

Nevertheless, such a strong spirit creature was actually killed by Ji Hao with such a quick sword move!

"Kill him!" In the sky, tens of water-kind spirit creatures standing on stars roared in rage. They wielded those sparkling long steamers as quickly as they could, allowing those large stars to dazzle in the sky. Streams of starlight poured down and struck straight to Ji Hao like shooting stars.

On the winding river, spirit creatures standing on the backs of the nine enormous turtles began incanting a spell together, making the river water surge and raise roaring waves. The air around Ji Hao turned heavy and sticky, as he felt like he was being soaked in glue, barely able to move. Meanwhile, a mighty pressure came from all directions, seeming to crush him.

Ji Hao sat down on the ground, crossed his legs, and put the Taiji divine sword on his knees, pressed his hands on the sword, without moving at all.

The Pan Gu bell floated above his head, sending down the Chaos power to protect Ji Hao. No matter how much power the great formation released, it could only stir the Chaos power, without harming even a hair of Ji Hao.

The Taiji Universe mirror released a bright clear light and wrapped around the misty starlight coming from the sky. Those misty starlight streams disappeared without a trace, then suddenly reappeared from behind those water-kind spirit creatures, who

had been waving their long streamers. It struck on the heads of these spirit creatures without giving them a chance to react, sweeping them off their feet.

"Idiots!" Ji Hao looked at these water-kind spirit creatures who suffered their own strike and snorted coldly.

From the large round-shaped light screen above his head, Ji Hao saw the Jade Earthworm and Dragon Wolf King crazily attacking Si Xi. Jade Earthworm largely opened his mouthpart and sent out a hurricane that wrapped Si Xi up. He couldn't drag any life-force out of Si Xi's body, but he did slow Si Xi down largely.

Dragon Wolf King opened his wide jaws, as purely dark, crescent-shaped, sharp streams of power swished out, almost shattering the yellow mist shield created by the thousand-mountain shield. Si Xi had been trying his best to draw power from the star inside his body. However, he could only barely maintain the yellow mist shield. Those dark crescent-shaped power streams nearly broke the thousand-mountain shield many times and injured his body.

Jade Earthworm laughed out wildly, "Si Xi, both the thousand-mountain shield and the Valley Thorn are supreme treasures from the heaven, and are unimaginably powerful. However, only true divine Gods can release all of their powers. But you, you can only trigger fifty percent of their powers at most!"

While attacking Si Xi violently, Dragon Wolf King roared and said, "Si Xi, if you had truly merged with that real star inside you and attained all the power which should belong to a star king, we might be a little bit afraid of you. But you're a still a new Supreme Magus. How much of the star power you can use? What percentage? Ten? Twenty?"

A muffled roar came from underground. Within the area three to four thousand miles in radius, rock layers rose, and then were crushed into ashes by a dreadful and violent force.

An incomparably huge cockroach slowly climbed up to the

ground. The spirit creature power released by it even cracked the earth, leaving countless huge cracks on the ground. Fei'lian King screamed thunderously, then his huge body began shrinking. It turned hundreds of miles long within a few breaths, and next, transformed into a muscular man with a purely dark skin.

Fei'lian King roared again at the sky, then grabbed a towering mountain, carried on his shoulder, and rushed towards Si Xi with big steps. Fei'lian King didn't know how to cast magic. Instead, he was all about strength. Rushing to Si Xi, he raised the mountain and smashed down on him.

Followed by a thunderous bang, under the joined attack launched by Fei'lian King and Dragon Wolf King, the yellow mist shield collapsed. Si Xi's wrist shook, then the large ten-thousand mountain shield was sent hundreds of miles away, followed by a yellow stream of light.

Before Si Xi could do anything else, Fei'lian King picked up the mountain and smashed into his chest, denting it while causing a thunderous series of bone cracking noise. Si Xi growled in rage, raised the Valley Thorn with his right hand and swung, whipping on Fei'lian King's head and crushed a half of it.

In the next moment, a green silhouette dashed over, heavily bumping on Si Xi's spine.

Si Xi shouted in pain, bending his body with a strange posture.

Chapter 1024: Forced to Bet with Life

What bumped on Si Xi's back was a seven to eight miles long, slim and a green toad.

This toad's skin was thickly covered in sparkling red light and loop-shaped speckles. With a single glimpse, one would know that this toad was a rare, highly poisonous one.

"Ms. Green Toad, great job!"

Standing on a dark cloud, Kun Peng gave a fake smile and said, "People, I've given you what you wanted. Are you no better than Ms. Green Toad, a woman? Do it together now, kill Si Xi. In the future, each one of you will have a good position in the heaven."

The green toad grunted, then opened her jaws and let out red and blue, weirdly glowing streams of poisonous mist that quickly enveloped Si Xi's entire body.

Si Xi's chest was dented, and his spine was broken. He tightened his body up and let his hollow chest swell back up, while his broken spine healed in an instant. Next, he stomped his foot on the ground and made the earth buzz. Dense yellow mist rolled in the air and rushed in from all directions, landing on his body and transforming into a thick yellow armor.

A full armor covered Si Xi's body, then the yellow-colored earth power continued gathering towards him. This heavy and thick armor turned more and more clear and crystal-like, and soon became as transparent as a real crystal.

Ms. Green Toad had just let out a mouthful of poisonous mist, and before she could leap away, Si Xi wielded the Valley Thorn with his right hand, creating a ten-mile wide hole under Ms. Green Toad's feet. A dreadfully great gravity force transformed into a blue light and shone from the deep hole. It gripped Ms. Green Toad's body and dragged her down into the bottomless hole.

Si Xi burst with a great growl, then the ground folded back together. A strange rumbling noise came from underground, while Ms. Green Toad's raging curse could be faintly heard.

Jade Earthworm suddenly drilled into the ground, making it quake. In the following moment, layers of rock around Si Xi shattered, as Jade Earthworm's enormous head reached out of the ground while spraying white mist, with Ms. Green Toad carried on that head. Ms. Green Toad was now covered in wounds.

Ms. Green Toad threw a vicious glance at Si Xi, then opened her mouth and let out a three-hundred meters wide, green bead.

The bead was surrounded by coiling green mist, striking down towards Si Xi's head along with a streak of light. The green mist around the bead slightly touched Si Xi's earth power armor, but a large area of armor instantly turned light-green from dark-yellow, then turned into fine sand and dispersed off.

Followed by a muffled bang, the bead struck on Si Xi's head, immediately covering Si Xi's face with a thin layer of green mist. He staggered slightly, and couldn't help but take two steps backward. Even the air he breathed out was faintly green.

"Now! Move! Kill him together!" Kun Peng's face was even twitching in excitement, "A human Supreme Magus! Since the era of Emperor Fu Xi, no human Supreme Magus has ever died! If you kill Si Xi today, your fame will last for thousands of years. Generation after generation, you will be worshipped by all spirit creatures!"

Fei'lian King roared hoarsely while he largely opened his mouth. Two shining tusks fell off from his mouth and transformed into a pair of machetes, being gripped in his hands. Like a crazy devil, Fei'lian King violently pounced on Si Xi, while the pair of machetes hacked on Si Xi's body, leaving sharp shreds of afterimages in the air.

Si Xi didn't have the time the retrieve the thousand-mountain

shield. Therefore, he could only take all the attacks with that earth power armor worn by him now. Wherever the pair of machetes reached, long cracks appeared on the yellow armor, while Si Xi was continuously forced back by Fei'lian King's strangely humongous strength. A bone cracking noise constantly came out of Si Xi's body, while large streams of green blood spurted out of his mouth.

Dragon Wolf King laughed maliciously, largely opened his mouth, and sent out a massive wave of sharp, crescent power stream. A dark tornado was generated by these dark crescent power streams, sweeping across the area. The nature of these dark crescent power stream was unknown, but without a doubt, they were incredibly sharp and highly corrosive. Si Xi's armor was cut into pieces, while sharp dark crescent power streams brushed across his body, leaving thin yet deep wounds on him.

Jade Earthworm opened his mouthpart and let out a strong gust of wind that surrounded Si Xi's body. Drops of blood squeezed out from Si Xi's wounds, all being swallowed by Jade Earthworm.

Another thunderous roar could be heard as a not so huge crack appeared on the ground, from which, a bright blue, enormous aquatic centipede dashed out. The body of this aquatic centipede had over three-thousand sections, each section having a sharp pair of blade-like feet.

This aquatic centipede had a dragon head, and was only around a hundred meters thick. But, it was over ninety-thousand meters long. Blue venom had been spurting out of the huge mouth of this aquatic centipede. This aquatic centipede flew swiftly, transformed into a long blue streak of light and dazzling across the sky. Its thousands of sharp feet brought up frigid beams of light, fiercely cutting on Si Xi's body.

A series of puffing noise could be heard without an end, while those highly poisonous, dagger-like feet sank deep into Si Xi's body and dragged large pieces of skin and flesh off his body. Si Xi growled at the sky, as a blue starlight broke out from his body. The

poisons sent into his body by Ms. Green Toad and the blue centipede were forced out by the heavy star power, and next, the gravity force around Si Xi's body was suddenly raised by thousands of times. Even the space was crushed by the suddenly raised gravity force.

Along with a series of cracking noise, Jade Earthworm, Fei'lian King, Ms. Green Toad, the blue centipede and the other few Chaos monsters had their heads thudded on the ground simultaneously. The suddenly changed gravity force didn't give them any time to react, and they all fell to the ground quite embarrassedly. Before these few Chaos monsters stood back up, Kun Peng suddenly swung his arm forward and threw out a meteor hammer. The meteor hammer stirred up a fierce gale and violently smashed on the back of Si Xi's head, making him stumble and press down to the ground.

"Do it! Together! What're you waiting for?!" Kun Peng waved his arms and screamed, "Kill Si Xi! Cut his stomach open! I've always been wondering that human Magi take real stars into their bodies with ninety-nine star-sealing magic formation, but what do those stars look like in their bellies?"

A thunderous growl came from a distance. Another Chaos monster merged with the divine talisman. As the spirit creature power released from this Chaos monster gradually turned divine, this faintly glowing, purple and golden creature shattered thick layers of rock and rose from underground.

This enormous creature looked like a belt fish, with tens of transparent fins on both sides of its body. His saw-shaped mouthpart was filled with sharp teeth, and from time to time, electric bolts flashed across his body. From far away, he looked at Si Xi, opened his mouthpart and sent out dragon-like bolts of lightning, striking at Si Xi along with a thunderous noise.

Inside the He Tu and Luo Shu great formation, Ji Hao sat on the ground with his teeth gnashed, looking at those Chaos monsters

attacking Si Xi.

Obviously, Si Xi was about to lose it. Indeed, Si Xi was a Supreme Magus now, but after all, he was a newly promoted Supreme Magus. At this stage, he couldn’t yet control all the powers of the star inside his body. In comparison with these Chaos monsters, Si Xi was weaker in both terms of power and experience.

Furthermore, Si Xi was attacked by a group of Chaos monsters together, and it was already impressive for Si Xi to come so far.

Right behind Si Xi were Man Man, Shaosi and the others...If anything happened to Si Xi, they would be the next to die.

"You have forced me...He Tu, Luo Shu, you’re called supreme magic treasures, and supreme magic treasures should have souls..."

"Do you dare to make a bet with your lives?"

Ji Hao slowly took out all destructive magic talismans and magic thunder bombs he had. These were given by Priest Dachi for the life-and-death game in Pan Xi world, but Ji Hao didn’t use them all in Pan Xi world. While speaking, Ji Hao put all these magic talismans and bombs neatly on the ground.

Chapter 1025: Supreme Magic Treasures Have Souls

Those water-kind spirit creatures who had been crazily attacking Ji Hao with the power of the He Tu and Luo Shu great formation stopped simultaneously, staring at those magic talismans and magic thunder bombs in front of Ji Hao, as if those were ghosts from hell.

These spirit creatures were as powerful as peak-level Divine Magi. In order to reach this level, they had cultivated themselves for at lease ten-thousand years. Therefore, these spirit creatures were all knowledgeable and experienced. All these magic talismans and magic thunder bombs made by Priest Dachi seemed to be ordinary at first glance, but if one looked closer, every single one of these pieces placed on the ground by Ji Hao had been releasing a strong yet restrained power of Dao. As these spirit creatures released their spirit powers and scanned across these magic talismans and thunder bombs, a fear arose from the deepest areas of their souls.

That dreadful feeling reminded them of their infancy, when they were little weak spirit creature living in the wildness. During thunderstorm days, they could only hide in their nests, listening to the thunders rumbling above their heads, that seemed ready to strike them to death at any time.

Like a bottomless chasm, like a vast ocean, that immeasurable terror threw them into despair.

Standing on stars, those water-kind spirit creatures had cold sweat flowing down from their foreheads. How scary was this? Just now, if they didn’t stop attacking Ji Hao timely, and if a slight stream of starlight touched any of those magic talismans and thunder bombs, all those talismans and thunder bombs might get detonated. Without a doubt, once these things were detonated,

they would definitely be all blown into ashes.

As for Ji Hao...

Ji Hao was protected by the Pan Gu bell. Even the He Tu and Luo Shu great magic formation couldn’t do any harm to him, so these things surely wouldn’t be able to hurt even a hair of his either.

"Earl Yao Ji Hao, you, where did you..." A crocodile-shaped spirit creature, whose skin was thickly covered in pimples, pointed his finger at those magic talismans and thunder bombs and stuttered in both fear and greediness, "These treasures, where did you get them?"

Ji Hao pressed his hands on the Taiji Divine sword, flicked his finger and tinkled the sword edge, making a silvery sound. Without taking even a glance at these water-kind spirit creatures, Ji Hao continued, "He Tu, Luo Shu, since you’re both supreme magic treasures, you should be able to hear me speaking. In my sect, Priest Dachi is my elder uncle, Priest Qing Wei is my younger uncle, and my Shifu..."

"Priest Yu Yu..." Abruptly, an old and hoarse voice came from an unknown source, "That one always gave us headaches. Is he your Shifu?"

All those water-kind spirit creatures who had been controlling the great formation leaped straight up. In a great panic, they looked around while shouting in shock. He Tu and Luo Shu were two supreme magic treasures cherished by Kun Peng for countless years. Kun Peng hadn’t gained full control over these two treasures. Therefore, he always needed these water-kind spirit creatures to help him control the He Tu and Luo Shu great magic formation that he created based on those two treasures.

It had been many years since this great formation was created. These water-kind spirit creatures had helped Kun Peng control this great formation hundreds of times, but they never heard such a voice from the great formation.

This He Tu and Luo Shu great formation wasn't really under their full control. This made cold sweat gush out of the back of these proud and arrogant water-kind spirit creatures instantly. A bad feeling struck them suddenly.

"Priest Yu Yu is my Shifu." Ji Hao slowly stood up, gripped the hilt of the Taiji divine sword with both hands and pointed the sword tip to the ground. Coldly, he continued, "You know him, perfect...His temper...You know what I mean?"

Remaining silent for a while, that old and hoarse voice sighed heavily and said, "These magic talismans, thunder bombs, Priest Dachi made these, didn't he?"

Ji Hao nodded and responded with a deep voice, "Do you think these magic talismans and thunder bombs made by my elder under can damage this great formation and harm you two? Or...What if I risk losing everything and make a greater bet with you?"

Gnashing his teeth, Ji Hao took out the golden bridge, Taiji Creation cauldron, and Taiji Universe mirror.

Pointing at these supreme pieces, which had been releasing strong power vibrations, Ji Hao said in that deep and cold voice of his, "I can bear lose everything... If I make these treasures destroy themselves..."

A silvery voice came, interrupted him in a slightly taunting and scornful tone, "Not a single pre-world supreme magic treasure will ever destroy itself...Supreme treasures can recognize you as their owners, can help you fight your enemies, but are you saying that you want magic treasures like us to destroy ourselves? Hehe, I doubt it. Do you really think you're powerful enough to do that?"

Ji Hao coughed. He didn't know which one of these two voices belonged to He Tu and which one belonged to Luo Shu. While coughing, Ji Hao boosted up the powers of the few treasures as much as he could, then said, "Maybe you won't destroy yourself, but these treasures of mine definitely will...Because they're not

naturally crafted, they're artificial...They haven't yet had souls. Therefore, I can easily make them destroy themselves with a single thought of mine!"

The two voices remained silent for a long while, then the old and hoarse one began talking, "Make pre-world treasures with after-world powers? This...Hmm, this sense of power is familiar... Are these his works? Did he make these for you? You...You're indeed valued by them."

That silvery voice also turned lower, sounding a bit weak, "More importantly, you're Priest Yu Yu's disciple...Eh, even if you Shifu wasn't Yu Yu, the other two, and the one behind them, all not easy to deal with."

Ji Hao said in a deep voice, "I'm not demanding too much. I only want you to open the great formation and let me go."

The two voices responded almost simultaneously, "Let you go... Fine. But, Kun Peng forcibly cultivated us for countless years, and a small half of our true spirit is now under his control. If you can destroy the true spirit seal he left inside us, anything can be negotiable."

Before these two voices faded, a black and white sphere of mist silently emerged. Inside the mist was a vast body water, and in the water was an enormous fish. It was drifting along the waves, letting out bright roars from time to time that sounded like dragon roars.

Above the head of this enormous fish, a hundreds of miles long, unfolded scroll floated. On the scroll, countless great rivers were coiling around each other. Ji Hao only cast a glimpse at the scroll, but he could already barely remain standing, as if violent waves had slapped on him.

"You have Priest Dachi's magic talismans, perfect!" said He Tu and Luo Shu together, "Destroy this true spirit seal left by Kun Peng for us, along with this 'ten-thousand streams scroll' that he

used for controlling us. You set us free, and we send you out!"

A cold light sparkled in Ji Hao’s eyes as he said, "Not enough. You trapped me in here for so long, and made Minister Si Xi suffer so many severe injuries...You also have to trap those Chaos monsters for me."

Remaining silent for a while, He Tu and Luo Shu responded together, "Only for once...You don’t even think about us recognizing you as our owner!"

Ji Hao smilingly raised his head, nodded to those dumbfounded spirit creature, and said, "Only for once, you trap those Chaos monsters for me, then everything can be negotiated. Minister Si Xi and I will deal with Kun Peng together."

He Tu and Luo Shu laughed out loud, then the black and white mist dissipated slowly, exposing Kun Peng’s true spirit seal.

Chapter 1026: A Great Reversal

Feather Mountain, under the sub-water-sealing magic formation which was built with breathing earth, Si Xi had been gasping quickly, and his body was covered in blood.

He was wounded severely, over and over again. But with the power of the real star inside him, he healed himself every time. Si Xi had already boosted his power up to an extreme degree, but still failed to fend off all attacks launched by those Chaos monsters. Not to mention the fact that Kun Peng had been standing aside, staring at him all the time. Just now, he threw out a meteor hammer that broke Si Xi's skull, and nearly knocked him out. By now, Si Xi paid a small half of his attention on Kun Peng, in case he launched any other sneak attacks.

Kun Peng held his hands in his sleeves, proudly looking at another two Chaos monsters merge with their divine talismans, dispelling their evil spirit creature power and turning into true Gods of this world to join the fight against Si Xi.

As long as these Chaos monsters killed Si Xi, and had their hands stained by Si Xi's blood, they could no longer hesitate. They would be having no choice but to follow Gong Gong to the end obediently.

These Chaos monsters…To be honest, Kun Peng despised them.

What Chaos monsters? What powerful creatures born before the time? All bullsh*t!

What terrifying evil beings? Who had joined the great war against Saint Pan Gu? They were just bragging!

If they were truly that great, why did they all hide after the prehistorical era ended? Why didn't they dare to show your real faces to people in this world? Ultimately, wasn't that because they weren't powerful enough? Kun Peng was a part of the first batch of living creatures in Pan Gu world. Back in the prehistorical era, he

indeed wasn't as powerful as these Chaos monsters, but how was the situation now?

At present, he was the head of the eight senior ministers under Gong Gong's command. Back in the Northern Wasteland, no one could command him but Gong Gong. He was worshiped by billions of people; he held power over those people's lives and properties, and he could have anything he wanted.

These Chaos monsters, their fame was way bigger than their powers. If Gong Gong didn't insist on getting them involved, Kun Peng wouldn't even think about inviting these evil creatures to join the team. But of course, Kun Peng could understand some of Gong Gong's thoughts. It was nothing but the game of powers, methods to achieve balance.

While scornfully laughing, Kun Peng proudly raised his head and looked at the sky.

As for those plans of Gong Gong, Kun Peng believed that he had seen through all of those plans and calculations. After all, Kun Peng had lived for so many years, but how old was Gong Gong? Kun Pen had served tens of generations of Gong Gong already. Speaking of plans and calculations, how many people in the world could ever be compared with him, Kun Peng?

Back then, if he didn't owe Gong Gong Family that much and be forced to make a blood oath to serve Gong Gong Family till the end of the day, how could Kun Peng ever be willing to stay under Gong Gong's command?

"But, who am I? Even though you're now working with those non-humankind beings, even though you have now gotten all these ancient evil beings involved, I will still get every everything I deserve, everything."

Kun Peng laughed proudly. No matter what Gong Gong wanted, no matter what Pan Gu world would become, all in all, he, Kun Peng, would definitely be able to gain the richest part of the

ultimate accomplishment,. This was the great confidence that Kun Peng raised in the past countless years. It had been so many centuries, but when had Kun Peng ever suffered or been deceived?

Except for the fact that earlier today, he was almost smashed to death by someone...

Curving his mouth corners down, Kun Peng rubbed his back, where he could still feel a dull pain from. He gnashed his teeth and cursed. Priest Hua and Priest Mu, those two, it was better not to offend them...But it was hard to say though. Once Gong Gong achieved his goal, and when the ownership of this world shifted, he would naturally get a chance to take his revenge.

Dong! Tusk Sandfly King, who had just transformed into a man shape, turned his pair of arms into a pair of huge machetes and hacked on Si Xi's back. The pair of long sawtooth machetes dragged Si Xi's spine out of his body. Blood splashed, while Si Xi roared in pain. The few Chaos monsters rushed up together and launched a crazy wave of attacks on Si Xi, while letting the Valley Thorn whip on their faces.

Si Xi clenched his teeth and fought without taking a single step back, suffering all violent attacks, protecting Man Man and the others with his body. Man Man and the others were still asleep. Si Xi wielded the Valley Thorn and tried his best to defend. But still, Ms. Green Toad made a bite on his right lower leg. A small half of his leg bone was corroded and softened by the venom. The bone broke, and Si Xi's knee thudded on the ground.

"Kill!" Fei'lian King wielded a machete of his, launching three hacks on Si Xi's neck in a row.

The first hack broke his armor, the second hack made into his muscle, and the third hack broke his bones. Three hacks in a row, Si Xi's head was almost sent flying into the sky. Si Xi growled in pain, as a blood-red light flashed across his neck. The strong life-force of his healed his wound immediately once again.

Straightening the Valley Thorn, Si Xi lunged it like a spear. Fei'lian King howled in pain as the Valley Thorn penetrated his body. Sticky blood gushed out of his body in streams along the Valley Thorn's body, then spraying on Si Xi's head and face.

"My friends, are you still saving your powers?" Kun Peng shouted unpleasantly, "We've wasted enough time. Hurry up, do it now. We have real businesses to attend. Hehe, finish him, and a big half of the great goal will be accomplished."

The last two Chaos monsters merged with their divine talismans as well, dispelled their evil spirit creature power, and became true Gods. Hearing Kun Peng, the few Chaos monsters roared out simultaneously and glanced at each other, incanting a strange, complicated spell tougher in concord. An overwhelming spirit creature power released from their bodies, as an evil frigid gust of wind rose from the ground, transformed into dense clouds, and wrapped Si Xi in it.

This was a long-brewed lethal attack. As long as these Chaos monsters burst their powers together, Si Xi might not be able to survive, even though he was a Supreme Magus.

At this very moment, the He To and Luo Shu magic formation, which floated in the air, silently split up. An earth-shaking bang came from the air. Kun Peng had been looking at Si Xi in a taunting and scornful way, as if he was watching a great show. But all of a sudden, he burst with a howl, buried his head in his arms, and screamed heartbreakingly. Blood spurted out from his head. Without knowing how, he was wounded severely, not only in his body, but also his soul. Furthermore, the injury was quite serious.

The power vibration released from Kun Peng was suddenly weakened by seventy to eighty percent. He raised his head, looked at the He Tu and Luo Shu great formation. He couldn't believe his eyes. He howled hysterically, "You idiots, scums, b*stards... What the hell did you do? I asked you to do one thing! One thing only! Trap Ji Hao! Trap that kid..."

With the Pan Bu bell floating above his head, Ji Hao descended from the air. Taiji divine sword was held in his right hand, leaving an arc-shaped beam of light in the air as it followed a mysterious, indescribable track. The sword hacked down at Kun Peng's head, as if it was going to open a whole new world.

Behind Ji Hao was a sphere of black and white mist, transformed from the He Tu and Luo Shu great formation. The mist rolled, and suddenly turned into a tornado that roared down. The few Chaos monsters had still been crazily attacking Si Xi, but when they saw the black and white, roaring tornado, they screamed out loud. In the following moment, all these Chaos monsters were dragged up into the air by the tornado.

The hundred-mile-radius, black and white sphere of mist began spinning swiftly. He Tu and Luo Shu's voice echoed to the clouds, "Earl Yao Ji Hao, you broke Kun Peng's true spirit seal for us, so we can surely help you to trap these few evil things. But you should move fast, as too many people have been coveting us. Just finish this as soon as you can, we're in a hurry to hide ourselves!"

Ji Hao laughed out wildly. The edge of the Taiji divine sword had already reached Kun Peng's head. A sharp intent of sword spread out in the air, shattering Kun Peng's long hair inch by inch, exposing his shining scalp.

Chapter 1027: Red Flame Heaven Strike

Clang! Kun Peng swiftly raised a four-edged sword and blocked the Taiji divine sword. Large clouds of frigid mist spurted out from the four-edged sword, transforming to layers of mushroom-shaped cloud that shielded Kun Peng.

Ji Hao combined the moves of sky-opening, earth-splitting, everything-grow and everything-perish, and launched this attack. An immeasurable power of Dao was contained in this move. Dark frigid clouds shattered layer by layer, until the Taiji divine sword hacked on the purely dark four-edged sword, which was divided into twenty-four sections.

This pair of four-edged swords was also a naturally crafted supreme treasure generated by the world itself when it was created. This pair of weapons was called Great Cold sword, named after one of the twenty-four solar term, called Great Cold. The nature of this pair of weapons was nothing but coldness, perfectly matching Kun Peng's power.

Nevertheless, clanging against the Taiji divine sword, this world-companying spirit treasure let out a shrill scream, then was cut into two by Ji Hao's sword. A loud sizzling noise could be heard, while this broken four-edged sword and the other one in Kun Peng's sleeve, transformed into a dense, dark mist, spreading out. Following a series of resonant howls, two dark flood dragons wriggled away in the dense mist.

Ji Hao harmed the true body of a Great Cold sword, and also crushed the true spirit seal left in it by Kun Peng. That Great Cold sword was damaged severely, but fortunately, this treasure was created in pair. One was cut broken, but the other one remained undamaged. Therefore, this pair of supreme treasure was only damaged, and not destroyed directly.

Kun Peng's true spirit seal was broken, so he could no longer

control this pair of Great Cold sword. Therefore, this pair of sword, which were badly wounded by Ji Hao, fled away at their highest speed. Their fear towards the Taiji divine sword had reached an extreme point. How could they stay any longer to protect Kun Peng?

Being blocked by the Great Cold sword for a moment, the Taiji divine sword was slowed down slightly. Blood surged out from Kun Peng's mouth, ears, eyes and nose. He screamed in pain while whirlwinds rose from around his body, wrapped his scrawny body, and dragged him away quickly.

Poor Kun Peng, no one knew where this misfortune of his come from. He Tu and Luo Shu were a pair of legendary pre-world magic treasure, known as the most mysterious pre-world magic treasures in the entire Pan Gu world. This pair fell into Kun Peng's hands, but after countless years of severe cultivation, he only managed to merge a slight trace of true spirit seal in this pair of treasure. With some solid difficulties, he finally created the He Tu and Luo Shu great magic formation to trap his enemies.

In order to cultivate He Tu and Luo Shu and gain a full control of this pair, the true spirit seal he put in these two treasures was created with thirty percent of his own primordial spirit. With Kun Peng's great power, even though that was only thirty percent of his primordial spirit, Ji Hao couldn't possibly harm it without any external force. Sadly, He Tu and Luo Shu exposed Kun Peng's true spirit seal entirely to Ji Hao without any hesitation. Coincidentally, Ji Hao had so many magic talismans and thunder bombs made by Priest Dachi,

Kun Peng's true spirit seal was turned into nothingness by those magic talismans and thunder bombs made by Priest Dachi, which meant thirty percent of Kun Peng's primordial spirit collapsed directly. The piercing pain coming from the deepest area of his soul made Kun Peng want to die, making his tears gush out of his eye sockets in streams.

Before he could pull himself out of that pain, the true spirit seal in that Great Cold sword was destroyed by Ji Hao. One disaster struck after another. Kun Peng even lost his eyesight temporarily, and almost fainted.

However, Kun Peng was indeed among the first batch of living creatures in Pan Gu world, one of the most powerful living beings in this world, and the original ancestor of his kind in Northern Sea. Suffering such a severe primordial spirit injury and facing the lethal move launched by Ji Hao, he still managed to instinctively start a massive whirlwind and send himself to seven to eight miles away, then finally thud on the ground.

Burying his head in his arms, Kun Peng screamed. His body twitched like a leech covered in salt.

Ji Hao pull back the sword, laughed out loud to Kun Peng and said, "Kun Peng, you've been quite confident just now, haven't you? How're you feeling now?"

Si Xi took a deep breath. Just now, he was assaulted violently by a large group of Chaos monster, and was almost out of shape. As he took a deep breath, the ground began shaking intensely, while pure earth power surged through his body through his mouth. Within a blink of an eye, his broken body recovered completely, and all his wounds were healed.

Surrounded by a heavy and great star power, Si Xi slowly stood up and clenched his left fingers. Along with a shrill swishing noise, the thousand-mountain shield flew back into his hand. Shaking his head hard, Si Xi laughed out loud to Ji Hao and said, "Ji Hao! Great job! Kun Peng! Ha, I've been wanting to taste a half-fish and half-bird b*stard like you since long ago!"

In the Northern Sea, there lived a group of fish, named 'Kun'. They could transform into enormous birds, named 'Peng'.

Si Xi called Kun Peng 'a half-fish and half-bird b*stard', which sounded awful, but true. Not to mention Si Xi, even Ji Hao

suddenly had a great amount of saliva flowing out from his salivary gland at the moment. He also wanted to know what would it taste like if he beat Kun Peng back to his original shape, sliced a giant piece of meat off from his body and carefully cooked.

Would Kun Peng taste like both fish and bird?

Shaking his head, Ji Hao threw these ideas out of his head. Kun Peng was the head of the eight senior ministers under Gong Gong's command. How could he be eaten so easily?

Si Xi carried the Valley Thorn and rushed to Kun Peng with big steps. He raised it and smashed down fiercely towards Kun Peng's head.

Kun Peng howled ear-piercingly. A black streak of light dazzled out of his sleeve, which was the meteor hammer that he earlier attacked Si Xi with. The meteor hammer screamed out and smashed violently on Si Xi's chest. Followed a cracking noise, Si Xi's chest dented, and the meteor hammer stuck in SI Xi's chest like an inlaid bead. However, Si Xi's didn't pause, he wasn't even slowed down. He seemed to feel no pain from his chest, as he still smashed the Valley Thorn at Kun Peng with all his strength.

The piercing pain from his soul was still lingering. Kun Peng couldn't see, and could only scream heartbreakingly. Fierce black gales roared around his body and rose straight into the sky. His body twitched intensively and within a twinkling of an eye, that body of his expanded to over ten-miles long.

Si Xi's Valley Thorn landed on Kun Peng's expanding body, sending up splashes of blood, smashing Kun Peng tens of miles away. Kun Peng's body was still expanding quickly, and the wound created by Si Xi recovered within a second, without leaving a mark.

In a few breaths, Kun Peng's body expanded to tens of thousands of miles wide. He was surrounded by dense dark clouds, with a pair of enormous wing reaching down from the sky. With one breath of

his, a storm was created.

Abruptly, fiery light shone in the sky and turned the dark clouds that covered Kun Peng's body. Scorching airwaves descended from the sky, along with deep and rumbling sound of a war drum. The sound of drum was slow, extremely slow. The drum was beaten with a steady rhythm, and every single drumbeat seemed to explode right on the hearts, making Ji Hao and Si Xi uncomfortable.

Fiery clouds descended from the sky one after another. Each fiery cloud was around ten-miles wide, with over a thousand strong warriors wearing flame armors standing on it, in perfectly ordered lines. These warriors were holding all kinds of divine weapons wrapped in flames, looking at Si Xi and Ji Hao expressionlessly.

In front of these fiery clouds was a thousand miles wide fireball.

Following a swooshing noise, the fireball fell straight down from the sky and smashed on Si Xi and Ji Hao's head.

Chapter 1028: The True God of Fire

The thousand-miles wide fireball shrunk to three-thousand meters by the time it reached Si Xi's head.

From the almost tangible fireball, a glowing red slim silhouette sparkled, then a long spear swished out of the fireball, fiercely piercing towards Si Xi along with raging purple flames.

Si Xi raised the thousand-mountain shield, which clanged with the spear and sent up dazzling fire sparkles. The impact caused a thunderous bang that even vibrated the earth and the sky. The earth under Si Xi's feet cracked rumblingly. The ground quaked intensely, until the entire area with a radius of around a thousand miles dented all of a sudden.

Ji Hao's body had been shaking slightly. The man who came from inside the fireball was too powerful. Si Xi was over three-hundred-meters tall now, but a big half of his body had sunken into the ground under the effect of the fierce attack launched by that fire man. The earth was broken and dented, as dense clouds of yellow mist surged out, while scorching hot air streams poured down from the sky. The ground under Ji Hao's feet even melted into bubbling lava.

"Up!" Ji Hao roared resonantly while clenching his left fingers, sending out a refreshing gust of wind that rolled up Man Man and the others, who were still in sleep, and dragged them under the Chaos power released by the Pan Gu bell. Next, Ji Hao flicked his fingers and cast an evil-dispelling spell. The bodies of Man Man and the others quivered instantly, then faintly visible, seven-colored mist drifted out from their ears, mouth, nose and eyes.

Shaosi slightly moved her body, then woke up the first. Before she could ask any question, that fireball exploded in the sky and a slim man darted out, treading on fire clouds and wielding a long spear wrapped in coiling purple flames. He pounced on Si Xi while

leaving countless arc-shaped purple lights in the air.

Si Xi roared like a beast while fending with the thousand-mountain shield and swinging the Valley Thorn, launching violent attacks. An intense fight quickly started between Si Xi and that fire man.

That fire man was only tens of meters tall, and the fiery cloud under his feet seemed to be a powerful magic treasure, strangely fast and amazingly nimble. Ji Hao couldn’t even clearly see the moves of that fiery cloud. Despite his great eye power, he could only see shreds of glowing red afterimages and raging flames hovering around Si Xi.

Si Xi was over three-hundred-meters tall. This enormous body had a great advantage in close combat against those Chaos monsters, but facing a tens of meters tall enemy, Si Xi now looked like an elephant who was wielding his foot, trying to kill a hummer. He had been trying his best, but every time, the valley thorn brushed against the fire man, and failed to touch even a hair of the enemy.

Puffing noise could be heard without an end. Within a second, hundreds of bone-deep wounds appeared on Si Xi’s enormous body. Strong purple flame lingered on these hundreds of meters long wounds, burning ragingly, breaking Si Xi’s skin. Gradually, a thick aroma of grilling meat started spreading in the air.

"Ah!" Si Xi growled thunderously. His body shrunk speedily, and within a few breaths, he turned as tall as that fire man, and his moves became more than a hundred times nimbler than before. Si Xi wielded the Valley Thorn and clashed fiercely against the long spear swung towards him.

The ear-piercing series of clangs lasted forever. Yellow mist and fiery purple-red light dazzled everywhere, while terrifying power streams bumped into each other in the air. Si Xi was shaking intensely, and abruptly, he howled in pain. He failed to grip the

thousand-mountain shield, which was sent flying away by the enemy. Then, the long spear wrapped in purple flames swished down and cut Si Xi's hand off.

Purple streaks of flame spurted out from Si Xi's broken hand, burning it into a strand of drifting ash within a second. Si Xi immediately leaped backward and flew over a hundred miles away along with a strong gale. He landed heavily on a towering mountain, then wielded his left arm and popped out his eyes. Crack! A new hand grew out from his broken wrist in an instant.

"Who are you?" Si Xi shouted harshly at that man surrounded by flame and fiery clouds.

Floating in the air, Kun Peng laughed with a hissing sound and said, "Who is him? Don't you have eyes? This is the Fire God, Si Xi, this is the true Fire God, the owner of all fires in the world!"

Taking a long gasp, Kun Peng roared with his teeth gnashed, then continued, "You have indeed merged your body with a real star with the ninety-nine star-sealing magic formation inside you, and become a Supreme Magus. But so what? Hundreds of millions of ancient star kings existed, and you're now just like one of them. How can you ever compare with the true Fire God? With your power? Position? Or magic?"

Inside the coiling streams of Chaos power released by the Pan Gu bell, Ji Hao had his teeth gnashed tight, as he stared at that young man, who was treading on a fiery wind. He was holding a long spear and wearing a glowing red long robe. The man was handsome, bland, and expressionless, with a pair of lifeless eyes that seemed to be without much of self-awareness.

As Kun Peng said, countless stars existed in the starry void, and back in the era of the ancient heaven, every star had a star king living on it. These stars kings were connected with their stars. With the powers of their stars, they could turn oceans upside down. If one compared the ancient heaven to a government, in

either terms of power or position, those star kings only equaled to army commanders, each ruling a certain area.

Nevertheless, the Fire God was an important senior minister, his position higher than any star king.

The number of ancient star kings had reached hundreds of millions, while top-grade beings like the Fire God only existed in the Department of Fire, Gold, Earth, Water, Thunder, Lightning and other few departments, numbering no more than a hundred.

At the moment, Si Xi had merged with a real star with the nature of earth. If he were in the ancient heaven, he would be a star king belonging to the department of earth. Reasonably, he would be under the command and supervision of the Earth God, the leader of the Earth department.

Right now, the one standing in front of Si Xi was the true Fire God, the highest leader of the department of fire in the heaven. Among all divine gods in the heaven, every single one with a nature of fire should be under his command. In terms of power and position, Si Xi couldn’t possibly compare with him.

"The heaven has fallen, so where did this so-called true Fire God come from?" Ji Hao said in a deep and calm voice, while forcibly restraining the unease in his heart, "He is not another so-called ‘true god’ that Gong Gong made up himself, is he? Just like the White Dragon River God? Is this thing a spirit creature with the nature of fire? Did you push him out to fool us?"

Hearing Ji Hao, Kun Peng laughed out wildly, as if he had just heard the most laughable joke in the world, that his body even began twitching.

His true spirit seals were damaged, that brought him a severe injury, and he hadn’t recovered from that yet. While laughing, blood was surging out of his mouth and nose and ears. He was now enormous. Therefore, his blood turned into a heavy blood rain, descending to the earth.

"Earl Yao Ji Hao, I know that you're...frightened! But, this one here is not a spirit creature. He is the true Fire God, given birth by the world itself! With his identity and his power, he might become the Red Divine Emperor in the future, who knows?"

The young man surrounded by coiling flames slowly turned around and stared at Ji Hao with a pair of glowing red eyes. He said word by word with an emotionless tone, "I am Zhu Rong, the Fire God. I rule all gods of fire in the world. I am here to govern the divine world, the mortal world and the netherworld... I am here to straighten the great Dao of nature...Ignorant little kid, how dare you talk like that?"

Swoosh! The man who called himself Zhu Rong lunged his spear and fiercely clanged against the Pan Gu bell.

Chapter 1029: Earth God Hou Tu

The Pan Gu bell buzzed resonantly. The Chaos power released by the bell quacked intensively, that disabled Ji Hao from standing still. Ji Hao was pushed flying back for tens of miles by a strong force, then bumped into a great mountain.

The Chao power spread out and bloomed like a giant, grey, misty lotus, turning the mountain that Ji Hao bumped in, into a puff of smoke. Kun Peng raised a hurricane that roared across and dispelled the smoke. Before Ji Hao could steady his own body, Zhu Hong's long spear released tens of thousands of flame that dazzled to Ji Hao like bolts of lightning.

Incredibly fast, unreasonably fast... Ji Hao didn't even manage to see Zhu Rong's move clearly before he was forced back. Although he and his friends were all protected by the Pan Gu bell and weren't harmed, he was forced backward for hundreds of miles within a couple of breaths.

"Good treasure!" Zhu Rong threw a cold glance at Ji Hao, pointed his finger at the bell, and said, "Present this bell to me, and you can earn a position in the department of fire in the heaven when all Gods of fire are reborn."

Ji Hao shook his head as he took a heavy gasp. His brain was now in a mess, and he had been trying his best to calm himself down.

If he didn't misremember it, according to the legend he read in his previous life, Si Xi was killed by the Fire God in Feather Mountain, under the order of a divine God.

This place was Feather Mountain, and this Zhu Rong, who suddenly showed up, was so powerful. Even with supreme treasures, Ji Hao couldn't rival this Zhu Rong, not to mention kill him. Si Xi could really be killed right on the spot by this Zhu Rong.

If the enemy couldn't be defeated, escape was another choice.

As a frigid beam of light flashed across Ji Hao's eyes, Ji Hao wielded his left hand and let a cyan-colored beam of light out of the broad sleeve of his Taiji cloak that wrapped Man Man, Shaosi and all the others up and sent them back into the sleeve. Next, the golden bridge darted out from between his eyebrows and allowed Ji Hao to transform into a stream of light, flying to Si Xi.

The golden bridge could move across the world in no time; its flying speed was definitely incomparable. Ji Hao flashed across the air, reached to Si Xi, grabbed his shoulder and prepared to escape with the power of the golden bridge.

Even Zhu Rong didn't manage to stop Ji Hao. The golden bridge moved way too fast, that even when the afterimage of Ji Hao hadn't yet faded, his true body had already darted to Si Xi. Zhu Rong was a greatly powerful one, yet, he saw nothing but a stream of light dazzle across the air, leaving him no chance to do anything at all.

However, Kun Peng laughed coldly and viciously as he said, "Earl Yao Si Xi, if you run, this water-sealing formation of yours will be destroyed!"

Ji Hao dragged Si Xi, but he sensed a strong force coming from Si Xi's body. Si Xi stood perfectly still on the ground, as if he was rooted in the ground like a tree. No matter how hard Ji Hao tried, he could only slightly sway Si Xi's body, but never move him.

"Minister Si Xi!" shouted Ji Hao, "It's only one sub-formation... No one lived in this area, and nothing too bad would happen even if it collapsed!"

Before Si Xi responded, Kun Peng yelled in his high-pitched voice, "One sub-formation doesn't matter, of course. But, we will destroy all sub formations one after another. Si Xi, you can not stop us today. The so-called ten-thousand dragons water-sealing formation of yours is nothing but a joke!"

While vomiting blood, Kun Peng laughed in a malicious way and

continued,"Pan Gu world will become a vast water. Our water-kind will become the owners of this world. As for human beings, they're protected by the natural fortune. Therefore, Lord Gong Gong is happy to let them live, serving us generation after generation!"

Si Xi let out a long breath. A heavy stream of dark-yellow mist puffed out of his mouth, creating a giant hole in the ground.

"Ji Hao, go back to Pu Ban City and ask for help. Tell Emperor Shun to call out all those old dudes who have been hiding!" said Si Xi with a gloomy lord, "This time, our human beings have to fight with our lives. This time, the enemies are probably even harder to deal with than those intruding non-humankind monsters."

Rushing out in big steps, Si Xi left the protection of the Pan Gu bell, raised his left hand and let the thousand-mountain shield fly back into his hand. It transformed into thick layers of yellow mist and wrapped him up. Si Xi looked at Zhu Rong, who was wrapped in flakes of flame and fiery cloud, and said coldly, "Since you're the Fire God, why are you helping Gong Gong? Fire and water can never tolerate each other. This has been an old tradition since the era of the ancient heaven!"

Zhu Rong expressionlessly raised the long spear. The fiery cloud under his feet moved as he transformed into a stream of light and dazzled over.

In the dense dark clouds, Kun Peng's voice was as loud as thunders as he growled, "Fire and water can never tolerate each other, that happened in the ancient heaven. Back then, indeed the Gods of fire and Gods of water never had a good relationship with each other...But now, Lord Gong Gong is the dominator of the heaven, and these new divine Gods see Lord Gong Gong as their parent. Naturally, they will help Lord Gong Gong."

Clang! The yellow mist transformed from the thousand-mountain shield was cut open. The long spear pierced into Si Xi's chest and sent up large streams of blood. Purple flame swooshed

up, evaporating the blood speedily.

Si Xi stepped quickly backward, attempting to stay away from that long spear. Nevertheless, Zhu Rong moved much faster than him. Every time Si Xi took a step back, Zhu Rong would immediately make a step forward; the long spear sank deeper into Si Xi's chest inch by inch, seeming even to penetrate his body.

"Ji Hao, go seek help!" said Si Xi coldly, "What happened in here..."

Ji Hao flashed across the air and dashed to Si Xi along with a stream of light. He swung the Taiji divine sword horizontally towards Zhu Rong's waist, then grabbed Si Xi's shoulder, boosted up his power and generated a massive strength, carrying Si Xi up and throwing him far away.

"Minister Si Xi, you go seek for help." said Ji Hao with a strong voice, "I will stay here to stall them. I don't believe that they can ever break my Pan Gu bell!"

A thunderous series of clanga was then started. The long spear held in Zhu Rong's hands landed on the Pan Gu bell over and over again like a storm. The Pan Gu bell had an amazing defensive power, that allowed it to stay perfectly unmoved. However, Ji Hao couldn't cope with that strong impact force, and was being forced continuously back further and further away.

Si Xi was thrown to hundreds of miles away by Ji Hao. Seeing Ji Hao suffer a crazy wave of attacks, he paused slightly, then stomped his foot against the ground, turned around and rushed right away. Meanwhile, he shouted at Ji Hao, "Ji Hao, remember, stall them! No matter what, don't let them break the water-sealing formation! If this Feather Mountain sub-formation is destroyed, the other sub-formations will start to break one after another. Our humankind had just gained some strength back..."

A pure yellow stream of divine light descended from the sky. Before Si Xi could finish his speech, a hand thrust out of the yellow

light and struck on his chest violently. Si Xi's chest was nearly blown up. Blood spurted out from his ears, mouth, eyes, and nose, while he was sent flying backward like a shooting star and thudded on the ground under Ji Hao's feet. He couldn't struggle back up for quite a while.

From the divine yellow light, a strange-looking silhouette silently emerged.

"None of you is going to anywhere. Black Emperor wants you dead, so you have to die!"

It was a muscular middle-aged man with a serious and majestic face. His upper body was human-like, but with six strong arms, and his lower body was a snake tail. This man slowly showed his face from the divine yellow light and said, "The divine emperor wants you to die. Therefore, you cannot live!"

Kun Peng's vicious laughter could be heard once again as he said, "That one is the true Fire God, Zhu Rong, and this one is...the true Earth God, Hou Tu!"

Chapter 1030: Hou Tu Divine Seal

Si Xi lied on the ground. His broken chest had been healing itself speedily, but large streams of blood were still flowing out of his mouth.

"Hou Tu? The Earth God? Where the hell are you bunch of b*stards from?"

Si XI cursed while vomiting blood. He had survived great dangers, conquered countless difficulties; for thousands of times, he almost died in battles against non-humankind beings. But what happened even more was he climbing out from piles of dead bodies.

Yet today, the true Fire God Zhu Rong and the true Earth God Hou Tu, what was this?

The heaven had fallen, leaving no one but Kua E and his brothers surviving in the sky, barely guarding the heaven. Those were only thousands of relatively weak descendants of ancient divine Gods. If the heaven and earth great formation hadn’t been protecting the heaven with its terrifying power, any top-grade human clan could do serious damage to the heaven.

The heaven had declined so much, so how could these unreasonably strong beings come from the heaven one after another? They shouldn’t even exist!

Zhu Rong expressionlessly hacked the spear down, straight at Si Xi’s neck.

Si Xi hurriedly rolled, while Ji Hao transformed into a streak of light and dazzled down, covering Si Xi with strong streams of Chaos power released from the Pan Gu bell. Zhu Rong turned his wrist and let his spear bump heavily on the bell. As a bell ring echoed to the sky, Ji Hao was forced backward for another ten miles.

The ground was buzzing deeply and rumblingly. Hou Tu was around fifty meters tall, yet his snake tail was over a hundred meters long. At the moment, he slowly moved over, looked at Ji Hao and Si Xi expressionlessly and said with a frigid and bland tone, "Natural wills...You lowly insignificant mortal beings, can never understand."

He gently waved four arms of his, and following his moves, the earth under his feet began waving weirdly. Pure power flowed into Hou Tu's body in streams, and soon, four transparent, dark-yellow-colored longswords appeared in his hands. Hou Tu wielded those swords slightly, yet heavy and sharp earth power streams were released, leaving hundreds of miles long, bottomless slashes on the ground.

"A heaven has to exist in this world, and true gods like us have to be in the heaven to rule the entire world."

"We are needed by this world, by the heaven of this world. Therefore, no matter how long it has been, we will show up again in the world. We represent the wills of this world, and you, insignificant, lowly mortal beings, you have to obey us!"

"We represent the world... We are the earth, we are the sky, we're the great Dao of nature. We're laws, we're principles... Therefore, if we want you to die, you have to die! If you refuse to die, if you dare to resist, you would be going against the heaven... You would be evil!" said Hou Tu slowly. His voice was strong and resonant, sounding determined and convincing. Zhu Rong stood aside, nodding all the time. Apparently, he couldn't agree more.

Ji Hao and Si Xi remained silent, both with dark faces. Si Xi's wounds were healed already. He slowly stood up and slapped hard on his own chest.

"We, human beings, we are tiny, and we have indeed lived a lowly life." Si Xi seriously looked at Hou Tu and said, "But our tininess and lowliness are not an excuse for you to try to demand

whatever you want from us, and control our lives."

"Human beings are not like your God-kind. We don't have long lifespans, our children are born weak, without sharp teeth and claws, neither do we possess that strong power of yours."

"However, we survived. We've been existing since the prehistorical era, generation after generation. We are like grasses all over the world. We are lowly, but we have been living a thriving life." Si Xi proudly raised his head and continued, "We worship our ancestors, raise our children, build houses, feed livestock... Our life isn't easy, but we are happy to live that life."

Si Xi heavily pointed his heart with his right thumb, smiled and said, "Chaos monsters used to dominate the world, but they are gone now...Powerful creatures once ruled the earth, now, their bloodlines have disappeared...The ancient heaven used to stand high above the masses, but it has fallen. Its power went away like a fading storm...Even those powerful and scary non-humankind beings failed to destroy our kind."

Ji Hao straightened his waist. Si Xi's words were simple, easy to understand. But on hearing him, a warmth came straight up from Ji Hao's tailbone, reaching directly to his brain and filling up Ji Hao's body with strength. Ji Hao even sensed his boiling blood surging to his head, and was almost losing control of the strong desire of rushing out and starting a life-risking right against Zhu Rong and Hou Tu. But based on his current level of cultivation, such a thing shouldn't happen at all.

"Those Chaos monsters were beaten up by our human armies. They hid in their nests, and dared not to show their faces."

"Those legendary powerful creatures once gifted their powers to us. But at present, their offsprings all have become mounts and battle beasts of our humankind."

"The heaven high up in the sky? Hehe, descendants of those divine Gods now work for us, trading for food and money."

"Those non-humankind monsters almost destroyed the civilization of our humankind many times. But now, they can only stay far away from the alliance of human clan, without being able to start a great war in centuries."

"Our humankind survived... We are living, because we want to live!"

"We want to live. Therefore, not even the heaven can destroy us, not even the world can kill us. If this world intends to destroy us, we will destroy the world then."

"You, you are given birth by the world, without parents, without flesh and blood, without emotions and desires. You will never grow old, you will never die... You're a bunch of freaks...Even if you represent the so-called natural will...if you want us dead, we will kill you!"

Si Xi gnashed his teeth so tight that he even generated a creaking noise. He sneered to Hou Tu and continued, "I can't kill you, but I have a son. If my son can't kill you either, there will be his children, my grandchildren. The bloodlines of our humankind are thriving, generation after generation, and we will never die. Eventually, strong ones will emerge from us, crush your heaven, and destroy your bloodlines. You will never show up again, and an eternal foundation of our humankind will be built."

Ji Hao stayed silent while he gripped the hilt of the Taiji divine sword with both hands. He was ready to fight Zhu Rong and Hou Tu with his life.

Kun Peng coughed loudly. Blood splashed out from his enormous mouth from time to time as he stuttered, "Did you hear him? Human beings have backbones. Therefore...if we want them to serve us, we have to break these backbones."

Dense dark cloud rolled in the sky and condensed into a long spear, pointing at Ji Hao and Si Xi from a distance away.

Kun Peng continued coldly, "Do it, Hou Tu...Only with that thing can we control the breathing earth, and you, will become the true Earth God."

Hou Tu still showed no emotion on his expressionless face, but slowly nodded. He raised his four arms as his fingers touched each other, looking like mountains. In his eyes, a dark-yellow colored beam of divine light flashed across, then the earth quaked intensely while Hou Tu gave a loud roar.

Si Xi suddenly quivered and started vomiting blood. A human-head-sized yellow seal tore his chest apart and flew out from his body.

Kun Peng laughed even louder, "Hou Tu divine seal belongs to the true Earth God. It can control the souls of all mountains in the world, command all earth powers in the world...Hou Tu, do it now!"

Hou Tu nodded, then flicked his finger. Hou Tu divine seal violently smashed on Si Xi’s head and struck him out from those coiling Chaos power streams released from the Pan Gu bell.

Chapter 1031: Feather Mountain Collapses

Si Xi was sent flying away. The Hou Tu divine seal was unimaginably powerful, that it even smashed a big half of Si Xi's head.

Si Xi growled deeply in pain. He opened his mouth and took a long gasp. Before, once he breathed, earth power would naturally flow into his mouth to heal his injuries and replenish his life-force.

However, Hou Tu looked at Si Xi frigidly. The pure earth power from all directions was almost tangible, gathering into thousands of meters thick, yellow colored mist on the ground. But not even a slight stream moved to Si Xi. Spirit blood surged inside Si Xi's body, healing the wound on his head with his own strong life-force. His dented skull quickly bulged back up, while his broken skin and muscles recovered speedily as well. Taking a long gasp, Si Xi let out a long stream of yellow-colored mist from his mouth.

Si Xi couldn't use the earth power from the surrounding environment, but he had a real star sealed inside his body. The power of a star was immeasurable. As long as the star remained existing, it could provide Si Xi inexhaustible power. As long as the star existed, a Supreme Magus could never be killed!

Si Xi stood up, stretched his limbs, and gave a deep roar.

He pointed at Hou Tu and growled, "How did you know that I have the Hou Tu divine seal?"

Hou Tu pointed his finger at the seal, and it immediately flew to him, leaving a yellow stream of light in the air. In the distance, Kun Peng laughed out loud again with that high-pitched voice of his, "How did he know? Someone from your You Chong Clan told us, of course! Si Xi, hehe, you're a tough one. Ninety-nine percent of your human beings are unshakable, but there are always a few impious people among you, aren't there?"

Si Xi quivered, then gnashed his teeth tight.

The Hou Tu divine seal was attained from the heaven by Emperor Xuanyuan. It was used for commanding all mountains in the world, suppressing and manipulating all pre-world and after-world earth power in the entire Pan Gu world. It represented the highest power of earth. Its importance even equaled the great seal of the human emperor.

After Emperor Xuanyuan abdicated and left, the Hou Tu divine seal became a property of Si Xi's family, then became the greatest treasure of You Chong Clan. Si Xi knew about the Hou Tu seal's supreme power, and also knew that a treasure like this could be way too attractive. Therefore, even when he was attacked crazily by those Chaos monsters and severely injured without being able to struggle back up from the ground, he didn't use this treasure to protect himself.

In You Chong Clan, no more than ten people knew about the existence of the Hou Tu seal. All these people were core leaders of You Chong Clan, important senior elders or respected Maguspriests...However, among these people, someone told Gong Gong about the seal. As a consequence, Gong Gong sent his people to ambush Si Xi in Feather Mountain.

Ji Hao reacted at lightning speed. As Hou Tu pointed out his finger, Ji Hao had already sent out the Taiji Creation cauldron. A giant cloud of clear mist puffed out of the cauldron, transforming into a hundreds of meters wide hand that reached to the Hou Tu divine seal.

The Taiji Creation cauldron was best at melting things, turning things back into their original forms. The Hou Tu divine seal was so important that Kun Peng and his people set an ambush in Feather Mountain for not only killing SI Xi, but also snatching the Hou Tu divine seal. Therefore, Ji Hao decided to melt the Hou Tu divine seal directly and turn it back into earth power. After that, what could Kun Peng and people possibly do?

Once the clear mist was released, Sun Peng and Zhu Rong growled out simultaneously. Hou Tu unhurriedly waved his four arms. Following his moves, boundless waves of dark-yellow-colored earth power streams surged over and condensed into a thick wall in front of the giant hand of clear mist released by the Taiji Creation cauldron.

The enormous hand slapped heavily on the dark-yellow wall and caused a long-lasting series of clattering noise. Along with that, a tremendous hole appeared on this thousands of miles long, tens of thousands of meters tall, and thousands of meters thick dark-yellow wall, as if this gigantic wall was a thin iron board which had been corroded by concentrated acid.

Wherever the giant hand reached, the dark-yellow-colored earth power collapsed and turned into a heavy rain of stone, falling loudly to the ground. With a magical power, the Taiji Creation cauldron forcibly changed the earth power and turned it into ordinary stones from gas state.

The thin pre-world power of creation contained in that earth power was all taken away by the Taiji Creation cauldron.

Kun Peng opened his mouth widely, but couldn’t say a word. Zhu Rong paused in shock, and even Hou Tu, who had been unhurried the whole time, had his body twitch abruptly. He was badly startled by the magical and strange power of the Taiji Creation cauldron.

The Hou Tu divine seal was a supreme magic treasure with the nature of earth. It was indeed incredibly powerful, but its flying speed was strangely slow. In a blink of an eye, the Hou Tu divine seal had only flown out for seven to eight miles, and was still over ten miles away from Hou Tu. The giant hand released by the Taiji Creation cauldron penetrated the enormous wall of earth power, and was about to reach the seal.

Although the Hou Tu divine seal was now under Hou Tu’s

control, after all, it had been nourished by Si Xi with his own blood for many years. To some degree, Si Xi could also control it.

At the moment, Si Xi stood aside with his eyes popped widely out, without saying a word. Blood veins bulged on his face, as he was trying to boost up his power to fight against Hou Tu over the control of the divine seal. Si Xi's effort didn't deliver any obvious effect, but indeed, he managed to affect Hou Tu, disabling him from making the divine seal fly straight back to his hands with the earth power momentarily.

Hou Tu roared anxiously. Seeing the Hou Tu divine seal was about to be grasped in that enormous mist hand, he opened his mouth and sent out a water-tank-sized, dark-yellow-colored bead. Countless silhouettes of mountains sparkled on the bead, while it roared down and landed on the ground. It was wrapped up by the coiling earth power and teleported itself to behind the Hou Tu divine seal, bumping into that giant mist hand.

Clear mist rolled, and that enormous hit hand paused instantly.

This dark-yellow bead was also a supreme divine treasure with the nature of earth, an important magic treasure from the heaven, immeasurably powerful. This bead belonged to an important God from the department of earth, the true Mountain God. The Mountain God was the ruler of all mountains in the world, and this bead was the supreme piece used by him for controlling all mountains in Pan Gu world. Same as the Hou Tu divine seal, the bead was also generated by the great Dao of nature along with the heaven, after the creation of the world.

The Taiji Creation cauldron was incomparably powerful, as the enormous mist hand released by it conveniently rolled the bead back into the cauldron when the bead bumped into the hand.

Clear light shone from the cauldron. The dark-yellow bead caused a muffled clang in it, then collapsed right away. It transformed into extremely pure streams of earth power, drifting

in the cauldron.

During this short pause, the Hou Tu divine seal had already landed in Hou Tu’s hand.

Hou Tu threw a vicious glance at Ji Hao, then raised the divine seal and waved towards the Feather Mountain sub-formation.

A heavy rain had been falling from the sky above the Feather Mountain sub-formation. Dense dark clouds floated in the sky, with streams of water pouring down.

The water level had constantly been rising, as well as the Feather Mountain sub-formation, which was built with breathing earth. By now, the seven to eight hundred million miles wide Feather Mountain sub-formation had already grown to over tens of thousands kilometers tall. The turbid wave surged in the basin-shaped Feather Mountain sub-formation, misty and boundless.

"Hou Tu!" Ji Hao and Si Xi shouted in a fury simultaneously.

Hou Tu gave an evil smirk, while the Hou Tu divine seal released a yellow light that covered the Feather Mountain sub-formation.

The Feather Mountain sub-formation disappeared just like this, as a thin stream of breathing earth flew into the Hou Tu divine seal, along with a sparkling starlight.

Without the breathing earth, the tens of thousands of kilometers deep water accumulated in the sub-formation flooded out towards all directions, sweeping destructively. Ji Hao and Si Xi only managed to cast a growl before the sky-devouring wave surged over and whirled both of them away.

Chapter 1032: Behead Si Xi

Roaring waves reached to the sky, slapping down from the sky as they raised screaming gales. The Pan Gu bell floated above Ji Hao's head and released Chaos power streams that surrounded his body and guarded him well under the overwhelming waves. Ji Hao wasn't harmed, but those waves were way too strong. He could no longer steady his body, and ended up being sent away.

If that were ordinary water, the situation would still be under control. With Ji Hao's current power, he could easily withstand any striking wave with his strong physical strength. If the water flooding out from the disappeared Yu Mountain sub-formation were ordinary clear water, Ji Hao would never been sent away.

Nevertheless, the ten-thousand water-sealing magic formation could not only contain water without limitation; if that were the case, Si Xi's abilities would be average. As the greatest magic power of this great water-sealing formation, it could compress and transform the water power that came from other worlds, with the strong, inexhaustible earth power of Pan Gu world. It could purify the water, and dispel the toxins and corrosive power contained in the water.

Therefore, in the Feather Mountain sub-formation, under the compressing, purifying and transforming effects of the water-sealing formation, the quality of this massive quantity of water had changed thoroughly. The water had turned heavy and sticky, with a density that was over a hundred times higher than the density of ordinary still water. Although the water was still liquid, it was already heavier than metal.

In the bottom, which was the nearest to the water-sealing formation, a thick layer of human-head-sized magic crystals, with a nature of water, had been created. Every single piece of these magic crystals was condensed from a hundred-thousand times its volume of water, under the effect of the water-sealing formation.

According to Si Xi's design, the water from other worlds would be continuously transformed into water magic crystals. No matter how much water came from other worlds, after being forcibly transformed into magic crystals, all the water would turn into wealth from a disaster.

However, the Feather Mountain sub-formation was destroyed by Hou Tu, and the water accumulated in it, which was supposed to become wealth to enrich the human society, immediately turned back into a disaster!

Deep down in the water-sealing magic formation, the density of the water had been raised by thousands of times. After the water-sealing formation disappeared, the water flooding out was no longer ordinary still water. Instead, it was highly compressed water that was even heavier than metal, and contained an incredibly strong, terrifying water power now mixed in it.

White streams of water roared thunderously, clashing against each other like fighting enormous dragons, generating scary rumbling noises.

These incredibly strong water streams, which had a shockingly high density, struck on the Pan Gu bell and generated muffled bell rings. The bell transformed surrounding water into Chaos power and absorbed it. But more waves had been striking down ceaselessly, pushing Ji Hao away. He couldn't help but drift with the tide.

Ji Hao tried to steady his body quite a few times, but the forces coming from all directions were so strong that they made him spin in the water without having anything to grab or hold. Helplessly, Ji Hao was pushed far away by the flooding water.

Within a couple of breaths, the water flooded to thousands of miles away. Wherever the water swept across, all mountains and hills were flattened, as if the ground was brushed across by an enormous scraper knife. Countless animals didn't manage to

escape, and ended up being struck into spheres of blood mist, spreading in the water.

Kun Peng screamed hysterically. He flapped his tremendous wings, and raised giant waves from the water while roaring, "Find Si Xi, kill him! From now on...human beings don’t need heroes anymore!"

Zhu Rong trod on a fiery cloud and flew high into the sky. He looked disgustedly at the water flowing rapidly down below and snorted slightly. He was the Fire God, and deep down, he hated this waving, roaring water so much. But, he had to follow Gong Gong’s orders, and had no choice.

Hou Tu was wrapped in coiling yellow-colored earth power streams. He floated on the water surface as mountain-like waves struck down one after another, disintegrating against his body. He held the Hou Tu divine seal with his left hand, with which the entire earth had become his eyes and limbs. Nothing existing on the ground could hide from his eyes.

Soon, he pointed his finger out and said, "Si Xi is over there...I found him!"

Kun Peng breathed deeply and shook his enormous body, transforming back into a scrawny man with a long black robe, standing on a dark cloud. Wiping the blood on his face, he lowered his eyelids and said in a deep voice, "Si Xi, and his son, to all human beings, they’re both heroes. It’s a shame though, that to us, heroes are not needed among human beings."

Kun Peng curved his mouth corners upwards, grinned evilly and said, "In the future, human beings only need to learn to obey, to be slaves, to kneel and kowtow to us. That will be more than enough. From this day on, we will break all backbones of the humankind, one by one!"

Thousands of miles away, a solid granite pillar roared up from the surging water. Si Xi stood on the pillar, growing resonantly to

Kun Peng and Hou Tu, who had been flying swiftly over from a distance. "Fight till death! Today, I, Si Xi, will fight to death!"

Si Xi's face was twisted, that made him look like a fierce ghost. His long hair straightened on his head, while he roared thunderously and hoarsely. He roared too loud, that even his throat was vibrated broken, making blood splash out from his mouth.

Looking at Si Xi's twisted fierce face, Kun Peng subconsciously stooped flying, standing on the dark cloud. Snorting coldly, he conveniently pointed at Si Xi and ordered, "You go, kill him!"

Hou Tu trod on a dense yellow cloud while Zhu Rong stood on a fiery cloud. Both of them were followed by tens of divine warriors from the department of fire in the heaven. These warriors were all wrapped in raging flames, marching towards Si Xin in a formidable way.

"Fight till death? You better be! Don't escape, just stay and obediently...die!" said Hou Tu with a deep voice.

The Hou Tu divine seal shone on his head. Instantly, the pillar treading under Si Xi's feet changed its shape, as if it were made from mud. The pillar immediately transformed into a giant hand that gripped Si Xi's waist. Before Si Xi could try to free himself from the enormous hand, countless extremely sharp thorns reached out from it. Grey-white rock thorns penetrated Si xi's body, nailing him on top of the pillar.

Zhu Rong was treading on a fiery cloud, flying much faster than Hou Tu. With the long spear in his hand, he flashed straight to before Si xi's face. The long spear was swung down along with a purple streak of fire, cutting Si Xi's head directly off.

Si Xi's head rolled in the air. Not even a drop of blood was shed from his broken neck. Thunder-like roars came from his chest, saying 'Head comes! Head comes! Head comes!!'.

A yellow mist puffed out from his broken neck and rolled up his head, swiftly dragging it back to his neck. As a yellow light flashed across, Si Xi's head reconnected with his neck. Not even a mark was left on his neck by that fierce hack launched by Zhu Rong just now.

"I have merged with a real star. How can you kill me so easily?" Si Xi growled to Zhu Rong, "Even if you're the true Gods of this world, how can you kill me so easily?!"

Si Xi opened his mouth and sent out a sharp stream of yellow mist, that transformed immediately into a long blade, piercing to Zhu Rong's chest.

Zhu Rong snorted coldly and gripped the yellow blade. He clenched his fingers, trying to crumble it. However, the blade was especially strong and heavy, struggling like a snake in Zhu Rong's hand. Within a short while, Zhu Rong couldn't stop Si Xi from attacking him.

Hou Tu flew to Si Xi, pressed the Hou Tu divine seal heavily on Si Xi's chest, and said, "Kill him one more time! I...have suppressed the star inside him!"

Si Xi's face turned pale, as Zhu Rong launched another hack.

Thud! Si Xi's head flew high into the air once again and fell into the water, being flushed away by the surging water.

Chapter 1033: In A Quiet Place

Ji Hao had been swept away by the water. He finally steadied his body after the water sent him thousands of miles away.

The Pan Gu bell rang resonantly, evaporating all the water within tens of meters in radius around Ji Hao. Ji Hao trod on a clear cloud while wielding his arms, sending out a series of Yu Yu's divine thunder. Every bolt of thunder created a thousands of meters long path in the surging water. Then, Ji Hao growled out deeply and rushed straight up towards the water surface.

Along with a sizzling noise, cyan-purple thunderbolts dazzled out from tens of enormous whirlpools. A miles radius hole was opened up in the rapidly flowing water. With the Pan Gu bell floating above his head, Ji Hao trod on the clear cloud MS swooshed straight up into the sky, flashing to thousands of meters high within a twinkling of an eye.

He opened the erect eye between his eyebrows and released streams of light, flowing around his body. With that shining eye, Ji Hao looked around and immediately saw Si Xi around ten-thousand miles away.

The real star inside Si Xi's body was suppressed by Hou Tu with the divine seal. Facing the power of the true Earth God, the star merged with Si Xi stayed unmoved. All of the star power was restrained, without releasing a single trace.

Zhu Rong wielded the long spear down and cut off Si Xi's head. Si Xi's head was sent flying into the sky and fell into the watery, being washed away by the water, disappearing without a trace.

A bright yellow light emitted from Si Xi's broken neck. From inside the star core of the real star inside him, Si Xi's soul roared in a fury, but the star remained unmoved. Hou Tu was the true Earth God, and with the help of the Hou Tu divine seal, he forcibly suppressed the star inside Si Xi!

Hundreds of millions of star kings existed in the ancient time, serving the ancient heaven. All those star kings were given birth by nature, generated by their stars, after those stars absorbed the power of the great Dao of nature, which was created along with the world itself. All star kings were incredibly power, proud, all and refused to obey. The ancient heaven was the ruler of the world once, so divine Gods in the ancient heaven surely had their ways to suppress those proud and powerful star kings.

Hou Tu was the true Earth God; all Gods with a nature of earth, including mountain Gods, star kings and the other Gods of earth, were under his command. Once the Hou Tu divine seal was activated, no star king could release any of his great power, not even a little bit.

This was the will of nature, the law of the heaven. Facing the power of the heaven, no matter how powerful a divine God was, he or she could only obey.

Si Xi was filled with rage. His soul roared in the star core, but he could no longer boost up any of his power.

Ji Hao stood in far away, stunned, watching Zhu Rong behead Si Xi so neatly.

Kun Peng raised his head and laughed shrilly to the heaven. He was trembling with excitement. He proudly pointed at the water surface and raised strong waves. A stream of water rolled Si Xi's head up, sending it up to Kun Peng's hand. Si Xi's eyes were popped widely out in a fury.

Holding Si Xi's head with both hands, Kun Peng threw it up for a few times scornfully, like a kid playing with a toy. Next, a bolt of thunder struck out from his palms and blew Si Xi's head into blood mist. Kun Peng opened his mouth, inhaled all blood mist and swallowed.

"Delicious, nourishing!" Kun Peng faced the sky and laughed crazily, "Hahaha, Marquis Chong's head is so delicious...How about

Emperor Shun’s head? And the brains of those clan leaders? Elders? Their internal organs?!"

Kun Peng took a deep breath, greedily looked at Si Xi’s muscular body and growled, "Zhu Rong! Cut his belly open. I’m going to take his heart, slice it and dip in sauce. It will go with the best wine!"

Zhu Rong expressionlessly dropped the long spear and pulled out his sword from around his waist. The sword was wrapped in fire. Zhu Rong lunged it, pointing at Si Xi’s heart, about to cut it open.

Ji Hao was in a daze. He looked at the stain of blood on Kun Peng’s mouth corner, then at Kun Peng’s twisted, hideous, ghost-like face.

This thing ate Si Xi’s head!

This thing wanted to eat Si Xi’s heart with wine!

A sky-shaking, furious roar burst from Ji Hao’s throat. The fire of anger burned his mind, he saw nothing but the red of blood. All three eyes of his turned blood-red. The Pan Gu bell buzzed deeply yet rumblingly, as Ji Hao activated the golden bridge and created a tens of thousands of miles long golden rainbow. He tore the air apart, flying to Kun Peng and the two Gods.

"Earl Yao Ji Hao!" Kun Peng turned around and screamed to Ji Hao with that twisted face of his, "Didn’t you run? Good, I’m going to..."

Ji Hao moved faster than lightning. The speed of the golden bridge went far beyond Kun Peng’s estimation, that he saw nothing but a beam of light dazzle across the sky, before Ji Hao swished over and brushed against his body. The Taiji divine sword was dragged in Ji Hao’s hand. As the golden bridge dashed in the air, the sword edge had already sliced across Kun Peng’s neck.

Kun Peng screamed in shock and pain. When the Taiji divine sword swept across his neck, his body was already wrapped in a dark mist, turning blur and misty.

A cold light flashed across the sword edge, then Kun Peng disappeared. In the following moment, he reappeared on a wave a thousand miles away.

Countless twisted spirit creature spell symbols sparkled on the long black robe worn by Kun Peng, along with a long-lasting sizzling noise. This robe was attained by Kun Peng back in the prehistorical era, and had been worn by him for countless years. But now, it split up from the middle, then shattered into countless black pieces, drifting down from the sky.

"Ji Hao!" Kun Peng's body was exposed to the air as he stared at Ji Hao. His face twitched, while he screamed heartbreakingly.

Puff! A sharp stream of blood spurted out from Kun Peng's neck. Kun Peng was incredibly powerful, with unpredictable magics. When Ji Hao attacked him, he had already cast his magic and teleported himself away. Nevertheless, the fierce sword move made by Ji Hao had indeed harmed him.

Half of Kun Peng's neck was cut by the Taiji divine sword. Blood sprayed out from the wound. Kun Peng hurriedly took out a bottle and poured out faintly golden ointment with a nice aroma, spreading it on his wound.

However, no matter how much ointment Kun Peng put on his wound, that wound never stopped bleeding, neither did the wound created by Ji Hao's sword ever show a sign of healing.

Moreover, a magical power lingered in the wound, corroding Kun Peng's body, tearing and expanding the wound. Kun Peng boosted his power up as much as he could and covered that wound with a dark mist. Finally, he had that magical, dangerous power under control.

Ji Hao wounded Kun Peng seriously with a sword move. At the moment, Ji Hao had almost fallen unconscious. Everything he did was based on instincts. He controlled the golden bridge and pounced to Zhu Rong from behind.

He felt nothing, he thought nothing. Everything was chaotic, every single move made by him was natural and smooth, as if it was meant to be like this since forever.

Ji Hao raised the Taiji divine sword high, and at this very moment, he combined everything he had ever learned. Mantra Dan with Nine Secret Words, that he brought to this world from his previous life; the moves of sky-opening, earth-splitting, everything-grow and everything-perish that the mysterious man taught him; all those profound, mysterious magics of the great Dao, that he learned from Yu Yu, Priest Qing Wei, and Priest Dachi... Everything disintegrated and became pieces of bits, merging, combining, transferring in Ji Hao's brain, which was now in a state of Chaos.

From his lower abdomen, the cauldron wrapped in five-colored flame released a bright, five-colored light, that shone in Ji Hao's spiritual space.

The cauldron continued with an immeasurable power of creation. With its help, all pieces and bits regarding the great Dao of nature merged together in Ji Hao's head.

A clear stream of light rose from his head, with the hundreds of meter in radius, red sun shining upon it. In the middle of the red sun, an axe-shaped silhouette flashed across, leaving a strong and perfectly straight trace in the sky.

The sword was raised, and following that straight trace, Ji Hao wielded it.

It was all quiet, but all of sudden, thunders burst. Around the Feather Mountain, all natural powers were disordered. The natural system was thrown into Chaos, and no trace could be found anymore.

Chapter 1034: Slaughter the God

"That is it, that...Strength!"

In Ji Hao's spiritual space, the mysterious man silently showed his figure, floating in the air with this eyes shining in a bright blue light. They were like a pair of blue suns, lighting up Ji Hao's entire spiritual space.

"Pure strength!"

The mysterious man nodded in praise, then raised his right arm abruptly, quickly straightened his fight forefinger, and wielded down.

A straight, strong trace was left in the air by his fingertip, as a prehistorical, wild power surged out from his body. Around him, dense clouds of mist coiled, as a sun had been rising and falling faintly, while stars sparkled in it.

By pointing out his finger, the mysterious man sent his power to Ji Hao's sword in some inexplicable way.

Ji Hao wielded the sword faster, fiercer, and the power released from the Taiji divine sword was purer and greater.

Zhu Rong gripped his sword and roared shrilly. He didn't have any time to cut Si Xi's chest open. Instead, he raised his sword with all his strength, fending against the Taiji divine sword.

The Taiji divine sword burst with a dazzling light. The sword divided into two parts from the middle, one part white, and the other part black. Next, the black and white merged back together. The sword turned Chaos-grey, even barely visible, as if it had merged with the sky. Followed by a sharp cold light, the Taiji divine sword hacked violently on Zhu Rong's longsword.

Zhu Rong's sword was surely a divine weapon from the heaven, generated by the power of the great Dao after the creation of the world, along with the heaven itself. This sword contained all

three-thousand and six-hundred types of fire in the world. It was powerful enough to destroy the world and turn the sky into a boundless ocean of flame; it was incredibly lethal.

"Kill!" Without thinking clearly, Ji Hao, who was wrapped in the strong Chaos power, gave a thunderous roar. Along that simple and straight trace, the Taiji divine sword hacked down violently and unstoppably.

Zhu Rong's sword screamed, then was cut into two. Raging flames surged out from the collapsing sword. As a strong gale blew across, clouds of fire spread out and burned the sky red within a blink of an eye.

Zhu Rong stared at Ji Hao, stunned. His self-consciousness was sealed by Gong Gong with an unknown method, but all of a sudden, that seal was broken. The bland, emotionless eyes of Zhu Rong suddenly had a light of wisdom sparkling in it. Meanwhile, he burst with a roar, in both shock and fright.

"No!" Before his voice faded, the Taiji divine sword descended. The raging fires spurting out from Zhu Rong's cloak delivered no effect, as the Taiji divine sword went through the fires, cut the defensive divine light released by the cloak, then sank into Zhu Hong's head. It cut his body entirely into two, from the head to crotch, just like cutting a watermelon.

Zhu Rong's body split up, and immediately transformed into two spheres of fire.

"I am an original god, I am created by the world!"Zhu Rong's raging roar came from the two fire spheres, "I am immortal, I am indestructible. As long as the world keeps existing, I will too! Mortal being, you can never kill me, even though you are holding supreme magic treasures!"

"Immortal?" A sharp light flashed across Ji Hao's grey eyes. Subconsciously, he sneered and said, "If you're truly immortal, where are the first generation of original Gods? Thrones are still in

the heaven, but where did those great divine emperors go? The ones who stood high above the masses at one time."

At the moment, Hou Tu stood aside, suppressing the star inside Si Xi's body with the divine seal. All this happened within a single moment. Ji Hao attacked way too fast, that only by the time Zhu Rong was cut into two did Hou Tu finally realize what had just happened.

The long snake tail of his was straightened as Hou Tu gave a long growl and swung his left arm, waving the Hou Tu divine seal towards Ji Hao. Next, he pulled out a triangle-shaped heavy axe from behind his back and launched a full-strength hack to Ji Hao.

The divine seal gathered the earth power and generated a strong invisible force, attempting to trap Ji Hao. The Pan Gu bell released a wave of Chaos power that dispelled the earth force easily, as if it had never appeared.

The Taiji cloak emitted water-like waves of clear light through the grey and misty Chaos power streams released from the Pan Gu bell. The clear light transformed into a giant glowing lotus that surrounded Ji Hao. Hou Tu boosted up his strength and launched a hack with his axe, which bumped against the lotus. But, as streams of clear light flashed across the surface of the lotus, the power delivered by Hou Tu's axe was weakened a little bit. Waves of clear light surged out from the lotus, and by the time Hou Tu's axe touched the Pan Gu bell, it had already become weak and powerless. Only around thirty percent of Hou Tu's strength managed to be delivered to the bell by the axe.

The Pan Bu bell rang weakly, while the Taiji Universe mirror rose from Ji Hao's head and sent out a sharp clear light that landed on Hou Tu like a sword.

Hou Tu shouted in shock. Clouds of yellow-colored, mist-like earth power gathered to him, condensing into an armor directly on his body.

Wherever the clear light released by the Taiji universe mirror reached, the earth power armor wearing by Hou Tu disintegrated and melted, like snow under boiling water. Before Hou Tu could make any reaction, the clear light wrapped his body up. The dark-yellow scales covering his body began shattering, transforming into strands of yellow mist and dissipating in the air.

"It hurts!"

Hou Tu shouted loud while drawing back swiftly. The Taiji universe mirror was way more powerful than he imagined. His defensive power, which he had always been proud of, was nothing but a joke in front of the mirror. Obviously, the Hou Tu divine seal could not suppress the power of the Pan Bu bell either, and there was no way for him to trap Ji Hao.

Therefore, Hou Tu could only draw back at his highest speed.

He had just come out from the Divine Origin Pool, and hadn’t reached the peak of his power. He attempted to instinctively stay away from Ji Hao for now, and come back to take revenge once he reached the peak state, as he was supposed to.

But the golden bridge moved faster than Hou Tu estimated. Before Hou Tu could reach back by thirty meters, Ji Hao showed up right before his face. Another simple and violent hack was launched by Ji Hao. As a result, a silvery clang was generated from Hou Tu’s neck, which was wrapped in the clear light came from the Taiji universe mirror. Following this loud clang, Hou Tu’s large head was cut straight off.

Hou Tu howled in pain, while his body transformed into two spheres of yellow light, one large and one small, and flew straight up into the sky.

Ji Hao turned around, gave a frigid grin to the two spheres of fire which were transformed from Zhu Rong’s body, and said, "Did you say that I can’t kill you?"

Without giving Zhu Rong a chance to respond or run, the Taiji Creation cauldron emerged from above Ji Hao's head. A clear mist puffed up from the opening of the cauldron, wrapping the two spheres of fire up.

"No!" Zhu Rong had a truly bad feeling, as he felt that he was going to perish. He never wanted to die, so he screamed hoarsely, "I didn't mean it...Gong Gong, it was Gong Gong! He controlled my mind with his evil magic, he controlled..."

The Taiji creation cauldron swallowed Zhu Rong up. Ji Hao sent the Pan Gu bell floating above the cauldron and put forth all of his strength, punching and kicking the bell to generate a series of muffled bell rings. Streams of Chaos power were sent into the cauldron.

A thunderous series of boom could be heard from the cauldron. Abruptly, an immense stream of fire rose into the sky, then an arm, which was wrapped in coiling fire straps, thrust out desperately from the cauldron. It clenched towards the sky, then was dragged back into the cauldron.

Black and white mist rotated in the cauldron like a millstone. Within around ten breaths, Zhu Rong's soul frittered away.

Seeing this, Kun Peng screamed ear-piercingly in the distance.

"Earl Yao Ji Hao...You, you, you, you betrayed the world...You have, you have, have killed the true Fire God!"

Three streams of Chaos light shone from Ji Hao's three eyes. He gripped the Taiji divine sword, pointed at Kun Peng, and laughed in a weird tone, "I am killing you now!"

Chapter 1035: Another Unexpected Twist

Zhu Rong died, while Hou Tu escaped. Thousands of divine warriors brought here by Zhu Rong roared thunderously, trod on fiery clouds, and marched towards Ji Hao.

Each one of these divine warriors was over nine meters tall, strong and sturdy. They had been releasing a fierce power vibration. Armors worn by them and weapons held in their hands were all divine pieces from the heaven, each naturally containing a trace of power of the great Dao of fire.

Ji Hao held Si Xi's headless body. Above his head, the Taiji universe mirror let out a clear stream of light that landed on the thousands of divine warriors. Even Hou Tu failed to withstand the power of the mirror, not to mention these divine warriors who were merely as powerful as human Magus Kings. Wherever the clear light reached, thousands of divine warriors howled in pain, as fiery clouds under their feet disintegrated, and their armors turned into streams of clear mist, dissipating in the air.

The clear light contained the mysterious, unexplainable power of Taiji, which could transform life to death. The fire power inside the bodies of those divine warriors was dispelled by the clear light. Immediately after this, their bodies, which were created by the inexhaustible life-force in the Divine Origin Pool, based on the great Dao of fire and spirits of flames, began shaking. Countless cracks appeared on the skins of these divine warriors, as if they were fragile glass statues.

"Ji Hao! Don't you dare!" Kun Peng covered his neck with his hand and tried his best to stop the bleeding and heal the wound, while screaming at Ji Hao in rage.

Ji Hao laughed out loud, then a clear stream of mist puffed out of the Taiji creation cauldron, rolling up all the divine warriors and dragging them into the cauldron. Following a thunderous bang,

these divine warriors were turned into fist-sized, glowing-red, top-grade fire magic crystals, flying out from the cauldron.

"I even killed Zhu Rong... These little ones are nothing!" Ji Hao raised the Taiji divine sword high with his right hand, holding Si Xi's headless body with his left hand, and activated the golden bridge. He transformed into a streak of golden light and flew to Kun Peng.

"Kun Peng, old bastard, taste my sword. You may survive if you have the luck!"Ji Hao wielded the sword and roared, as the sword edge sparkled dazzlingly.

At the moment, Ji Hao was still in that Chaotic, weirdly conscious state, and the power delivered by the quick point made by the mysterious man was still magically effective on Ji Hao. When the Taiji divine sword swished across the sky, the space was cut open, leaving a perfectly straight black crack in the air. The long black crack showed no sign of fading in a long while.

Seeing this, Kun Peng was frightened. The space in Pan Gu world was extremely stable and strong. Even thought powerful beings could temporarily break the space during intense fights, the space would heal itself in a second, tops.

What on earth did Ji Hao do? Why hadn't the space showed any sign of recovering after being cut by his sword? Suddenly, Kun Peng understood the reason why the wound on his neck was so hard to deal with. The blood he shed was enough to fill a lake, yet, that wound never healed.

"Don't come here! Ji Hao, you have won! You have won this!" Kun Peng shouted hoarsely, turned around and trod on a dark cloud, darting straightaway.

Kun Peng was able to transform into an enormous fish or an enormous bird. His real body was tremendous. He was powerful, and was known as the strongest spirit creature in the North Sea. Kun Peng could fly at lightning speed, that even by riding on the

golden bridge, Ji Hao was only slightly faster than him.

Seeing Kun Peng transform into a long stream of dark mist and flying away swiftly, Ji Hao gnashed his teeth and chased after him at his highest speed. Flying past the He Tu and Luo Shu great formation, which was covered in coiling black and white mist, Kun Pent thrust out his hands towards the He Tu and Luo Shu great formation fiercely.

"He Tu, Luo Shu, all these years, I've spent so many efforts on you! How dare you betray me?!" Kun Peng released a wriggling stream of black smoke from each of his fingertips, reaching to the He Tu and Luo Shu great formation like ten poisonous snakes.

"I will bring you back to the heaven, and this time, I am going to destroy your souls with secret magic treasures in the heaven...Even if you will temporarily lose half of your powers, I am going to tame you for good!" Strands of sparkling mist rose from Kun Peng's eyes as he yelled in both anger and shame, "What did I do wrong to you? How dare you betray me?! How dare you help my enemy?!"

Within the coiling black and white mist, from the He Tu and Luo Shu great formation, the voices of He Tu and Luo Shu could be heard together, "We are treasures of kindness, but you are an evil being...We are destined to not be your spirit treasures...Kun Peng, piss off!"

From the hundreds of miles long He Tu and Luo Shu great formation, sparkling starlight and lightning bolts burst, transforming into a rapidly flowing, dazzling river that struck on the ten black smoke streams released by Kun Peng. No one was controlling the great formation, yet, the He Tu and Luo Shu great formation was still unimaginably powerful. The black smoke had been devouring and shattering starlight beams and thunderbolts without an end, but failed to go anywhere near the great formation.

Ji Hao chased up and laughed out wildly, "He Tu, Luo Shu, please

trap him for a second. You can leave when I chop his head off! Haha, I am Ji Hao, and I will keep my word. I will set you free, so you can go anywhere you want after this!"

He Tu and Luo Shu cheered together. The black and white mist suddenly grew denser, and surrounded Kun Peng along with a sound of waves, dragging him into the great formation as it attempted to trap him.

Deep roars came from Si Xi's stomach, "Ji Hao, kill Kun Peng for me...Damn it! Just now, they suppressed all my life-force. This body of mine is dying. Damn it, damn it!"

"The body is dying?" Ji Hao slightly frowned and responded calmly, "Minister Si Xi, hang on for a second. We will figure out a way after I have killed Kun Peng!"

In Si Xi's cold body was a starry void, where the starlight had dimmed down and the ninety-nine star-sealing magic had been quickly losing its power. That real star inside him was quaking intensely, releasing sharp beams of starlight and breaking his body, which no longer had any life-force.

In the core of this star, Si Xi's soul tried its best to control the power of this star. However, Si Xi was only a newly promoted Supreme Magus. His soul hadn't merged perfectly with the star core. Therefore, he couldn't affect this star too much.

Ji Hao transformed into a streak of golden light, and had already flown to behind Kun Peng.

Kun Peng showed despair on his face. The He Tu and Luo Shu great formation was in front of him, blocking his way, while Ji Hao pounced from behind. Kun Peng's neck was injured, and still had blood spurting out from it, taking his power and strength away. Somehow, Kun Peng felt that he could never survive this.

Ji Hao raised the sword high and hacked down, leaving a straight and neat trace in the air.

In this very moment, a bland laughter came from the higher sky, "The natural system is disordered in this place, and even I couldn't figure it out. As I thought, supreme magic treasures appeared... That treasure is destined to be ours! We can't let it go!"

The silhouette of a lotus flashed across the sky. Next, Priest Hua darted out from a dense rain cloud like a ghost. He took a glance at the He Tu and Luo Shu great formation with an extreme greed, then laughed out loud, reaching his hands towards He Tu and Luo Shu.

Once Priest Hua moved, clouds of warm mist and splendid glow rose from around the He Tu and Luo Shu great formation, while two enormous golden hands descended from both sides, seeming to grip them.

He Tu and Luo Shu screamed out together, immediately transforming into a black and white mist. Within the mist, a dark turtle and a dragon horse roared, thudding into the surging water down below and disappearing without a trace.

The He Tu and Luo Shu great formation disappeared suddenly, and nothing was left to block Kun Peng's way. Kun Peng shouted in surprise, transformed into a long stream of dark mist instantly, and swished straight into the sky.

Ji Hao paused, took a glance at Priest Hua, then silently headed back to Pu Ban city with Si Xi's body carried in his arms.

Chapter 1036: Si Xi Goes Up To the Sky

From a distance away, Priest Hua took a glance at Ji Hao. His gaze swept passionately across the Pan Gu bell, while his hands slightly moved. But next, he seemed to recall some old things, that made him stop, helplessly and in fright. Slightly shaking, Priest Hua transformed into two enormous lotuses and drifted into the water, followed closely behind He Tu and Luo Shu, disappearing as well.

Ji Hao didn't turn around as he rode on the golden bridge, flying to Pu Ban City as fast as he could.

The Feather Mountain sub-formation was destroyed already. Hou Tu had the Hou Tu divine seal, that allowed him to take back all of the breathing earth anytime he wanted. The sealed water was like evil dragons chained and kept in cages. Being sealed for such a long time, the density of the water had raised to an unreasonable point. Once the sealed water flood out of the water-sealing formations, the entire Midland would be facing a destructive disaster.

Ji Hao even burned his spirit blood to boost up the power of the golden bridge, to fly to Pu Ban City at the highest speed he could possibly reach with his current power. The golden bridge left a long stream of clear light behind. Wherever the clear light flashed across, the space was torn open, showing a clear black crack. A magical power inside Ji Hao was agitated, under the effect of which, the crack of space had been vibrating, without being able to heal itself for a long time.

Si Xi's body turned heavier and heavier, and the star power had been leaking out from his body. The ninety-nine star-sealing magic formation could no longer control this real star. Si Xi's soul hadn't completely merged with the star core. Therefore, he could now only affect this star in a small range, but could not control it.

At first, Ji Hao felt that he was flying with a rock carried in his arm, but soon, the rock turned into a mountain, that forced Ji Hao to hold Si Xi with both arms to carry his body that was getting heavier and heavier. In a short while, Ji Hao had no choice but to activate the cultivation method with nine turns to boost up his physical strength to an extreme degree, to bear Si Xi's weight and the raging-dragon-like, rampant star power coming from Si Xi's body.

By the end, visibly, waves of yellow-colored, misty glow surged out from Si Xi's body, striking Ji Hao's arms and body. It made Ji Hao's body buzz out loud, putting a great pressure on him.

Ji Hao's flying speed turned slower and slower. He had been quivering slightly, and his spirit power couldn't lock on the golden bridge anymore. His arms bones were almost shattered. By this moment, Ji Hao finally understood what kind of power was represented by the name of Supreme Magus, and how strong the power contained in a real star was.

He admired those wise, powerful human ancestors who invented the ninety-nine star-sealing magic formation, and pioneered the method of dragging real stars into human bodies. What kind of unusual yet wonderful thinking allowed those wise human ancestors to create such a magical cultivation method?

The golden bridge buzzed slightly, and flashed across thousands of mountains along with an ear-piercing noise. Ji Hao gnashed his teeth tight and held Si Xi's body. The Taiji cloak had been resealing clear light streams to fend Ji Hao against the fatal star power coming from Si Xi's body. But still, Ji Hao's internal organs were injured, and bleeding slashes appeared all over his skin.

"Minister Si Xi!" Ji Hao helplessly gave a long sigh.

Deep inside the star core, Si Xi's soul sighed slightly and said, "This is the fate! Ji Hao, you go back to Pu Ban City. Tell Wen Ming..."

As Si Xi was going to leave some important words to Ji Hao when from a towering mountain in the front, a bright light shone to the sky. Soon, a large group of people darted out of the light. With the great eyesight, Ji Hao saw Si Wen Ming rushing ahead of everyone else.

"Uncle Wen Ming!" Ji Hao screamed, "Minister Si Xi is barely hanging on! I can't..."

Crack! Ji Hao sensed a piercing pain from his arms while the star power burst from Si Xi's body. In an instant, Ji Hao's arm bones were shattered into pieces. Under the effect of the star power, Si Xi's body had already become a yellow-colored crystal. That crystal body of Si Xi fell down heavily to the ground, smashing on a tall mountain. The mountain was flattened immediately, and turned into a puffing cloud of ash, drifting all over the sky.

A ten-miles wide pit was left on the ground. Si Xi lied in the middle of the pit, and was still sinking down.

Si Wen Ming dashed over, and followed closely behind him were Emperor Shun and the other human leaders. Seeing Si Xi's headless body and Ji Hao covered in blood, everyone's face turned pale with fright. Si Wen Ming even roared with a crying voice.

"Abba...Ji Hao, what happened?!"

Ji Hao didn't say anything. Under the current situation, language was not enough to explain the whole thing. He closed his eyes and emitted a clear light with his erect eye, showing everyone what happened. Si Xi and him being ambushed by a group of Chaos monsters, then Kun Peng showed up with Zhu Rong and Hou Tu. All this happened so fast, yet within a blink of an eye, Ji Hao replayed everything.

"Kun Peng!" Si Wen Ming quivered in a fury with his teeth gnashed tight. Along with a cracking noise, he crumbled all his teeth, and squeezed blood out of his own mouth.

Thud! Si Wen Ming kneeled beside Si Xi and held Si Xi's ice-cold, heavy, transparent, dark-yellow colored crystal body with both arms.

Si Xi's voice came out of his stomach, "What are you crying for? I have lost nothing but a human body! My soul has connected with the core of a real star. When I completely merge with the star core, I can still create a body with the star power and become a human being again!"

"But Abba, with a body created by the star power, you will no longer be you!" Si Wen Ming cried.

Si Xi smiled and said gently, "Wen Ming, you misunderstood this...Ever since I triggered the ninety-nine star-sealing magic formation and turned myself into a Supreme Magus, I am actually not a pure human being anymore. A body of flesh and blood, or a body created with the star power....As long as I still have this soul, as your Abba!"

Sighing deeply, Si Xi continued in a harsh tone, "Now, I am telling you something important. You have to listen carefully! And, Emperor Shun, I'm afraid that the true disaster coming to our humankind has just started for real...Facing the great challenge, I, Marquis Chong Si Xi, am no longer able to serve the humankind. Fortunately, my son, Wen Ming, is reliable. All that I failed to accomplish, he will take over the responsibility!"

Gasping for air, Si Xi continued with a strong voice, "Emperor Shun...This time, what Gong Gong has been doing is aimed at turning human beings into slaves to be under his command, to serve his kind...This is against nature, this is evil...You can no longer be kind, or try to educate the evils...The ones who should be killed, you kill them! The ones deserving to die...They have to die!"

Crack! Countless cracks appeared on Si Xi's body, then bright yellow starlight shone from his body.

Si Xi growled in that thunderous voice of his, "Emperor Shun...

You can no longer have mercy in your heart... You have to kill... Some people, they must die! You can no longer be softhearted!"

Buzz! Emperor Shun, Si Wen Ming, Ji Hao and all the others were sent flying away by a terrifying force to tens of thousands of miles away.

A dazzling, dark-yellow colored star blasted Si Xi's body from the inside and rose straight into the sky, leaving a millions of miles long stream of light in the air. In the middle of the star, Si Xi's soul was faintly visible, hazy and blur, trapped while sitting in a magnificent palace inside the star.

In the sky, countless stars with the nature of earth dazzled simultaneously. A yellow-colored mist suffused the entire sky. Within a twinkling of an eye, Si Xi's star reached to the starry void, hanging in the higher sky and sparkling with a cold and dim light.

Si Xi had gone up into the sky. Before his soul completely merged with the core of his star, he could never show up in the mortal world again.

Chapter 1037: Talk About Supreme Magi at Night

On the tallest mountain in Pu Ban City, Ji Hao stood by the edge of a cliff. The strong gale rustled the Taiji cloak and made the wide sleeves flutter in the air like the wings of a crane, seeming to bring Ji Hao up into the sky at any time.

From time to time, Ji Hao raised his hand and rubbed his chest bone. Earlier, he was injured by the star power burst from Si Xi's body when he went up into the sky. After that, he always felt uncomfortable, as if a slight little bit of star power was still lingering inside his body, disabling him from calming down.

Si Wen Ming sat aside on a rock, with his legs crossed. The long sword of his was slantingly stuck in the rock. He raised his head, with his eyebrows knitted tightly, gazing at the starry sky.

For an unknown reason, this night, stars in the sky were especially bright. Countless different sized, sparkling stars were almost next to each other, glowing with colorful, splendid light, that made the night sky as bright as the daytime.

"My Abba's star, where is it?" Si Wen Ming abruptly raised his hand and tried to find the star, which had merged with Si Xi's soul.

Ji Hao spread his hands and shook his head.

Every peak-level Divine Magus would absorb the powers of nine real stars, to grow eighty-one inner spirit stars inside his or her body, then build a ninety-nine star-sealing magic formation inside to prepare for the level of Supreme Magus.

As for which stars would a peak-level Divine Magus choose to be his or her spirit stars, that was top-secret.

Even Si Wen Ming only knew that Si Xi had chosen nine stars with the nature of earth as spirit stars, but he had no clue about which ones were those stars. As for which one of the nine stars did

Si Xi choose to seal in his body with the ninety-nine star-sealing magic formation and break into the level of Supreme Magus with its power, that was a random decision. None of the others would ever know about that, except himself.

The starry sky was boundless, with hundreds of millions of stars sparkling in it. A large number of these stars had the nature of earth. These stars moved in the sky with complicated orbits, and even those countless years old powerful beings who lived since the prehistorical era could barely figure out the orbit of each star. Only a very few among them could possibly do that.

Which star was Si Xi's star? And where was that star now? No one was able to answer these two questions, neither did anyone know how to find that star.

"One day, Minister Si Xi will gain a full control of that real star, create a body of a star king with the star power, and show up again in front of us!"Ji Hao looked at Si Wen Ming, who was gazing at the starry sky, and hurriedly comforted him with a warm voice, "His soul is still there, so Minister Si Xi is not dead!"

Si Wen Ming smiled, then shook his head and responded with a deep and strong voice, "But we all know that it's different no matter how. In how many years can I see my Abba again? Ten-thousand years? Twenty-thousand years? Or even longer?"

Spreading his hands, Si Wen Ming smiled at Ji Hao and said, "Do you know how many human beings truly managed to become Supreme Magi since Emperor Fuxi gathered people with wisdom, created the ninety-nine star-sealing magic formation and developed the new cultivation method for our humankind?"

Ji Hao leaned his head and looked at Si Wen Ming. He was truly curious about that.

"Less than a hundred!" Si Wen Ming gave a number which shocked Ji Hao, and even stopped his brain from working for quite a while.

Was it a joke? Ji Hao didn't know when was the era of Emperor Fuxi. Emperor Fu Xi was one of the first three emperors of human beings. He was a legendary powerful being, an initiator of human civilization, and even older than Emperor Xuanyuan. However, only less than a hundred human beings managed to become Supreme Magi since the era of Emperor Fu Xi... Was that even true?

Sighing slightly, Si Wen Ming straightened his forefinger, shook it towards Ji Hao, and continued with a soft voice, "I said truly manage to become Supreme Magi, which means the moment when a human being completely merges his or her soul with the core of a real star, gains a full control of that star and achieves a breakthrough, finally setting him or herself free. That is how real Supreme magi are!"

Raising his head as he looked at those sparkling stars in the sky, Si Wen Ming said slowly, "Those real stars are dangerous...A man drags a real star into his body and started merging his soul with the star core. After that, a great perseverance and willpower will be required for him to slowly merge with the star, dispel the true spirit seal left in the star core by the last star king, while strengthening his own body and soul ceaselessly. Only once both his soul and body reach an extreme degree of powerfulness can he gain a full control of the star."

"During this process, all kinds of dangers may occur. With a slight carelessness, this man might be turned into ashes, with his soul perishing." said Si Wen Ming with a low voice, "Abba's body has been destroyed, and only his soul remained to exist. Without being nourished by his spirit blood...I'm afraid it will take him hundreds of times greater efforts, and much more time to bring that star under his full control."

"Do you know how many human beings had managed to go beyond the level of Divine Magi, and drag real stars into their bodies, since the era of Emperor Fuxi?" asked Si Wen Ming with a

faint smile, and a trace of sadness on his face.

"Over a million, Ji Hao. Since the era of Emperor Fuxi, over a million human beings managed to go beyond the level of Divine Magus!" A bitterness appeared on Si Wen Ming's face as he continued in a lower voice, "But among these people, over sixty percent were controlled by their stars, and became puppets of their stars."

Ji Hao popped out his eyes in shock, staring at Si Wen Ming.

Over a million of human beings managed to go beyond the level of Divine Magus?! This sounded right. Based on the giant population of human beings, and the rich resources of Pan Gu world, this was the number that Ji Hao had been expecting!

Over a million, this fitted Ji Hao's imagination.

However, what did Si Wen Ming say? Over sixty percent of these people ended up being controlled by their stars?

"Among the rest of them, ten percent failed to withstand the powers of their stars, and had their souls destroyed."

"Another ten percent had their bodies assimilated by the powers of their stars. Their bodies became cages, imprisoning their souls, forever and ever."

"Many disappeared without a trace, so no one could ever find them."

"Other than the other lost ones, less than a hundred human beings truly managed to become Supreme Magi. And by now, around three to five thousand people have still been cultivating themselves severely in the starry void, trying to become true Supreme Magi, I assume."

Ji Hao swallowed his saliva in shock.

Among a million, and only less than a hundred succeeded... This loss rate was way too scary.

Every single one of those people who managed to become peak-level Divine Magi, trigger the ninety-nine star-sealing magic formation and push themselves up to the level of Supreme Magus, was a top-grade elite among human beings. Nevertheless, most of those elites had fallen, and only less than a hundred last till the end. This was shocking.

Ji Hao remained silent. He didn't know people had to face such a great risk and go through so many difficulties after breaking into the level of Supreme Magus.

But thinking about it, it was completely reasonable.

After all, those human beings tried to forcibly control real stars with their tiny human bodies and fragile human lives, then achieve immortality with the powers of those stars. In this case, such a great risk seemed to be acceptable.

Si Wen Ming shook his head, sighed and said, "Abba is a hero, but look back at the history. Which one of those who had broken into the level of Supreme Magus wasn't a hero? Although this sounded disrespectful, I am still going to say it... The hope of seeing Abba again is too slim.

Ji Hao wanted to say something to comfort Si Wen Ming, but all of a sudden, an enormous seal appeared from the higher sky, wrapped in strong earth power.

The millions of miles square Hou Tu divine seal suddenly appeared in the sky!

Chapter 1038: The Disaster Comes Again

The enormous Hou Tu divine seal floated in the sky.

Si Wen Ming gripped the hilt of the sword and slowly stood up from the rock, pulling his sword out. Raising his head and looking at the divine seal, he said slowly to Ji Hao, word by word, "Ji Hao, thanks for listening...Hehe, as your Uncle Wen Ming, I am ashamed. I'm a man now, but seeing what happened to my Abba, I have..."

Let out a long breath, Si Wen Ming flashed across the air and disappeared.

On the mountaintop, along with the roaring gale, nothing was left except Si Wen Ming's especially determined voice, "Do what we have to do! Do what a man should be doing! We can be sad, we can shed tears, but not before we get everything done."

Ji Hao raised his head, looking at the divine seal, then gnashed his teeth and said in a cold voice, "Do what we have to do! Since I am now living in this world as who I am...In my previous life, I never bowed to anyone, and in this life, no matter who you are, Gong Gong, Black Emperor, non-humankind monsters...I will wield my sword and take your lives. No one can bend me!"

A few simple, dark-yellow-colored spell symbols sparkled on the Hou Tu divine seal. Everyone living in Midland could see those glowing spell symbols on that millions of miles wide seal.

Midland and the four wastelands began quaking simultaneously. In the starry void, all stars with the nature of earth let out muffled, rumbling buzzing noises. The earth power from the entire Pan Gu world was agitated, surging rampantly under the control of Hou Tu, the true Earth God from the heaven. The earth power was stable and strong, but at the moment, it was restless, like unsettled thunder power.

An earthquake was started in the Midland and the four wastelands.

Ji Hao stood on the mountaintop, that allowed him to see things in far away. He saw many mountains around Pu Ban City collapse, rivers in valleys buried by sands, and waterways blocked.

Earth power spurted out from cracking earth in streams. Controlled by the Hou Tu divine seal, the earth power sent Hou Tu's voice to every corner of the world. Every area with mountains and hills, everything covered by earth, Hou Tu's deep, slow, imperatorial voice could be heard.

"Emperor Shun, the human emperor in the mortal world, went against nature. Human ministers are mostly evil and unruly, and human beings are showing no respect to the world. You are arrogant, and you have neglected the power of the heaven... You are sheltering evil. Therefore, the world has been enraged. Under the order of the Divine Emperor, a water will descends to clean the mortal world, to wash off the evil and to uphold justice!"

Dense dark clouds gathered in the sky, while the Hou Tu divine seal suddenly shone with countless sharp beams of yellow light on Midland.

All sub-formations of the Ten-thousand dragons water-sealing magic formation designed by Si Xi were struck by the yellow light. As the most important component of these water-sealing formations, the breathing earth transformed into flowing streams of yellow light and flew up into the sky. They all flew into the Hou Tu divine seal like birds flying out of the woods.

Sub-formations collapsed one after another, and the giant amount of water accumulated in these sub-formations flooded out, roaring in every direction.

Ji Hao closed his eyes. His heart was twitching in pain, and he felt as if his internal organs were all frying in oil.

By now, he was so powerful and capable that his spirit power could easily cover the entire area millions of miles wide. Within the coverage of his spirit power, he saw the water surge out from two collapsed sub-formations. Near those two sub-formations, a few human residences were turned into nothingness by tens of thousands of meters tall waves, within a blink of an eye.

That impact force was destructive. Even Ji Hao could only protect himself with the Pan Gu bell. He couldn't stand steadily in the surging waves, not even with his great strength. Among people living in those residences, the strongest ones were merely Senior Magi. All those people were crushed into blood mist by those violent waves before they could even realize what was happening. All living beings in the few residences died, and not even a chicken or a dog managed to survive.

"We, have tried our best." Ji Hao gnashed his teeth and helplessly lowered his head.

All human leaders, and himself, they had all tried their best.

They watched Si Xi fly up into the sky, after which, only Ji Hao stayed in here to comfort Si Wen Ming, who was thrown into a great panic. Emperor Shun and all the other human leaders headed to different places with their people, trying everything to move more human beings to safe places, such as Pu Ban City, You Xiong City, and Yao Mountain City. These places protected by powerful magic formations were the safest places in the world now. Therefore, all human leaders tried whatever they could to send more human beings to these safe places.

Nevertheless, Human clans were scattered all over the world. The number of human residences was way too huge. Even though every human leader had been working restlessly, they couldn't send out all the people from every place of residence. What made Ji Hao and those human leaders even more despairing and helpless was that not too many safe places existed!

How many among all human beings could be as generous and wealthy as Ji Hao, who had built a heaven and earth great formation in his city?

Pu Ban City was the only large-scale place of safety that existed in the human world, built by the entire humankind with combined resources.

There were top-grade and super-scale human clans, such as You Xiong Clan founded by Emperor Xuanyuan, whose You Xiong City was indeed under the protection of a strong defensive magic formation. The flood might devour the sky, but it could never harm You Xiong City. However, how many human beings could You Xiong City ever contain? And how many super-scale human clans like You Xiong Clan existed in the human world?

Not to mention the fact that Emperor Shun and the other human leaders had tried everything possible, but still failed to earn a chance to save those people living in further areas of Midland and the four wastelands.

The population of the humankind was way too large!

Human Maguspriests, Senior Magi, Magus Kings, Divine Magi... Even peak-level Divine Magi, they were all top-grade brave warriors in battlefields. But facing the roaring flood, they didn't know what do do. They didn't know where to put forth their strengths!

The water was soft, yet it could kill all living beings!

A peak-level Divine Magus could destroy a giant wave with a single punch, but he or she could protect one human settlement at most! How many peak-level Divine Magi existed in the world? But how many human settlements existed?

After Si Xi went up to the sky, it had been less than two hours since Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming returned to Pu Ban City.

Less than two hours! But, Gong Gong and his people had started

an all-out attack already!

The ten-thousand dragons water-sealing magic formation was destroyed, and the flood struck once again!

The dense dark clouds covered the sky, with streams of water pouring from the heaven. The stormy water roared down, and smashed on the ground, sending up white watery mist that suffused the world immediately and covered everything.

Within the watery mist, beams of light flashed across from time to time. Long streams fluttered in the mist, transforming into flowing, shaking protective screens, shielding cites, towns and villages.

Ji Hao sent out all of his disciples from his Palace of Dao, who brought out all magic-formation-building tools in the treasury of Yao Mountain City.

Three to five of his disciples could build a magic formation with a decent defensive power, with a set of magic formation steamers, flags or other tools, by joining hands. This magic formation could barely, yet effectively protect an area and people living in it.

Wherever Ji Hao’s spirit power reached, lights of magic formations like that sparkled from time to time. However, many magic formations were destroyed immediately after they were built.

Ji Hao closed his eyes. Those defensive magic formations were destroyed, and those disciples from his Palace of Dao could never survive with their low-grade cultivations.

"We, we have really tried out best..."

Ji Hao gazed at the sky, murmured, "To the ones who have fallen, watch, watch us... We will bring justice back to you!"

"You’re nothing but Gong Gong, the Water God. Even if you’re truly the Black Emperor, you wouldn’t have the right to do this for your own greed!"

Chapter 1039: Massive Invasion

Liang Zhu City...

The twelve emperors in power stood on top of the highest divine tower in Liang Zhu City, looking towards the South.

Different sized divine towers stood on the ground. The tallest divine towers, such as the twelve standing in the central area of Liang Zhu City, representing the twelve emperors in power, were hundreds of thousands of meters tall. The bases of these towers were over ten miles in radius. Floating above each tower, an erect eye shone brightly, creating terrifying power vibrations and dispelling the dark clouds in the sky. No moisture could be sensed ten-thousand miles around each of these enormous divine towers.

Middle-sized divine towers stood in cities built by powerful non-humankind families. Among these towers, the larger ones were around tens of thousands of meters tall, while the smaller ones were around ten-thousand meters tall. The erect eye floating on each divine tower was dazzling, the power released by each of these divine towers was strong enough to dispel the dark clouds within the area of a thousand miles.

Smaller-sized divine towers stood in mansions of those lower grade non-humankind nobles. Groups of lower grade non-humankind nobles pooled their money, took out all they had and built divine towers together. The divine towers they built were thousands of meters tall, each powerful enough to protect the area within a hundred miles radius.

Divine towers spread all over the territories of the non-humankind. The erect eyes on top of these divine towers shone on each other, lighting up large part of the Midland. Day and night, the northern part of Midland stayed bright.

Many of these divine towers were recently constructed by Xiu Clan masters, working around the clock. All different sized divine

towers were put together and set up into a magical and powerful formation, which was of a smaller scale than the ten-thousand dragons water-sealing magic formation, yet was even more effective.

Under each divine tower was a dense mass of people. Those were countless non-humankind warriors, armed to the teeth, guarding around each divine tower and prepared to take any action at any time.

Yu Clan people who mastered all kinds of magics, Jia Clan warriors who were good at fighting and killing, and Xiu Clan people with wisdom and wide ranges of knowledge were present. There were also dark-kind warriors and non-humankind slaves serving as the main strength of the regular armies of the non-humankind. Even enslaved human warriors, who were at the bottom of the non-humankind society, and had normally been treated like animals, we're all armed to the teeth.

Normally, not to mention armors and weapons, these enslaved human warriors wouldn't even have a rag on their bodies. Those non-humankind beings wouldn't allow them to have even a wooden stick, which could cause injuries.

But today, all enslaves human beings, as long as they could carry armors and wield weapons, each of them was given a set of high-quality armor crafted by Xiu Clan masters, a shield with a superb defensive power, and a sharp weapon that had been strengthened with powerful spell symbols, and could penetrate metal and rock.

Ever since the non-humankind invaded Pan Gu world, these non-humankind beings had been stocking up armaments. But today, all armories that belonged to Yu Dynasty were emptied. Enslaved human beings, non-humankind slaves and dark-kind warriors were also given highly lethal bows or crossbows; some elite warriors were even equipped with powerful battle puppets to help them fight.

Flying forts floated in the midair, and floating mountains were chained together by thick chains, connected with those flying forts above Liang Zhu City.

On those flying forts and floating mountains, countless well-trained flying mounts hid quietly. Sitting straight on the backs of these flying mounts, were heavily armored Jia Clan archers, who had been preparing to fly into the sky and start an intense fight.

Countless heavy ordnances with amazing lethality stood on these flying forts and floating mountains. Many of those were expensive pieces, and the non-humankind didn’t even use when launching all-out attacks on the Chi Ban Mountain. Nevertheless, under the orders of the twelve emperors in power now, all these pricy heavy ordnances were moved out from armories, no matter how valuable they were.

Above the highest divine tower, twelve erect eyes floated in the air, with an emperor in power inside the pupil of each erect eye.

As usual, Fan Hai was surrounded by a strong death power. He laughed out loud abruptly, "Yemo Luoye, no offense, but a woman is a woman, no matter what! Our defensive system is going too far...Look at all these divine towers, look at the armors worn by those lowly slaves, look at their weapons, look that those heavy ordnances, which have cost us a fortune...!"

Fan Hai shook his head, scornfully glanced at Yemo Luoye and said, "Woman, you’re way too cowardly! In fact, with thirty percent of our current defense, no one in Pan Gu world can ever defeat us!"

Dishi Yanluo chuckled, spread his arms and raised his eyebrows towards Yemo Luoye as he said, "Yemo Luoye, dear Yemo Luoye, if you’re afraid, you are welcome to depend on my broad and warm chest! Haha, we don’t have to be so nervous, actually!"

Jialou Min looked blur and misty like a ghost. He chuckled as well, "Indeed, we don’t have to be so nervous. In Pan Gu world,

and all surrounding worlds targeted and invaded by us, not a single force can ever rival us. We can defeat all enemies, especially when we combine our powers!"

Piji Nu from Red Moon let out a heavy breath and coldly growled to the others, "Enough! Shut up! If you're not nervous, if you're not afraid, why are you still here talking all this nonsense?"

Piji Mu's growls transformed into a bright red light that shone to the surrounding area, spreading a violent aura of killing. Everyone was stimulated by the terrifying power vibration released from his body and frowned. "Didn't you all agree Yemo Luoye's suggestion? You're all afraid, aren't you? You're all nervous, aren't you? Look at those divine towers standing on your territories... Without your permissions, how could they build so many divine towers so quickly?"

Fan Hai, Dishi Yanluo, Jialou Min and the others shut their mouths, lowered their heads, and no one said another word.

Piji Nu continued coldly, "We're all nervous, we're all hesitating, doubting, and we're all afraid...Therefore...my friends, if any of you still have any useful thing that you haven't taken out, just take it out. Take out everything you have, because no one can tell us what we will encounter this time..."

Piji Nu threw a glance at the other emperors in power and said, "Days ago, a sense of a supreme destructive weapon appeared in the world, do not forget about it! I have been having a bad feeling!"

The sky suddenly turned brighter, while twelve hundred-miles wide black holes abruptly appeared in the sky above Liang Zhu City.

The portals built by the twelve families in power were out of control. The powers of the twelve portals started to improve, generating splendid streams of white light, reaching straight to the sky. In the sky, those black holes grew larger and larger and turned thousand-miles wide within a blink of an eye.

Surging dark clouds emerged from the edge of every black hole, rotating swiftly, and causing a thunderous buzzing noise.

In the next moment, the sky seemed to collapse. From those thousand-miles wide black holes, tremendous water streams roared out. They descended from the sky, striking on the defensive magic formation above Liang Zhu City with a sky-shatteringly loud noise.

From within those water streams, boundless armies of water-kind spirit creatures darted out, showing their teeth. No one could tell exactly how many water-kind creatures came along the water, because within a couple of breaths, the air within tens of thousands of miles in radius had been filled up by those water-kind spirit creatures.

Chapter 1040: Pu Ban City Is Surrounded by the Water.

In territories that belonged to Yu Dynasty, countless different sized divine towers were activated simultaneously.

Shaking misty glows were released from the erect eye above each divine tower. Different colored glow wove together, creating an enormous light shield that enveloped half of the territories of the non-humankind.

Waves roared, while living beings screamed. Countless water-kind spirit creatures stood on those giant waves, casting their magics.

Whirlpools spun rapidly, black thunderbolts struck down, hailstones, lightning, hurricanes, ice mists, venoms, poisonous gases, everything had been falling from the sky, landing heavily on the defensive formation of the non-humankind.

Colorful light flowed in streams, while thunders burst without an end.

The twelve emperors in power calmly stood on the tallest divine tower, looking at a few gigantic water-kind spirit creatures through the thick light screen.

A thousand meters long spirit creature, which had nine dragon heads, roared deeply. It opened his jaws and sprayed out a mouthful of sticky venom, then snorted coldly to the twelve emperors in power and said, "You’re not our targets! Do not disturb us anymore. Otherwise, you will not be able to handle the consequences!"

Three heads of that spirit creature raised and roared towards the head, following which, all water-kind spirit creatures who had been attacking Liang Zhu City stopped while complaining. Then, they began yelling and shouting at each other, and started to line

up orderly like a well-trained army.

Yemo Luoye held a dark-gold black staff, coldly looking at this enormous and hideous monster and asked, "Xiang Liu?"

The enormous spirit creature laughed maliciously, shook his heads hard and responded, "No, Xiang Liu is my father! I am his oldest son. My name is Xiang Liuzun!"

Swaggering his body, this enormous creature turned around and led the boundless army of water-kind creatures, heading south. His voice lingered in the air like thunder, "Non-humankind monsters, I've warned you, do not disturb us. Otherwise, you'd bring yourselves troubles!"

The twelve black holes in the sky turned huger and huger, and the radius of each hole had reached thousands of miles already. Water poured down from those holes, as all kinds of water-kind spirit treasures, and strange types of aquatic creatures came with the water. These creatures traveled across the Chaos, descending to Pan Gu world.

The twelve portals built by the twelve families in power had been quaking intensively, crazily absorbing natural powers and providing powers to the twelve enormous holes, supporting those holes.

Fan Hai murmured to himself, "We have a mole...Something is wrong with all the twelve portals we built. There is a mole among us!"

Yemo Luoye responded slowly, "That's for sure, but I have one more question...Dishi Yanluo, can you explain one thing. No water-kind creature has come from the new world that belongs to your Dishi Family... Why is that?"

The twelve emperors in power and powerful non-humankind beings floating around this divine tower raised their heads together, looking at that black hole above the portal of Dishi

Family.

As Yemo Luoye said, nothing but clear water had been pouring out from that hole. Except for the water, some pieces of broken standard armors of non-humankind armies were flushed out by the water.

Not a single water-kind spirit creature came out along the water, not even a limb of a water-kind spirit creature was flushed out.

Dishi Yanluo paused for a second. Blinking his eyes, he grinned embarrassedly and said, "Did my dear brother Dishi Yanmo destroy all water-kind spirit creatures in that world? Haha, you see, the great Blood Moon has generously gifted us..."

"No!" growled Piji Mu with a deep yet strong voice, "It's not Dishi Yanmo! Are you two dear brothers? Dishi Yanluo, we all know how 'dear' you are to each other."

"Send some people over to take a look. Not a single water-kind spirit creature has come from that world, and it's not because of Dishi Yanmo. Something we haven't known about must have happened in that world." Piji Nu continued in that deep voice of his.

An elite troop rushed to the mansion of Dishi Family broke straight into the portal-base teleporting magic formation. Inside the formation, the white light had been shaking intensely, and following shrill screams, this elite troop was torn into pieces by the teleporting magic formation.

All twelve portals had changed. These portals broke the Chaos and allowed those water-kind spirit creatures to intrude into Pan Gu world from the twelve worlds without limitation. However, people in Pan Gu world could no longer go to the twelve worlds through these portals.

Soon, Piji Nu and the others found out what happened. They glanced at each other, then worryingly turned to the south.

"Scheme..." Fan Hai murmured while bitting his own fingernails, "I've made countless schemes, but this time, even I sense fear! Perhaps, we should prepare for the worst!"

"Such as?" Jialou Min looked at him, also with a worried face.

"For example, we join hands with the humankind if we have to." Fan Hai responded with a darkened face, "My brothers and sisters, our lives are the most important things to us. Except for that, honor, pride, all is worthless to us in fact. Isn't this the truth we believed in the whole time?"

The twelve emperors in power raised their hands together and passed the resolution of joining hands with the humankind when necessary.

But of course, it was not yet the time to do that. Those divine towers provided an extremely great defensive power. Therefore, these water-kind spirit creatures were far from enough to make these proud non-humankind nobles give up their last little bit of fake dignity.

Giant water-kind spirit creatures darted out from those dark holes, followed by large groups of water-kind spirit creatures. They didn't attack Liang Zhu City. Instead, they all lined up, heading to the south.

"Xiang Liu, Henggong fish, Snake Gou, Snake Xiu, Wuzhi Qi, Kun Peng..."

Yemo Luoye counted those powerful giant water-kind creatures in those great water-kind armies with a low voice. All those creatures had distinctive features, as they were descendants of the eight senior ministers under Gong Gong's command.

These spirit creatures were enormous in shapes, and the power vibrations released from their bodies were incredibly strong. Wuzhi Qi's descendants were all hundreds of meters tall apes, but in comparison with the others, they were only regular shaped. A

few Kun Peng's descendants showed their original shapes and spread their wings, covering the air for tens of thousands of miles. Their wings were connected, thus darkening the entire sky. No daylight could be seen anymore!

Formidable water-kind armies headed south one after another. Gradually, other than those ordinary water-kind spirit creatures, some strange types, which were obviously not from Pan Gu world, showed up.

Poisonous gases rose in clouds while venoms surged in streams. All kinds of oddly shaped water-kind creatures twisted their hideous bodies and mixed with those water-kind armies, heading south as well.

Through the broad plain area of Yu Dynasty, through the extensive foothill region between the territories of Yu Dynasty and the alliance of human clans, these water-kind creatures moved across the Chi Ban defensive line, which was broken by the flood, marching to Pu Ban City in formidable arrays.

With the help of the flooding water, led by Xiang Liuzun, the vanguard of all water-kind armies showed up in the northern side of Pu Ban City in half a month.

Water-kind armies popped up one after another, and soon, Pu Ban City was surrounded by them completely.

Chapter 1041: Inner Hidden Worries

The two fire snakes coiled around Ji Hao's arms, weakly letting out their red fork-tongues. Occasionally, thin streams of fire would puff out from their bodies, evaporate the rainwater landing on them, turning it into steam. But the white steam could reach only three feet high at most, before it condensed into water again and fell back down under the effect of the bone-piercingly cold rainwater falling from the sky.

Same as those baby snakes, Mr. Crow was also weakly standing on Ji Hao's shoulder, with his head buried under his left wing, looking like an ostrich.

The water was everywhere, in the sky, on the ground, surging in streams and roaring waves. To Mr. Crow, this place was now undoubtedly hell. Out of sight and out of mind, Mr. Crow simply hid his head. He didn't have the heart to see this world, which was ruled by water now.

Ji Hao stood on a small drifting cloud, wielding his wide sleeves and generating a strong gale, pushing the cloud forwards, right above the water surface.

Ji Tian, Ji Di, Ji Xuan, Ji Huang, the four most outstanding disciples of Ji Hao, stood behind him, each holding a long streamer that sparkled with starlight. From time to time, they slightly waved those streamers, and followed by their moves, thunderous booms could be heard from the flood in the front. Those rocks and large tree trunks that were brought towards them by the water were blown up by an invisible power.

Occasionally, ear-piercing swishing noises came from the sky. Along with them, differently sized hailstones, glowing with a faint watery light, descended from the sky. With a size ranging from that of a human head to mountains, they were disorderedly smashing on Ji Hao and his four disciples.

Ji Tian and the others waved their long streamers and sent up strands of starlight that condensed into a fierce sword light and shattered those hailstones.

This was the ‘small four stars sword killing formation’ created by Ji Hao with the power of the Taiji Creation cauldron, and was modeled on Yu Yu’s sword formation. This sword killing formation absorbed star powers from the four star regions called Azure Dragon, Vermillion Bird, White Tiger and Black Tortoise, and turned the star powers into fierce and destructive Yu Yu’s Qi of sword to kill the enemies.

This star sword killing formation had merged with a part of Dao of sword created by Yu Yu. Therefore, despite the fact that this star sword killing formation created by Ji Hao wasn’t too ingenious, it was indeed fierce and powerful. Ji Hao had done an experiment on himself. As long as the power of this star sword killing formation was fully activated, he could take no more than ten streams of sword Qi released from it before he was injured severely.

"Be careful, Man Man and Shao Si would never seek help for no reason." said Ji Hao worryingly, "Things have changed thoroughly. With a slight carelessness, we might be crushed, both our bodies and our souls. You have to be extra careful!"

Ji Hao and the other three disciples responded with a loud growl. They released their spirit powers, which were not yet so strong, and carefully covered the surrounding area with a radius of tens of miles like four dense nets, preventing any danger.

Ji Hao wielded his sleeves and made the cloud fly faster.

He was in the Town Hall, discussing about those water-kind armies that had surrounded Pu Ban City with some human leaders who stayed behind to guard Pu Ban City. But unexpectedly, Man Man and Shaosi, who were out there saving people, sent a message and asked for help. Therefore, Ji Hao immediately came out with his four disciples.

Ji Hao was curious about what happened. Man Man and Shaosi were with quite a lot powerful Magi. If anything dangerous happened, they both were strong enough to protect themselves. According to their message, they didn't seem to come across any enemy. Instead, they encountered with something troublesome that they couldn’t solve. From their message, Ji Hao discovered a negative mood, which was the reason why he came out himself to find them.

In front of him was an enormous whirlpool. On the edge of the whirlpool, a raft was going to be swallowed in.

Tens of people with coarse clothes were huddled on the raft. They desperately waved their hands to Ji Hao, hoarsely crying and screaming, begging him to save them.

Ji Hao waved his sleeve and released a cyan-colored stream of light that rolled those people up and sent back into his sleeve. An angry growl burst from that whirlpool, along with which, a giant catfish with sharp teeth rushed out of the whirlpool, staring at Ji Hao, giving vent with a torrent of abuse.

This catfish was around a hundred meters long at least, and was at the level of Senior Magi level. Those human beings on the raft could have become such a delicious meal to him, but Ji Hao showed up and snatched away his food. This catfish wasn’t so smart, so without a second thought, he recklessly pointed at Ji Hao and abused him.

Ji Hao remained silent and pushed the cloud forward. He had already saved tens of thousands of people like this who struggled in the flood. He kept all those people in his sleeves.

Ji Tian and his brothers had their faces darkened on hearing that catfish. After all, in their hearts, Ji Hao was like a divine God. They waved their long streamers and released over a hundred sharp streams of sword power. The catfish screamed in despair before he was blown into pieces, and even that giant whirlpool behind him

was torn apart.

The cloud moved swiftly, right above the water surface, going against the water currents.

After saving hundreds of more people desperately struggling in the flood, a mountain area abruptly showed up in the front.

A fiery cloud drifted above the mountains, from which, Man Man's silvery and bright voice could be heard, "Why can't you tell right and wrong? We came to help you! We're good people! There is still space in Pu Ban City, all ten-thousand people in your clan can move there!"

Man Man yelled, "Don't think that you're safe because the water hasn't drowned your village. Look at the water, it's still rising. In two days tops, the water will come to your village. You better not regret then!"

Ji Hao gave a deep growl, sped the cloud up and reached to the fiery cloud, followed by a clear stream of light.

Man Man was wearing an armor, with the pair of hammers hovering around her body, while she was yelling at a few muscular men in leather armors.

The few men had their arms crossed before their chests, looking at Man Man arrogantly. They seemed to listen to no one, no matter what Man Man said.

Behind those men were cottages build in ordered lines. Around those cottages were around ten-thousand people, men, women, old people and children, curiously yet blandly looking at Man man, Shaosi and over a hundred elite warriors they brought over on the fiery cloud.

For Man Man and Shaosi' safety, Ji Hao had sent ten Jia Clan warriors, who were as powerful as peak-level Divine Magi, to be in company with them.

People in this clan paid more attention to these ten Jia Clan

warriors. From time to time, some people exclaimed with low voices — ‘I finally saw living Jia Clan monsters’, or something like ’They truly have four eyes’, ‘They’re all huge’.

Ji Hao came to Man Man and Shaosi, cupped his hands to the few men and slightly bowed. But before he said anything, one of those men said proudly, "I know you come with good intent...But our Steel Bull Clan people are not like those poor things! We are protected by saints, powerful people are in my village. The flood, the rain, those water-kind monsters, nothing can possibly do any harm to us!"

Wielding his hand, the man showed a slight dislike as he laughed loud, "Did the human emperor send you to help us? Hmm, earlier, I heard people say that the flood has been controlled by someone under the human emperor’s command, but why is the water flooding again? It’s obvious that...the human emperor is not so reliable, I think our saint is more dependable."

Puffed out his chest, this man said determinedly, "From now on, our Steel Bull Clan will no longer follow the human emperor’s orders."

Ji Hao was confused. Protected by saints? Which saint would especially come to protect a small village?

‘Steel Bull Clan will no longer follow the human emperor’s orders?’ How dare he just say something like that? Where did these Steel Bull clan people get this great confidence?

What was more serious was, how many human beings had been holding the same thought at the moment?

Chapter 1042: Arrogance

"Oi, uncle, we mean well!"

Man Man carried her pair of hammers and walked to that man. She was a lot shorter than the man. Therefore, she could only stand on her tiptoes and try her best to raise her head to look at the man's face.

Man Man had a serious look, truly serious.

Man Man had always been a simple-minded, careless little girl. She hardly took anything to her heart. But what happened to the humankind recently brought her a great change. The sky-devouring flood, those people struggling and crying in the water, heartbreakingly torn apart by death...

Especially Si Xi!

Si Xi was a close friend of Zhu Rong Family. Therefore, Man Man loved and admired Si Xi, he was an elder to her. But, Si Xi had gone to the sky. Although his soul was still there, Man Man couldn't see him anymore. How was this different from death?

For the very first time, Man Man sensed the terror and sadness delivered by the difference between life and death, that made her much calmer and more serious than before.

She was serious as she looked at that man's face and said, "You only have around ten-thousand people in your village. You won't be able to protect yourselves from those water-kind monsters. Besides, although your village is on a tall mountain, the water is rising all the time, and will continue rising. Your village will be drowned before we figure out a way to deal with the flood."

The man crossed his arms over his chest, lowered his head while looking at Man Man, and said rudely, "Little girl, you don't need to worry about our Steel Bull Clan! The flood can never drown our village."

Man Man frowned and continued seriously, "Do you have enough food? We have much food stored in Pu Ban City, and you..."

The man impolitely interrupted Man Man, "Little girl, our Steel Bull Clan will have enough food, even after all people in Pu Ban City are starved to death! We are protected by saints, and powerful people under his guidance. How can we ever suffer a food shortage?"

Man Man still wanted to say something, but the man had already pushed her on the shoulder while yelling, "Don't try to frighten us with water-kind monsters. Our Steel Bull Clan warriors are never afraid of any monster. They will only become our food!"

The man was quite strong, but Man Man was now as powerful as a high-level Divine Magus. She had completely absorbed all power contained in the linden seed which was given by Ji Hao. Not to mention the fact that Man Man was a possessor of the Fire God bloodline, no ordinary human being could ever compare with her in terms of physical strength.

The man pushed on Man Man's shoulder, but she remained perfectly unmoved. She took a deep breath and attempted to try for the last time, to persuade these few warriors leaders of Steel Bull Clan.

Shaosi took a step forward and pressed her hand on Man Man's shoulder, looking at that man who seemed to be shocked a little bit as she said blandly, "Your strength is even worse than Man Man. What qualification do you have to brag that you're able to protect your clansmen?"

Shaosi sounded less emotional than Man Man, but she was calm, and her face looked like a frozen pool of water, cold and clear.

Slightly tilting her head, Shaosi looked at that man, who seemed to be quite embarrassed, and continued blandly, "Don't believe any ridiculous lies, because that may cost your clansmen' lives. Think about it, Pu Ban City is much safer than here. If you don't want to

go to Pu Ban City, a city of Hua Xu Family is nearby. You can also go live in there temporarily."

Another man abruptly stepped up and yelled at Shaosi, even having saliva sprayed out from his mouth, "Women! This is our own business, we don't need your help, you outsiders! Women should stay indoors, be quiet, make babies... Since when is it your turn to show your face in public?"

"Oi!" Man Man shouted out in anger. She glared at that man and said, "What are you talking about?! What about women? Are women no better than any man? I am the leader of the Yao Mountain City cavalry!"

A deep cough could be heard, followed by which, a scrawny and short old man, who was wearing a leather cloak and a helmet made from a bull skull, slowly walked out of the village. He supported his body with a wooden stick, gasped quickly while walking to Man Man and Shaosi, and said coldly, "What Yao Mountain City? Never heard of it...Anyway, it's our own business. There is no need for you to step in."

Gasped for air, the old man curved his lip corners downwards and continued, "Did the human emperor send you? Good, on behalf of our Steel Bull Clan, I am now telling you... From now on, our clan will not send one single warrior, or one grain of rice to Pu Ban City! Not anymore!"

Man Man and Shaosi were both shocked. Without knowing what to do, they turned around and looked at Ji Hao.

In Midland, all clans had an obligation to send certain numbers of warriors to Pu Ban City, when there was a need. During harvest season, these clans would also send a part of their harvests to Pu Ban City.

If Steel Bull Clan refused to carry out these two obligations, they would be betraying the entire alliance of human clans!

"You, are you sure?" The power vibration released from Ji Hao was cold, just like his voice, as if that voice of his was frozen by ice, "Are you sure that you are going to betray the alliance of human clans? Are you sure that when our humankind is facing a disaster, you will not join hands with the others to conquer the difficulties, and will betray the humankind?"

The old man had his face twitched. He glanced at Ji Hao, and seemed to be a bit afraid.

He didn’t know Ji Hao, but the latter looked like an especially powerful and fearless one. The fierce, mountain-like power vibration released from him clearly told the old man that Ji Hao was definitely an important man in the alliance of human clans. Steel Bull Clan was only a ten-thousand people small clan. Normally, people in this clan would never have anything to do with people like Ji Hao.

For people like Ji Hao, they must be from super clans, with populations of tens of millions, even billions, such as You Xiong Family, Huaxu Family, Lie Mountain Family. Normally, people like Ji Hao could destroy a small clan like Steel Bull Clan with a single word.

The old man was afraid of Ji Hao without a doubt.

However, he turned around and took a glance at his village, then abruptly laughed. His wrinkled face was even looking like a blooming flower.

Raising his head, puffed out his chest, the old man pointed at Ji Hao, sneered and said, "You’re right. From this moment on, we have nothing to do with the alliance of human clans."

Ji Hao’s look changed. As he was about to burst into rage, a few people walked out from a large stone house in the middle of the village. They waved their hands, raised a cloud that carried them up, and flew to Ji Hao.

One of these people sent puffs of golden light spots out of his sleeves that drifted all over the sky and landed on the ground. Each golden light spot immediately transformed into a three meters tall, muscular warrior, with a shining golden skin. These warriors trod on gales and rose into the sky.

Within a few breaths, six Daoist Priests with long robes and three-hundred golden muscular warriors came to Ji Hao.

A middle-aged Daoist Priest, who had a long shining beard and two buns on the head, held a lotus and smilingly nodded to Ji Hao as he said, "Ji Hao, my friend, I've heard so much about you. Finally, I see you in person now. You're as handsome as I heard!"

This middle-aged man continued mildly while smiling, "I am Water Lotus. People in this Steep Bull Clan, and the other eighteen villages nearby, are all my disciples now. Therefore, Ji Hao, my friend, you shall not worry about these people now."

Wielding his broad sleeves, Water Lotus suddenly changed his look and tone, pointed at Ji Hao, and yelled harshly, "Go back to where you came from! Ji Hao, my friend, you don't want to stay for dinner, do you?"

Ji Hao paused in shock, while Man Man and Shaosi had their looks changed simultaneously as well.

Chapter 1043: Water-Kind Monsters Come

Priest Water Lotus waved his sleeves and released a strong stream of power that was like a gale blowing above a vast ocean, silently striking on Ji Hao's chest. Priest Water Lotus shared the same style as his brothers and sisters; they were all quiet and calm when launching lethal attacks.

The Taiji cloak emitted a clear and warm light. Visibly, two streams of clear light coiled around each other, hovering around Ji Hao and spinning like a diagram of Taiji. The strong power released from Water Lotus's sleeves slightly bumped against these two clear light streams and generated a long-lasting series of buzzing noise. Then, three invisible magic bombs detonated.

Soft, lingering explosive force spread out wave by wave. Water Lotus and the five of his brothers behind him shouted in deep voices while faint golden light emitted from their bodies. It transformed into a strong light wall and shielded all Steel Bull Clan people behind.

The power of those magic bombs failed to break the defensive light of the Taiji cloak. Therefore, the explosive force could only spread downwards.

The edge of the tall mountain that the village of Steel Bull Clan located on, was affected by the aftermath of the explosion. A large part of the mountain was blown into ashes, and within a blink of an eye, right beside the village, a tens of thousands of meters tall cliff appeared. The surface of the cliff was as smooth as a mirror.

"Priest Water Lotus, my friend, impressive!" Ji Hao narrowed his eyes, as the fire of anger rose from his heart, "Do you want to die?"

Priest Water Lotus had his look changed a little bit. He seriously glanced at that Taiji cloak worn by Ji Hao, which was glowing with a clear and warm light and had been releasing a prehistorical, mysterious sense of power. Abruptly, Water Lotus smiled, bowed

to Ji Hao and said, "Ji Hao, my friend, forgive me. I have no evil intent. I wanted nothing but to measure your power...Earl Yao Ji Hao, you deserve the reputation of yours, no wonder so many of my brothers and sisters died in your hands!"

Ji Hao expressionlessly looked at Water Lotus and said coldly, "Water Lotus, I am asking you one question, do you want to die? I am Earl Yao, a senior minister conferred by the human emperor himself! Human Beings are facing a terrible disaster, but you attacked me... Are you on Gong Gong's side?"

Water Lotus's face was darkened as well. He stared at Ji Hao coldly, sneered and said with an especially unfriendly tone, "You can easily find an excuse when you want to frame someone. But Ji Hao my friend, how can you frame me so easily?"

Man Man and Shaosi had brought at least five-hundred Yao Mountain warriors to Steel Bull Clan. Among those warriors, even the weakest ones were peak-level Magus Kings.

Seeing a conflict burst between Ji Hao and Water Lotus, these heavily armored warriors growled out towards the sky. Following their voices, raging roars came out from the beast bags tied around their waists. Meanwhile, fierce-looking, strong battle beasts flew out from those beast bags while releasing strong power vibrations.

Within a blink of an eye, warriors under Ji Hao's commands mounted on beasts, and were all ready to attack.

Water Lotus's face turned extremely dark. Behind him, the faces of Steel Bull Clan people turned deathly pale, many even had their legs shaking.

Steel Bull Clan warrior leaders dared to act rudely in front of Ji Hao only because they thought they were under Water Lotus's protection. Speaking of true powers, any Magus King under Ji Hao's command could flatten the entire Steel Bull Clan!

Even the strongest warrior leader of Steel Bull Clan was merely a

high-level Senior Magus!

Man Man angrily wielded her fists and yelled at Water Lotus angrily, "You again! You have never done anything good! You know nothing but hurting people! What do you want this time?!"

Growling resonantly, Man Man raised her pair of hammers, prepared to order her warriors to attack Water Lotus and his people.

Water Lotus narrowed his eyes, coldly glanced at Man Man, then murmured something in a low voice.

Hearing him, three-hundred three meters tall muscular warriors, who were shining with a golden light, silently stepped up and raised their arms. Instantly, a golden light dazzled in their left hands, as a chain with a dragon head appeared in the left hand of each of them. They clenched their right fingers in the air and released steaks of fire that transformed into red lotuses in the air. In the following moment, a sword with a lotus embossment on the hilt was gripped in the right hand of each of these golden warriors.

"Ji Hao, do you really want to do this?" Water Lotus smilingly looked at Ji Hao, "Think about it carefully. Your humankind is facing a destructive disaster right now. If you enrage our two master Shifu under such a situation...I’m afraid that things might get too difficult for you, am I wrong?"

Ji Hao remained silent for a while, then raised his right hand and slightly waved.

The five-hundred elite Yao Mountain warriors burst with a thunderous roar. They shouted at their mounts. Those fierce beasts were all wrapped in strong airstreams or dense mist, as they carried their owners and stepped backward slowly.

Ji Hao then pointed at the fiery cloud treading under his feet. Following his moves, the fiery cloud rolled and carried Man Man, Shaosi and the others, moving backward as well.

He looked at Water Lotus and said coldly, "I see, you take this disaster as an opportunity, you frighten people with the terror of death, then turn them into your followers... Impressive, smart... This isn't finished. I will surely talk to you about this, after our humankind gets over this disaster!"

Water Lotus smiled, but didn't say a word. Seeing Ji Hao and his people drawing back in front of Water Lotus, those Steel Bull Clan people standing in behind waved their hands in excitement and cheered out together, as if some great thing had just happened, despite the fact that their legs were softened just now because of the fierce power vibrations released from those Yao Mountain warriors.

Ji Hao and his people slowly stepped back for over a hundred miles. Looking at those excited Steel Bull Clan people, Ji Hao slightly shook his head.

"Priest Hua and Priest Mu, they want nothing but your power of faith, your fortune...Do you really think that they're your saviors?" Ji Hao gave a bitter smile and continued murmuring, "You're just tools for providing fortune, tools that can be thrown away anytime."

Water Lotus and his people stood on the mountaintop. They had been looking at Ji Hao and his warriors as well.

They smiled carelessly, their smiles filled with scorn towards Ji Hao, his friends, and his warriors. Obviously, they believed that they have already found a way to deal with Ji Hao and the other leaders of the alliance of human clans.

They already had the lifeblood of Ji Hao and the other human leaders holding in their hands!

Facing the disaster, whatever they did, Ji Hao, or in other words, the leadership of the alliance of human clans represented by Ji Hao, would never dare to start a war against them.

A black torrent roared over from the northeast against the flood, raising giant waves that struck over violently like an evil dragon.

Above this black torrent was an angular large dark ice armchair. A tens of meters long Henggong fish sat in the armchair with his tail coiled. A pair of muscular arms reached out from his fish belly. This fish carried a lion with his right hand and a buffalo with his left hand, and had been happily wolfing the meat.

Tens of thousands of scaled, smaller-sized water-kind spirit creatures guarded around the armchair. These spirit creatures were mainly in their original shapes, only looking twenty to thirty percent like human beings. They had been casting their spirit creature magics and pushing the black torrent forward.

Looking at these rampant water-kind creatures, Ji Hao immediately activated the Taiji Universe mirror, released a misty glow, and covered everyone around him and himself.

These water-kind spirit creatures didn’t saw Ji Hao and his people. They shouted and yelled, marching towards the village of Steel Bull Clan.

From tens of meters away, that Henggong fish sitting in the armchair growled out loudly.

"Human beings...Kneel. Men should fight for us, we’re going to attack Pu Ban City. We need you to take out the arrows, swords and blades of your own kind for us!"

"Human beings, hand out your women, and let us have some fun... Also, take out all your food and livestock!"

Chapter 1044: Lotuses All Over the World

Steel Bull Clan people screamed and cried out simultaneously. Almost all elderly ones, woman and children kneeled on the ground together, and started kowtowing to a hall in the middle of the village, which was the only stone building in the village.

From over a hundred miles away, Ji Hao could still hear these people tremblingly begging their so-called ‘saint’ for mercy and protection.

As for those warrior leaders, who were much stronger than their clansmen, and had acted so arrogantly and proudly in front of Ji Hao just now, were now like wild dogs which were scared to death. They kneeled to Water Lotus with pale faces, kowtowing to him without an end and begging to save their lives.

"Steel Bull Clan just doesn’t have backbones!" Man Man carried her pair of hammers, shaking her head hard as she said, "Eh, such a weak-kneed clan. If they were in Southern Wasteland, no clan would be willing to marry their girls to Steel Bull Clan men!"

Shaosi held her arms before her chest, with her eyes narrowed. She looked like a lazy and leisurely fox, quietly looking at those crying and screaming Steel Bull Clan people.

Quite a while later, she said slowly, "Although the choice was made by Steel Bull Clan people themselves, those Priests are indeed impressive... How long has it been since the flood started again? But they managed to soften all people in a ten-thousand people clan already!"

Standing behind Ji Hao, a Jia Clan warrior laughed with a muffled voice, "We like soft people! We conquered countless species, and we like soft kinds the most. We liked watching them cry under our feet, begging us for mercy."

Before Ji Hao said anything, this Jia Clan warrior laughed and

continued, "Human beings are not soft at all, you have backbones. We've been fighting for so many years and we admire the humankind, in fact. Our ancestors conquered countless worlds, but not a single world managed to fight against us for such a long period."

Nodding heavily, this Jia Clan warrior said seriously, "Therefore, human beings in Pan Gu world are amazing...But, even among these amazing human beings, soft ones have emerged...Those emperors in power would be so happy if they got to know about this, wouldn't they?"

Ji Hao, Man Man, Shaosi all had their faces badly darkened. All Yao Mountain warriors who followed Man Man and Shaosi to here squinted at this Jia Clan warrior, who was from Di Family.

See the situation from the point of view of the non-humankind, it was surely a great thing for so many cowards to emerge among the humankind. Facing the enemies, these Steel Bull Clan people didn't pick up their weapons to fight with their greatest efforts. Instead, they kneeled on the ground, begging a fake saint for mercy, and asking a few priests, who were totally outsiders, for help. This was a humiliation for the entire humankind!

"Priest Hua...Priest Mu..." Ji Hao's face was extremely dark, seeming about to burst with thunderbolts at any time. What their disciples had been doing was just like bloodletting to the humankind. Since always, human beings would rather die than submit. But now, these evil priests were trying to destroy that great spirit of the humankind!

Tens of thousands of water-kind spirit creatures roared loudly and released great power vibrations. They raised strong waves, slapping towards the village. The water level was around three-hundred meters lower than the mountaintop, where the village of the Steel Bull Clan located. But once those water-kind spirit creatures moved, the water level was raised immediately, and soon reached the height of the mountaintop.

The water flooded to the village, and wherever the flood reached, fruit trees and nursery-grown plants around the village were all uprooted. They were swirled away, disappearing without a trace.

A few large barns that belonged to Steel Bull Clan were set out of the village, in a small valley westward of the village, with twenty-thousand large-horn goats kept in there. Each large-horn goat was over three meters long, strong and muscular. These goats provided much of the meat that the Steel Bull Clan people ate.

Flood surged in through the narrowed entrance of that small valley. A few clansmen, who were responsible for guarding those goats, cried desperately while climbing up through the cliffs on both sides of the valley. However, before they could reach the safe points, a few water-kind spirit creatures trod on waves and swished across them. Those water-kind spirit creatures raised their long spears, that were made from fish bones, and fiercely pierced down, cutting those crying and begging Steel Bull Clan people into pieces.

An eel warrior excitedly grabbed half of a body that belonged to a Steel Bull Clan man, stabbed his spear into it and waved it as if it were a battle flag.

The other water-kind spirit creatures raised a giant wave. The water poured into the valley, and swept across it. Twenty-thousand ghosts were badly frightened by the strong power vibration released from those water-kind spirit creatures. They were all swept away by the flood without struggling.

Sitting in the armchair, that Henggong fish clenched his fingers in the air and created tens of enormous whirlpools immediately. Soon, nearly drowned, trembling goats flew out from those whirlpools one after another. That Henggong fish gave his orders, following which, those water-kind spirit creatures happily grabbed those goats and started gulping. In a short while, all large-horn goats were eaten by them, and even the furs and bones were swallowed.

Henggong fish swallowed whole three goats himself, then burped satisfyingly. He opened his jaws and spat out a large sphere of sticky wool. Then, he pointed at the village of Steel Bull Clan, smirked and yelled, "Eat and drink, and play with women...Hurry up, give us the prettiest girls of your clan. Otherwise, if you make me do the work myself...casualties might be caused!"

The Henggong fish chuckled and slightly twisted his body, releasing a dense puff of mist. Soon, he transformed into a naked muscular man, who was over six-meter tall.

Proudly standing from his armchair, Henggong fish moved his crotch towards the village and yelled out loud, "You bunch of men are crying like little girls! Hehe, you cowards, I don't think you have the strength to play with girls anyway...Let go of those girls, let us do the work!"

The group of water-kind spirit creatures laughed out wildly. They had just stuffed their stomachs with fresh meat, and at the moment, they felt energetic and eager to vent some of their vigor.

Water Lotus remained silent all the time. He had been proudly looking at those Steel Bull Clan leaders kneeling in front of him, crying and begging. Only once the few elderly Maguspriest all fainted because of ceaseless kowtowing, Water Lotus finally nodded slowly.

"The world is a dangerous place. You human beings are weak... How can I protect all of you? You will be able to live a safe and happy life in this world, which is filled with endless pain, only if you worship our master Shifu." Water Lotus's eyeballs rolled in his eye sockets, and abruptly laughed coldly, "Your village shouldn't suffer this, but you listened to Earl Yao Ji Hao's nonsense, because of which, these Water-kind monsters are attracted to come here..."

Steel Bull Clan leaders raised their heads and pointed their fingers at the air, cursing Ji Hao and his ancestors with twisted faces.

Ji Hao’s face turned even darker. Water Lotus was pretty good at buck-passing!

Water Lotus didn’t know that Ji Hao had been watching him from a short distance. He laughed proudly, then slightly clapped his hands. Instantly, countless lotuses bloomed from the water surface.

Flawless, snow-white lotuses bloomed everywhere, emitting a soft white light. Wherever these lotuses bloomed, the flood began receding speedily. Under the effect of the white light, many water-kind spirit creatures were paralyzed, floated on the water surface without being able to move anymore.

Chapter 1045: Heng Xing

A calming power spread out in all directions, making the people feel warm and safe from the deepest parts of their souls. Steel Bull Clan people showed peaceful smiles. Their tightened faces were loosened, as they pressed their foreheads against the ground devotedly, calling the names of Priest Hua and Priest Mu loudly.

Ji Hao opened his erect eyes, and sensed some strong and magical power spreading out from these people faintly, like streams flowing towards the stone building in the center of the village. He carefully reached his spirit power into the stone building, and saw an incense burner table at the center of the building. A large, exquisitely softened piece of leather was hanging on the wall, with full-length portraits of Priest Hua and Priest Mu painted on it.

On the painting, Priest Mu sat on a large rock with crossed legs, his right hand naturally put on his knee, and left hand gently holding a faintly golden flower. He was smiling, mysteriously and unfathomably.

Priest Hua stood beside Priest Mu with a serious face. He was holding a wooden staff with his left hand, his right hand holding a blooming seven-colored lotus. Unlike Priest Mu, whose eyes were closed, Priest Hua’s eyes were widely open, glowing like a real person.

Once Ji Hao took a quick glance at the painting through his spirit power, a sharp beam of light flashed across Priest Hua’s eyes. Ji Hao felt his spirit power struck by destructive thunderbolts. The spirit power he sent into the stone building was crushed instantly. He lost his vision momentarily, while two streams of blood spurted to meters away from his nostrils.

"Old b*stard!" Ji Hao hurriedly withdrew his spirit power and cursed in anger.

"B*stard!" The muscular man transformed from that Henggong

fish leaped up and yelled in rage. After all, at the moment, all water-kind spirit creatures under his command were paralyzed, softly floating on the water surface, as if their bones had been pulled out of their bodies.

Countless lotuses bloomed around these water-kind spirit creatures, spreading a nice aroma. The white light shone, and forced those water-kind spirit creatures to show their real shapes. Soon, large turtles, lobsters, fishes and other aquatic creatures showed up on the water surface.

Occasionally, those lotuses touched the bodies of some water-kind spirit creatures. Light streams had been flowing around each lotus, burning those poor water-kind spirit creatures. It broke their skins, and some even had a big half of their bodies burned off.

"Who are you? What're your names?" Henggong fish vigilantly looked at Water Lotus and his people while pulling out a large black iron hammer from behind his armchair. He swung it above his own head and started a dark gust of wind.

A strong sense of spirit creature power was released from Henggong fish’s body, and transformed into a dark cloud, drifting above his head. The dark cloud rolled, then bumped into the white light emitted by those lotuses, causing muffled bombs.

"I am Water Lotus!" Water Lotus simply introduced himself. He looked at Henggong fish from head to toe curiously, and said, "I heard that Gong Gong had a senior minister under his command, who is the ancestor of all Henggong fishes in Northern Wasteland, and the first Henggong fish in the world...Apparently, you’re not him!"

Henggong fish proudly raised his head and said, "The one you talked about is my dear father...I am Heng Xing, and my father is that famous Henggong fish. My mother is a devil bone fish who lived in the bottomless cave beneath the North Sea!"

Slapping his own chest hard, Heng Xing continued proudly,

"Therefore, I, your master Heng Xing, got an invincible skin from my father, and unbreakable bones from my mother!"

Taking a deep gasp, Heng Xing showed his teeth and howled fiercely.

A series of creaking noise came from his body, along with which, three-foot-long thorns drilled out from his body. Every bone joint of his had sharp thorns like this growing out, and within a couple of breaths, Heng Xing started looking like a black hedgehog.

Laughing loudly, Heng Xing grabbed a paralyzed water-kind spirit creature near his feet, "See, these are devil bone thorns, gifted by my dear mother's bloodline. No matter how many armors you wear, you will be penetrated by me!"

The paralyzed water-kind spirit creature Heng Xing grabbed was a nine-meters long grass tortoise. The tortoise's shell was three feet thick, purely dark and having a metallic luster. Obviously, that shell had quite a strong defensive power.

Heng Xing grabbed the tortoise and smashed it on his black thorns.

Puff! The tortoise weakly howled in pain as those black thorns penetrated its entire body!

Heng Xing proudly raised his head, stared at Water Lotus, and sneered, "How about this? You're afraid, aren't you?"

Water Lotus and the five people behind him remained silent, looking at the tortoise vomit blood and die. None of them said anything for quite a while.

A while later, a young priest behind Water Lotus began talking with a deep voice, "He seems to be quite powerful, but I don't think those thorns can even penetrate that soft-shelled turtle!"

That young priest viciously pointed at a soft-shelled turtle beside Heng Xing. A strong power vibration had been releasing from the body of that soft-shelled turtle.

Heng Xing's look changed immediately. He grabbed that soft-shelled turtle, and without saying anything, he launched a mad series of stabs to that soft-shelled turtle with thorns on his elbow. Loud puffing noises could be heard without an end. The soft-shelled turtle popped out his eyes and stared at Heng Xing, while blood surged out from his eyes, ears, mouth and nose.

"Lord Heng Xing...You have been fooled!" howled that soft-shelled turtle.

Water Lotus and the five people laughed out loud together, and even the few Steel Bull Clan leaders, who kneeled on the ground, began laughing. They laughed so hard that they gasped quickly for air, even though their faces were covered in snot and tears.

Ji Hao had just wiped up the blood on his face with the handkerchief given by Shaosi. Abruptly seeing Heng Xing's stupid behavior, he couldn't help but show the whites of his eyes in speechlessness. He had seen stupid creatures, but seriously, he had never seen anyone so stupid!

Speaking of that famous Henggong fish under Gong Gong's command, the one known as the first Henggong fish in the world, it was forcibly recruited by Gui Ling earlier. By now, he was probably guarding Gui Ling's place...Yet, Heng Xing was still acting so wildly. Didn't he know that his father had already become Gui Ling's doorkeeper?

The laughter of Water Lotus and his people stimulated Heng Xing. He popped out his eyes and blinked hard for a while. Finally, he seemed to realize something.

Heng Xing burst in rage. He roared out, wielded his large hammer, and smashed to Water Lotus and his people.

Water Lotus smiled, carelessly picked a lotus from under his feet, and swung towards that large black iron hammer.

"Today, I will let you witness the supreme magic created by our

Master Shifu. You’re nothing but a spirit creature, how can you... Ah!"

Water Lotus was carelessly and confidently smiling towards those Steel Bull Clan leaders. He planned to easily defeat Heng Xing with a figure of a magically powerful cultivator. Nevertheless, he didn’t think that the silly Heng Xing was also incredibly strengthful.

The iron hammer landed like a towering mountain. The glowing white lotus in Water Lotus’s hand was shattered. Water Lotus didn’t manage to take his hand back timely. As a result, his right hand was scratched by the hammer, that led to a loud popping sound. Followed by that sound, except for his right thumb, all the other four fingers were smashed by the hammer.

Water Lotus was a typical Qi cultivator, not someone like Ji Hao who cultivated both his body and spirit.

The heart-breaking pain made Water Lotus scream. He opened his mouth, let out a white misty stream of sword power, and struck on Heng Xing’s chest.

Chapter 1046: What Saints Can Do

In the white misty Sword power stream, faintly visible lotuses had been hovering and flying. Water Lotus was a truly an elite disciple, carefully cultivated by Priest Hua and Priest Mu for recruiting believers all over the world. Every single move of his could be counted as perfect. Besides, not to mention the effects delivered by Water Lotus's moves, only for the beautiful light and shadows he created, Ji Hao wanted to give him full marks.

It was all white and misty, with a pure, flawless power, reminding people of their mothers' arms, their lovers' kisses. This magical stream of sword power streams struck on the bare chest of Heng Xing.

Clang! The sword power stream dissipated, showing a white flying sword that seemed to be formed by tens of lotus petals. The sword tip pointed at Heng Xing's chest, which was thickly covered in faintly visible scales. It sent out fire sparkles from time to time, but failed to harm even his skin.

Heng Xing lowered his head and looked at this flying sword, which made his chest so itchy. He slapped on the sword and pressed it onto the ground, then raised his hammer and smashed violently. Heng Xing's style of attacking was simple, without any useless moves. He was violent and wild, doing whatever he wanted; that was his style of fighting.

Water Lotus hadn't recovered from the great pain he suffered when his four fingers were smashed, but Heng Xing's hammer roared down towards his head already.

"Brother! Be careful!" Behind Water Lotus, a young priest flicked his hands and sent out a blue jade talisman. The jade talisman flew out and transformed into cyan-colored lotuses, glowing with a watery light. They hovered around Water Lotus and shielded him in the middle.

A muffled boom was caused when the iron hammer bumped against the defensive magic screen created by the jade talisman. Tens of blue lotuses were shattered, while the watery light exploded, turning into countless drifting light spots. Heng Xing cursed loudly, raised his water-tank-thick right leg, and sent a heavy kick towards Water Lotus's lower belly.

The long coarse robe worn by Water Lotus sparkled with a white light. Then, a loud bang was generated, as the long robe was torn into countless fist-sized pieces, and Heng Xing's two feet long foot swished over. A thunderous bang could be heard from Water Lotus's belly, then he was sent flying back, vomiting blood.

The other five priests shouted out together. They all opened their mouths, releasing streams of sword power, piercing towards Heng Xing.

Even the flying sword released by Water Lotus, who was the strongest among this group of priest, failed to harm even a hair of Heng Xing. These five younger priests surely couldn't do any better. The sword power streams they released swished around Heng Xing like birds, hacked and stabbed for hundreds of times, sending up puffs of fire sparkles against Heng Xing's body. Yet, not even a single scratch was left on Heng Xing's skin.

"Piss off!" Heng Xing swung his hammer down. The chest of a young priest was dented. He thudded on the ground with a tightened body, while vomiting blood.

"And you!" Heng Xing lifted his right arm and made a fierce elbow-blow. The three-feet-long thorns on his right elbow penetrated the chest of another young priest. Heng Xing laughed viciously and waved his arm over and over again, stabbing that young man's chest over a hundred times, along with loud puffing noises. That young man's chest was nearly turned into minced meat.

This young man fell on the ground, with blood spurting out from

every corner of his body. He couldn’t even howl in pain now. Showing the whites of his eyes, this young man got unconscious.

Followed by two muffled thuds, Heng Xing threw out his pair of hammers. Two young priests were hit, one of them having an arm broken, while the other one having his waist shattered. Both of them were sent flying backward while vomiting blood.

The last priest seemed the be the youngest among them, and by now, he had already fled tens of meters away. Tremblingly, he took out a jade talisman, waved in the air, then pointed at Heng Xing and yelled, "Evil being, you will die today...Vajra warriors, why don’t you move? What are you waiting for?"

Hearing him, the three-hundred heavily armored golden warriors roared thunderously. They waved their left arms simultaneously and sent out their dragon-head chains. Following loud metal clangs, those chains turned into a giant web, descending onto Heng Xing.

Heng Xing gave a deep shout in surprise. He seemed to be trying out the powers of those Vajra warriors intentionally. Without making any moves, he let those three-hundred dragon-head chains coil around his body. Metal clangs could be heard without an end, while the dragon head at the end of every chain largely opened its jaws and bit on another chain. Three-hundred chains were connected, and soon, Heng Xing was tied up completely.

Six Vajra warriors silently rushed up and raised the red lotus swords held in their right hands, fiercely poking on Heng Xing’s body through the spaces between those chains. Those swords were burning with a raging fire.

Followed by a long series of clangs, dazzling fire sparkles were sent up from Heng Xing’s naked body. Those sharp, red lotus swords only managed to leave some slight white traces on his skin, but failed to cause any actual harm to his body.

"You wanna hurt me with these pieces of sh*t?" Heng Xing gave a

muffled growl, then boosted up his strength. Hundreds of dark bone thorns on his body sliced across those chains. Those chains were forged from high-quality alloy and were strengthened with special magic spells, but Heng Xing's black bone thorns easily cut every chain up.

The three-hundred Vajra warriors had been dragging their chains with all their strengths. As those chains were broken, they all staggered backward.

Heng Xing raised his large black iron hammers and violently attacked the six Vajra warriors near him. A strong dark gale was raised by the pair of iron hammers, then a series of thuds was caused. The upper bodies of the six Vajra warriors were smashed, as countless five-colored, glaze-like bone pieces darted everywhere, along with blood and flesh.

"Help! Saints!"

Witnessing Heng Xing's power, the few Steel Bull Clan leaders all cried out, crawling desperately back towards their village.

Those Vajra warriors dropped their broken chains, gripped the hilts of their swords with both hands, and rushed up to Heng Xing with large uniform steps. Heng Xing let those red lotus swords hack and poke on his body without resisting. He roared in excitement, then wielded his hammers and smashed crazily, crushing those Vajra warriors' bodies. Translucent colorful bones and flesh pieces were scattered all over the ground, releasing a faint aroma.

Water Lotus had still been vomiting blood, but slowly, he straightened his body.

His robe was broken, exposing his snow-white belly. A two feet long footprint was on his belly, sunk into his skin three inches deep. This heavy kick launched by Heng Xing had almost destroyed all his internal organs. If he didn't have the life-saving magic talisman gifted by his Master Shifu, he would have died long ago.

Tremblingly, he took out a life-saving magic pill and threw into his mouth. Letting out two mouthfuls of black blood, Water Lotus turned around and screamed to that stone building in the middle of the village, "This evil thing is powerful! Master Shifu, please help us!"

An overwhelming power vibration was released from the stone building, as effective as the shine of a rising sun.

A stream of mist transformed into a three-hundred meters wide hand, reaching out from the stone building. It swished across the village momentarily and stopped above Heng Xing's head.

The enormous hand swung in the air, and next, Heng Xing was carried up by an incredibly strong force, and thrown around ten miles away. Then, the giant hand flashed again across the air, reached to Heng Xing and slapped down.

Crack! Followed by a loud noise, Heng Xing's bone thorns were broken into bits. Additionally, bone-cracking noises also came out from inside his body, as he was slapped into the ground by the enormous hand.

Ji Hao speechlessly watched this. As he thought, Priest Hua and Priest Mu did something to that painting in the stone building. In consideration of their identities, wouldn't they feel too ashamed to deal with a spirit creature like this personally?

Chapter 1047: Rainbow Like Sword Power

"Shameless!" Heng Xing lied in a hand-shaped deep pit, with all his bones broken. He could now only curse weakly.

That enormous hand didn't only break his bones, it had also sealed all his spirit creature power, and the few most important meridians of his. He was disabled from casting any magic, neither could he boost up his spirit blood to heal himself. Therefore, at the moment, Heng Xing was able to do nothing but lie on the ground, cursing out loud.

Heavy footsteps could be heard. Just now, Heng Xing had smashed seventy to eighty Vajra warriors.The rest Vajra warriors rushed over with big steps and stood around the three-hundred meters wide, hand-shaped pit, expressionlessly and silently.

Water Lotus reverently kowtowed a few times towards the stone building, then he stood up, proudly and slightly waved his hand. A new grey long robe appeared, automatically wearing itself on his body.

From the bag tied around his waist, Water Lotus carefully took out a spirit talisman, which was made from a linden leaf. The spirit talisman was vivid green, shaped like a leaf, but with golden veins. Water Lotus reluctantly measured the spirit talisman in his hand, then gnashed his teeth and tore it apart, releasing a human-head-sized, dense green mist from it.

The green mist quickly coiled around Water Lotus's right hand. He shouted deeply in pain while the four smashed fingers of his quickly grew back out. A part of that green mist drilled into Water Lotus's body and generated a series of bone creaking noise. His pale face soon turned pink again. Obviously, all his inner injuries were healed.

The remaining baby-head-sized sphere of green mist flew out and evenly divided itself into four parts, each part merging with the

body of a wounded young priest. The four young priests shouted in pain, then black blood was squeezed out of their mouths. Soon, they all recovered and stood up with rosy cheeks.

The priests glanced at each other, then angrily trod on clouds and flew towards Heng Xing.

Reaching to Heng Xing, Water Lotus pressed his cloud down and threw a heavy kick on Heng Xing's temple while cursing loudly. Following a muffled thud, Water Lotus's face turned pale again.

Heng Xing chuckled louder and louder, and at last, he laughed out wildly, even having tears gushing out of his eye sockets.

White Lotus's big toe let out a cracking noise. He kicked Heng Xing with all his strength. However, not even a hair of Heng Xing was harmed, while Water Lotus's big toe suffered a comminuted fracture because of the strong counterforce. He almost screamed out because of the pain.

Gasping quickly in pain, Water Lotus staggered a few steps back. He dared not to put his right foot on the ground. Instead, he could only stand with one foot, supporting his body with a single leg in a strange posture.

Seeing Water Lotus get hurt again, the other priests glanced at each other, immediately and simultaneously pulled out their flying swords, gripped the hilts and fiercely hacked at Heng Xing. A series of clangs was generated, with fire sparkles flying all over the sky. However, despite the fact that these five priests had tried their bests, they didn't manage to even break Heng Xing's skin.

Heng Xing sneered proudly. Looking at Water Lotus, he said in a cold voice, "Without whatever in that stone house, not even five-thousand more idiots like you can defeat me, your master Heng Xing!"

Letting out a cold stream of air from his nostrils, Heng Xing yelled out aggressively, "Come, your master Heng Xing has one life

only, and he is lying right here. Take his life if you're decent men! Haha, you bunch of ball-less little girls, how can you possible harm a hair of mine?!"

Water Lotus's eye corners twitched in anger. "Brothers, let's join hands and get this evil thing with a thunder magic!"

The six priests shouted out together. They stood in a circle, locked their fingers together, and incanted the secret spell taught by Priest Hua and Priest Mu. Instantly, strong gales rose from the ground while a dark golden thundercloud emerged silently in the air. As thunders rumbled in the sky, a water-tank-sized bolt of lightning slightly flashed in the thundercloud, then descended overwhelmingly, as if the sky had collapsed.

Heng Xing stared directly at this bolt of lightning, without even blinking his eyes.

Thunder and lightning served the natural laws of this world, and could largely suppress and harm evils and spirit creatures. Nevertheless, Heng Xing's father was the first Henggong fish in the world, the one with an incomparably strong defensive power, the one who was able to rival powerful beings like Po and Gui Ling. Without a doubt, Heng Xing's defensive power was also unimaginably strong. His skin was as strong as an iron wall. Water Lotus and his five brothers combined their powers and cast a thunder magic to make destructive thunderbolts descend from the sky and strike on Heng Xing's body without a pause. They created a hundreds of meters deep hole in the ground, but still failed to harm even a hair of his.

Countless electric bolts sizzled on Heng Xing's skin, but he did nothing but laugh loudly, "Ahyaya, good, it feels really good. Are you tickling your master Heng Xing? Come on, make it harder, eh...I told you that you're a bunch of girls, you wouldn't believe it. With these weak powers of yours, who can you possibly hurt?"

In the distance, Ji Hao looked at Water Lotus and his brothers,

whose faces were blushed, and couldn't help but shake his head.

Water Lotus and his brothers were not weak. If Ji Hao hadn't been cultivated by Priest Dachi in Dachi Sky, he would be weaker than Water Lotus and his brothers. But the one these poor things encountered was Heng Xing, who was basically invincible. Without especially powerful supreme magic treasures, how could these priests possible break Heng Xing's defense and harm him?

"This thing is interesting though. He's quite powerful, but how come he only had tens of thousands of weak water-kind spirit creatures under his command?" From the distance, Ji Hao looked at Heng Xing yelling and shouting, and slightly frowned. Then he laughed out abruptly, "We have quite a lot of rivers in our Yao Mountain territory. It will be nice if we can get a Henggong fish to guard our water areas!"

Giving a long resonant shout, Ji Hao sent the Taiji Universe mirror back into his body, then swung his arms. Held in his hand, the Taiji divine sword transformed into a three-hundred meters long, coiling black and white mist stream, and spurted out. The distance of a hundred miles only took a blink of an eye. The black and white Taiji sword mist flashed swiftly across the air and took a circle around that hand-shaped pit instantaneously.

A sizzling noise was started, following which, over two-hundred Vajra warriors were suddenly turned into bits and pieces, flying in the air. Ji Hao used the sword move learned from Yu Yu, and within the past moment, every Vajra warrior suffered over ten-thousand sword hacks, and were cut into bean-sized pieces.

The pieces of these man-made battle puppets scattered all over the ground. Next, Ji Hao wielded his arm and sent the black and white sword mist straight to Water Lotus, as fast as a bolt of thunder.

Water Lotus screamed, then hurriedly took out a bronze-colored three-story tower and threw into the sky. A three-feet-thick,

bronze-colored defensive magic screen appeared immediately, that shielded his five brothers and himself.

Ji Hao gave a faint smile. The black and white sword mist suddenly expanded to thousands of meters long and circled around the defensive magic screen. Followed by a long puffing sound, the defensive magic screen was torn into pieces. The bronze-colored small tower was swept across by the tail of the sword mist and whipped into two along with a loud metallic clang.

Blood sprayed out from Water Lotus's mouth, then he thudded to the ground on his butt, unable to move anymore.

Ji Hao changed his hand motions once again. Under his control, the black and white sword mist transformed into a giant hand and reached downwards. It grabbed Heng Xing, who had been shouting in shock, and brought him to Ji Hao.

Thud! The Taiji Creation cauldron rose from Ji Hao's head and released a wave of mist. Those water-kind spirit creatures that were still paralyzed, lying among countless lotuses without being able to move were rolled up and sent into the cauldron.

"Water Lotus, behave yourself...When this disaster is overcome, I will make you pay for what you've done!" Ji Hao sneered, then turned around and walked right away with Shaosi and Man Man. He pointed at the fiery cloud treading under their feet, and instantly flew hundreds of miles away, soon disappearing without a trace.

Chapter 1048: The Current Situation of Pu Ban City

The flood surrounded Pu Ban City, as sawtooth-like waves had been circling around Pu Ban City like windmills. On top of every wave was a military camp of the water-kind. Battle flags made from the bones of all kinds of enormous fishes had been fluttering in the air, and the air was suffused by a fishy smell.

Ji Hao trod on the fiery cloud, flying right above the water surface and heading back to Pu Ban City.

Thousands of miles away from Pu Ban City, giant waves roared right to his face. On top of every wave, thousands of water-kind spirit creatures had been yelling and shouting, showing their strengths. Some had the corpses of drowned beasts held in their hands. After they gave a few shouts and growls, they lowered their heads and took a couple of bites, that made their whole bodies covered in sticky blood.

Seeing Ji Hao and his people, a few large, water-kind spirit creatures, who hadn’t yet transformed their entire bodies into human shapes, burst with growls. They pointed their fingers at Ji Hao. Following their growls, hundreds of water-kind archers pulled open their longbows, which were made from fish bones, and aimed at Ji Hao. Soon, along with a shrill series of swishing noise, a giant wave of fish bone arrows was released, flying towards Ji Hao, covering the whole sky.

Ji Hao, Man Man, Shaosi and those Yao Mountain warriors behind them raised their heads, confusedly looking at those arrows flying in weird high arcs in the air, then loudly piercing into the flood around hundred meters away from them.

"Eh? Their arrows are curved, no wonder they can’t hit their targets!" Man Man chuckled, pointed out the biggest problem of these fishbone arrows.

These arrows used by those water-kind archers were made from the bones of large fishes. However, water-kind creatures were mostly silly and lazy. Therefore, many of these arrows they crafted still had their original shapes as fish bones.

One could easily imagine the result of shooting out curved arrows.

"Silly creatures!" Ji Hao snorted coldly, then wielded his right arm and sent out the hundreds of meters long, black and white Taiji sword mist, transformed from the Taiji divine sword. The sword mist swept across the few waves momentarily.

Three to four thousand weak water-kind spirit creatures howled out together. Ji Hao manipulated the sword with the skills he learned from Yu Yu. The sword mist was as fast as lightning bolts, and those water-kind spirit creatures were all cut into two before they could even see its moving track.

Large streams of smelly blood splashed out. Without these water-kind spirit creatures raising the waves, those hundreds of meters tall waves collapsed immediately.

Ji Hao took back the Taiji divine sword and started the fiery cloud, flying towards Pu Ban City at the highest speed. On the way, countless water-kind spirit creatures showed up and raised waves to try to stop him. Ji Hao didn’t want to waste any time on these weak things. No matter who tried to block his way, he responded with a fierce sword hack. The Taiji divine sword was a supreme magic treasure; it was incredibly sharp, and contained the power of the Dao of Taiji. Its power was immeasurable. Facing a sword like this, those weak water-kind spirit creatures were naturally destroyed as easily as crushing dry weeds. None of them managed to cause Ji Hao any trouble.

When Ji Hao reached the boundary of Pu Ban City, two enormous black serpents leaped out of the water and transformed into two strong and muscular men with dark skin. Each of them

carried a machete as they pounced on Ji Hao.

The power vibration released by these two strong men were amazingly strong, judging by which, they were as powerful as human Divine Magi who had just grown their first inner spirit star. With the bodies of spirit creatures, their physical strengths were even greater than ordinary human Divine Magi.

The two machetes held in their hands were not bad holy weapons, naturally crafted in places rich with natural powers.

Ji Hao didn't even cast a glance at these two men. He locked his fingers together, and following his move, the Taiji divine sword transformed into a black and white mist, roaring out. The black part and white part of this sword mist were split, while the mysterious power of the move of sky-opening was hiding in both parts of the sword mist, that allowed them to easily brush across the edges of their machetes and circle around their necks. In the following moment, two water-tank-sized heads were cut off by the sword mist simultaneously.

The body of the black serpent, who was beheaded by the black sword mist, was suddenly covered by a thin layer of ice. Along with a series of noise, the frozen body cracked, exploded, and turned into countless ice crystals, drifting in the air. Some ice crystals fell in the flood, freezing the water into an iceberg ten miles around them

The black serpent slaughtered by the white sword mist had white flames spurting out from every single pore of his. Within a twinkling of an eye, the body of this serpent was burned into a strand of smoke. His ashes drifted into the water from the air and set the water ablaze within the area miles wide, starting a sky-devouring fire.

Ji Hao snorted coldly, then took back the Taiji divine sword and pressed down on the fiery cloud as he coldly glanced at the other water-kind spirit creatures in the surroundings.

"Anyone else wants to stop me?" shouted Ji Hao coldly, "If not, I'm going into Pu Ban City, eh?"

Man Man excitedly swung her pair of hammers and yelled at those water-kind spirit creatures, "Oi! Don't be afraid, Ji Hao won't do anything this time. I'll be the one fight you! Oi, who wants to taste my hammers?"

Man Man gripped the hilts of his hammers tight and bumped them against each other. Instantly, a dense smoke rose from between the two hammerheads. Along with a loud swooshing noise, the two lotus-shaped hammerheads began burning ragingly. It even twisted the air around Man Man's body and made her figure blur, shaky and misty, unable to be seen clearly.

"Don't be afraid! You're strong water-kind creatures! Everybody says that ... water can kill fire!" Man Man narrowed her eyes while provoking continuously, "The water is everywhere. You're not afraid of me, are you? Are you really afraid of me?"

Those water-kind spirit creatures remained silent. Many of them even couldn't help but step back, as none of them was willing to stand out and challenge Man Man.

From a long distance away, strong power vibrations were released, rising high, straight into the sky. Among all water-kind spirit creatures, some powerful ones had heard the noises from this area, and had been rushing over in fury.

Ji Hao smiled and waved his broad sleeve. Treading on the fiery cloud, he flew to the great defensive magic formation of Pu Ban City. Inside the magic formation, senior Magi from the Magi Palace, who were guarding the magic formation, hurriedly took out an access magic talisman and created a thin crack on the great defensive magic formation, letting Ji Hao and his people into Pu Ban City.

Once he entered Pu Ban City, he reached out his spirit power to the Town Hall.

Tens of thousands of leaders of the alliance of human clans were gathered in the Town Hall. Among them, some were ministers under Emperor Shun's direct command, some were earls and marquises, who had their independent territories, and some were leaders and elders from large human clans. There also were Senior people from the Magi Palace, who held lofty positions.

Candle Dragon Gui, Wulong Yao and the few other elders who were close to Ji Hao, were gathered in the Town Hall as well. At the moment, they had been angrily arguing with a group of clan leaders and elders.

The Town Hall was noisy, while Emperor Shun's face was dark. From time to time, drops of sweat oozed from his forehead.

Emperor Shun had always been a generous and calm emperor. But at the moment, he didn't seem to be calm. Ji Hao didn't know what happened, but he could imagine that it couldn't be anything good. Right now, the Town Hall was obviously a giant whirlpool, and everyone who stepped in would be soaked thoroughly.

Shaking his head, Ji Hao didn't go to the Town Hall. Instead, he flew to his palace in Pu Ban City.

Along the way, he saw tents and thatched shacks all over the ground. Countless people who lived around Pu Ban City were sent into the city, bunched up with Pu Ban people. Streets were filled with people, without any space left empty. Looking down from the sky, Ji Hao even had his scalp numbed.

Cries, shouts, screams, arguments, curses, could all be heard from everywhere.

Ji Hao looked at those people with a heavy heart. Soon, the fiery cloud he trod on brought him to that broad garden of his palace.

In the next moment, Ji Hao saw a few dark streams of smoke swooshing up into the sky from the garden, that he won from Gong Gong Wuyou, and was built with untold money and

countless resources. What rose along the smoke were loud shouts.

Chapter 1049: Mob

Ji Hao released his spirit power, that covered the entire garden like an enormous web.

Same as the other areas of Pu Ban City, Ji Hao's palace and garden had already completely opened to refugees. By now, not only those buildings were filled with people, tents and thatched cottages were built everywhere in the garden, among trees, and around the lake,.

Not even a small empty area was left in the broad garden; people could be seen everywhere. These people from outside Pu Ban City were gathered together with their clansmen. Depending on the number of people, each clan was given an area to live.

When Ji Hao arrived, people were standing on hilltops, tree branches, and even the roofs of buildings, seeming like they were watching a great show. Many people had been yelling towards the source of the black smoke. A restless atmosphere was growing speedily in the crowd.

The fire started in a small basin, surrounded by hills. It was a series of storehouses, built with rocks. Black rock was cut into squares and piled up perfectly. Except for a small entrance, these storehouses didn't have even a single window.

A whole hundred square-shaped, three-hundred meters long and thirty-meters-tall storehouses were built in this area, standing in ordered lines.

This basin was surrounded by cliffy hills, connected to the outside area by a seven to eight miles long valley. On the entrance of the valley, a thick wall was standing, three-hundred-meters-tall, built with rock and cast with iron. Standing on the wall were hundreds of armored elite warriors.

Tens of thousands of muscular men with coarse clothes had been

shouting loudly while fiercely attacking those warriors on the wall. These men were holding simply crafted shields, made from leather, wood or other cheap materials, and all kinds of weapons. These men were like a group of ants. Through a few roughly made ladders, they attacked warriors on the wall ceaselessly. They growled wildly and madly, climbed up using those ladders, and then were being struck back down by those warriors on the wall, over and over again.

Behind these strong men, who were inexhaustibly attacking, a loud crowd of people had been violently assaulting a group of people, who had their faces covered in blood. Countless fists punched on these people' bodies, and countless feet trod on them. It broke their limbs, and some of them even had their stomachs torn, their guts flowing out of their bodies.

The area before the valley was empty. Recently, a large number of simple and crude stoves were built in that area, and firewood was piled up by those stoves.

At the moment, thousands of stoves were smashed, while pots and clay jars on those stoves were destroyed as well. The ground was covered in sticky rice porridge. Trod over by countless people, the rice porridge had already turned into mud. If Ji Hao didn't find some rice grains in that mud, he wouldn't even know what those disgusting puddles on the ground were.

Someone embalmed those firewood piles and let the smoke rise. The black smoke Ji Hao saw earlier was from here. Large groups of people with strangely excited facial expressions had been singing and dancing around the fire, clapping their hands, laughing and shouting loudly.

Abruptly, a middle-aged man was dragged over by a group of crazy people. This middle-aged man was nearly beaten to death, and was at his last gasp. Those crazy people threw him to a burning pile of firewood.

The middle-aged man's clothes were burned into ashes in a moment. The fire burned his body and made him scream in pain, sounding as shrill as wounded wolves. "You heartless people...You live in our Earl Yao's houses...You feed on our Earl Yao's grains... Now, you're killing our people, robbing our storehouses..."

Ji Hao's look changed, while Shaosi's pretty face turned especially dark.

Ji Hao scanned across this middle-aged man's body with his spirit power, and found a bronze tablet tied around his waist. The bronze tablet was this man's identification, which meant this man worked for Ji Hao. In other words, this man was under Ji Hao's command.

Shaosi recognized this man. She shouted harshly, "That is Uncle Li Shen. He's the most cautious and reliable one. He's the manager of this place. I put him in charge, and I let him distribute rice porridge and clothes to these refugees!"

Ji Hao had been a hands-off boss in recent years. Almost all year round, he traveled all over the world for all kinds of things, barely having any time to manage Yao Mountain City.

At present, the army of Yao Mountain City was managed by Ji Xia. All military affairs in Yao Mountain City were handled by Ji Xia and a group of Gold Crow Clan people under his command, added with Man Man, who mingled in the army, trying to do her bit.

As for the general affairs in the city, including the plowing in the winter and harvest in the autumn, hunting, forging, registration of population, household management and all the other things, Shaosi had silently shouldered all the responsibilities. Therefore, Shaosi knew all managers in Yao Mountain City, and clearly remembered the responsibilities of each of them.

"The ones suffering the beating are our people!" Ji Hao gave a deep shout, then started the fiery cloud and galloped over at full

speed, leaving a long fiery light in the air. The Taiji Creation caldron released a giant wave of mist and transformed into large hands that held up all those Yao Mountain people who were beaten out of shape by violent refugees.

Tens of thousands of Yao Mountain people were covered in wounds now. Many of them were dying, especially Li Shen, who was thrown into fire just now; his skin had even carbonized.

With a badly darkened face, Ji Hao hurriedly took out a life-saving magic pill made by Priest Dachi himself, clapped his hands and turned it into a warm airstream. He took a gasp and gave a gentle blow at the airstream.

A thin watery mist began gathering in the air, and soon, a drizzle mixed the power of the magic pill and fell on the bodies of those wounded Yao Mountain people, healing their wounds speedily. Even those dying ones recovered soon.

Li Shen took a long gasp for air, then tremblingly stood up. In a great surprise, he glanced at Shaosi, then shouted hoarsely, "Lady Shaosi...These people...Earl, Earl Yao!"

Tens of thousands of Yao Mountain people kneeled in the midair, then politely and respectfully kowtowed to Ji Hao, shouting ‘Earl Yao’ loudly. They were all smiling now. These people had witnessed Ji Hao releasing his great power countless times. They clearly knew that since Ji Hao had come back, these rioting refugees were nothing to worry about.

On the ground, those refugees who were waving their hands, shouting and screaming madly, all quieted down. Those strong men, who had been attacking warriors on the fence wall from ladders, stopped while staring at Ji Hao and his people standing in the midair, stunned. A loud metal clang could be heard, as someone dropped his weapon the first. Following him, countless people threw their weapons away.

Crowded people began drawing back towards all directions.

Those rioting refugees, who had fierceness showed in their eyes, began fleeing in panic.

They were violent, but they were not stupid. Any human being that managed to attain a title of earl or marquis was a Divine Magus at least, no matter how many warriors he or she had under his command.

And a Divine Magus...Even the weakest Divine Magus could crush everyone on the scene!

"Kneel!" Ji Hao’s spirit power split into hundreds of thousands of threads and locked every single one of these people.

"Kneel!" growled Ji Hao once again, "I have locked all of you. Kneel, you can be slaves to atone for your crimes. Run, and you will all die!"

A few Yao Mountain warrior leaped high, then heavily landed in the group of strong men who fled the fastest. These warriors randomly wielded their heavy weapons and caused a long series of howls to rise immediately as they crushed hundreds of strong men into meat pies.

People had their knees thudded on the ground. On the flat area outside the valley, hundreds of thousands of rioting refugees kneeled down one after another.

Chapter 1050: Food Crisis

At night, the sound of waves attacking the great defensive magic formation of Pu Ban City, wave after wave, made people anxious, and want nothing but to throw up.

In Ji Hao's garden, tens of thousands of specially crafted beast oil torches floated in midair. Around the garden, a troop of flying bear knights, who were sent over by Si Wen Ming as emergency reinforcements, mounted on their fierce-looking flying bears, expressionlessly guarding the whole area.

Earlier this day, over six-hundred-thousand people from Iron Tiger Clan and Gale Fox Clan launched a sudden attack on the storehouse area in Ji Hao's garden, and nearly broke the defense of that area. But at the moment, these people kneeled on the ground side by side, all with pale faces, and some even shaking with fear.

Occasionally, cries of babies were heard from amongst the crowd of people, but soon turned muffled and unclear. Apparently, their parents covered their mouths and stopped them from crying out loud.

Earlier, some children stood up, crying and yelling because they couldn't stand the pain in their knees which was caused by the long-time kneeling anymore. Ji Hao dealt with those children in a simple way. All their direct relatives were hung up upside down, each suffering a hundred lashes delivered by dragon-skin whips, until their bones and tendons were broken, and were almost beaten to death.

As for those noisy children, the each suffered one lash, and all fainted immediately.

Witnessing all these, which one from Iron Tiger Clan or Gale Fox Clan dared to let their children cry again?

Tens of stoves were burning glowing red. Stuck in each stove,

were over a hundred searing iron sticks. A group of strong Jia Clan warriors bared their upper bodies, standing around those stoves, each with a glowing red searing iron stick grabbed in one hand. With vicious grins, these Jia Clan warriors heavily pressed the ends of those searing iron sticks on the faces of those people knelt by their feet.

Sizzling noises could be heard without an end. Those who had the brand of slave seared on their faces cried and wailed heartbreakingly.

Ji Hao stood on a hill, watching all this, A few elderly people raised their arms while crying, begging Ji Hao with hoarse voices, "Earl Yao, where is your mercy? We are human beings too, we are human beings too! Where is your mercy?"

Ji Hao coldly looked at these crying old people. His voice was not loud, yet it reached to every corner of the garden, and allowed every single person lived in his garden to hear clearly.

"Am I not merciful enough? I gave you my palace, my garden... You lost your homes, so I let you live in mine."

"Am I not merciful enough? I gave you my food, I fed all of you because you had lost all your food."

"Am I not merciful enough? You are ungrateful, you attacked my people and killed three-hundred seventy-eight of my Yao Mountain people. You severely wounded six-thousand, eight-hundred and fifty-three, slightly wounded forty-two-thousand, three-hundred and thirty-five...I didn't cut your heads off and only enslaved you... Am I not merciful enough?"

"You're the heartless ones. You live on my land, eat my food, but still attacked those who were loyal to me and attempted to rob me! Where are your hearts?"

The garden had fallen into a deathly silence. In the air, flying bear knights had been patrolling in groups. Even if some of these

refugees still had different thoughts, facing the strong military force from You Chong Clan, they had to bury all those unkind thoughts deep in their hearts.

People from Iron Tiger Clan and Gale Fox Clan were silently shedding tears, some of them quietly gnashing their teeth in hatred.

Some believed that they were top-grade powerful warriors, as they sneakily looked around, with fierceness showing in their eyes from time to time.

Ji Hao had all these people covered in his spirit power. Every micro-expression of every single one of these people was exposed under his eyes.

Seeing those warriors showing fierceness in their sparkling eyes, Ji Hao sneered scornfully.

Human beings were facing a disaster. Ji Hao wasn't too softhearted to kill, he just didn't want to start a massacre in such a bad situation. If he killed all these people, the humankind might be weakened, and people's sense of safety would be reduced further.

If these people from the Iron Tiger Clan and Gale Fox Clan behaved themselves, settled their hearts down and became slaves obediently, Ji Hao would forgive them. But if they had any other unkind motives, they better not blame Ji Hao for having no mercy.

Waving his slaves, Ji Hao left with his people.

Jia Clan warriors laughed viciously, grabbed those Iron Tiger Clan and Gale Fox Clan people and raised the glowing red, searing iron sticks, searing the brand of shame on their faces heavily and mercilessly. A strong scent of scorching flesh spread out in the air. Seeing Ji Hao leave, many Iron Tiger Clan and Gale Fox Clan people began crying again in low voices.

Ji Hao's entire property was now occupied by refugees, and he only saved himself a small house in the woods.

Sitting in the house, Ji Hao nodded to Li Shen, who was nearly burned to death earlier this day, then said in a deep voice, "What happened out there. How did it happen exactly?"

Li Shen glanced at Ji Hao with both respect and fear, then hurriedly explained everything to him.

When the water-sealing formation collapsed, government forces in Pu Ban City had been trying their best to save people of the human clans near Pu Ban City. Countless people were sent to Pu Ban City. At that time, the city was crowded by people, and so was Ji Hao’s palace and garden.

However, Ji Hao never lived long in this place. He only left thousands of servants in this place to carry out the daily maintenance. When large numbers of people crowded into this place, Shaosi sent Li Shen over from Yao Mountain City to take care of those refugees.

At first, things went quite well. Each day, Li Shen would take the grain out of the barns, make porridge, and distribute to those refugees. Nevertheless, more and more people came into this place, and the pressure on the grain reserve grew heavier and heavier. Therefore, the portion of food Li Shen distributed to each refugee each day had been turning smaller and smaller.

For this reason, rumors started spreading among those refugees living in Ji Hao’s place that the entire Pu Ban City had a food shortage, and soon, everyone would starve to death.

Once the rumors emerged, things became different. Those small clans were still fine. They weren’t so powerful, and they always stuck by rules. Therefore, those people didn’t have any different thoughts.

Iron Tiger Clan and Gale Fox Clan were equally powerful mid-scale clans. Together, they had around a, hundred-thousand warriors. These two clans were used to bullying small clans with violence. Having heard that the food was not enough, they

immediately put their thoughts into actions.

"They attempted to rob the food in the store." said Ji Hao coldly, "Hmm, good idea...But, the food reserves in Pu Ban City...Do we really have a food shortage?"

Shaosi took out a scroll and skimmed through the records in it, then sighed slightly and said, "We don’t know about the general situation in Pu Ban City, but based on the number of people living in our place, the food we stored in here can last a month at max."

Shaosi raised her head and looked at Ji Hao, showing a complicated expression with her clear eyes, "It’s really hard to be starving...But, Yao Mountain City is our base, and the most of our food is stored in there. Under the current situation, we can’t deliver the food here from Yao Mountain City."

Before Ji Hao said anything, Shaosi continued, "Based on the current situation of Yao Mountain City, the food reserve can support all our people for three years. But if...if we decide to shoulder the food supply for these refugees, we will be dragged down in one month at most."

Ji Hao remained silent. His heart was as cold as ice.

Chapter 1051: Henggong Fish Slave

Ji Hao gave two orders in a row.

Firstly, he immediately sent two-hundred-thousand elite Yao Mountain warriors to Pu Ban City as reinforcement. Among them, around a hundred were Divine Magi. This batch of elite warriors wouldn't go to the battlefield. Instead, they would be maintaining the order among all those refugees living in his place.

Secondly, he sent Ji Tian, Ji Di, Ji Xuan, Ji Huan, with a batch of disciples from his Yao Mountain Palace of Dao under their command, to set a simple twenty-eight-star spirit-turning magic formation in his palace and garden. Ji Hao had ready-made magic formation tools with him, and once the magic formation was set up, the entire area would be under an overall protection. Anyone who dared to cause any trouble would be caught and killed by the magic formation immediately.

Next, Man Man and Shaosi left with their warriors, each having their respective tasks. Ji Hao sat in the house, pondering for a while. He looked at the dark sky outside, then flicked his wrist and threw Heng Xing out of his sleeve. Heng Xing's bones were broken, and his power was still sealed.

Heng Xing's broken body heavily landed on the ground. Showing his teeth, he raised his head, glanced at Ji Hao, then gnashed his teeth and growled deeply, "Wanna peel my skin off? Or pull out my tendons? Break my bones and eat my marrow? Come, do whatever you want! Your master Heng Xing won't even frown slightly! Otherwise, count me a loser!"

Ji Hao sat straight in a large armchair, hands put on the arms of the chair. He lowered his head, looked at Heng Xing's furious face, and gave a faint smile.

"Good, you are indeed a tough one... I like tough ones." Ji Hao said blandly, "I hope you can last longer...Hehe, your father is now

under my Sister’s control. Do you think that I can’t bring you under control?"

Heng Xing paused, popped out his eyes in shock, and shouted, "What did you say? My father..."

Following hissing sounds, the two fire snakes coiled on Ji Hao’s shoulders received the message delivered through Ji Hao’s spirit power. They abruptly raised their upper bodies and hissed happily. Then, their two feet long bodies began expanding speedily. Within a blink of an eye, they turned as thick as human arms.

This pair of fire snakes wriggled down from Ji Hao’s body and circled around Heng Xing. Heng Xing widely opened his eyes and howled out loud while a fire snake slowly wriggled to his mouth, with streaks of flame puffing out from its jaws. The snake seemed to drill into Heng Xing’s mouth. Heng Xing hurriedly shut his mouth and gnashed his teeth tight, fixing his eyes on the fire snake which was getting closer and closer.

"Ah, you shut your mouth, didn’t you? Pretty tight, but you still have nostrils, don’t you?" Ji Hao put his elbows on the chair arms and supported his chin with his hands, looking at Heng Xing with that faint smile on his face as he said, "Hmm, turn longer and thinner... Be slower."

Hearing him, the two fire snakes let out their fork tongues and quickly shrunk their bodies to the size of little fingers, but weirdly maintaining the length of around six meters. They wriggled their bodies and slowly crawled to Heng Xing’s nostrils like two long and thin streams of fire.

Slowly reaching to Heng Xing’s face, the two fire snakes naughtily let out their tongues and heavily licked the few nasal hair that reached out from Heng Xing’s nostrils. Along with a sizzling noise, the few nasal hair were burned into a strand of smoke, and soon, a smell of burning hair spread out in the room.

"No, no...No..." Heng Xing couldn't hold it anymore. He widely

opened his mouth and yelled, "Earl Yao, Ji Hao, you, you, you... I have heard your name. You're a famous elite among all young human beings...You, I'm hundreds of years older than you... You can't do this to me!"

"Then what should I do to you?" Ji Hao grinningly looked at Heng Xing and asked. All of a sudden, he flashed across the air, clenched his right fist and launched the combined move of sky-opening and earth-splitting. His right fist created a dazzling golden beam of light along a straight and short track, punching on Heng Xing's right knee violently and wildly.

A thunderous boom was generated, as Heng Xing's right knee was blown up. His lower leg was almost smashed by this punch of Ji Hao!

Facing this unspeakably strong punch launched by Ji Hao, his invincible body gifted from his Henggong fish bloodline, and his unbreakable bone thorns gifted from his devil bone fish bloodline, all turned to be a joke. His knee was blasted, and the kneecap smashed to thousands of bits, darting meters away.

Heng Xing opened his mouth and howled out heartbreakingly. His eyeballs bulged out from his eye sockets and almost popped out.

He stared at Ji Hao in terror, as if the latter were a devil from hell. His eyes were filled with fear, and he couldn't even believe his own eyes. Despite the fact that he had just been severely wounded by the power sealed in the painting of Priest Hua and Priest Mu, which was worshipped by Steel Bull Clan people, he didn't see Priest Hua and Priest Mu in person. Therefore, he still didn't want to admit defeat.

However, right before his face, Ji Hao easily broke his skin, crushed his bones, and seriously injured this almost invincible body of his, with nothing else but his own physical strength. Not even a slight vibration of magic power or any other type of power

was released from Ji Hao when he launched this punch. This punch was generated purely by Ji Hao's very own physical strength.

Heng Xing howled for a short while, then stared at Ji Hao's right fist. He couldn't believe it. Ji Hao's hand was perfectly clean, without a single stain of blood. More importantly, Ji Hao wounded Heng Xing with a punch, yet his own skin remained unharmed at all!

This proved that Ji Hao's body was way stronger than Heng Xing's body. Nevertheless, Heng Xing possessed the bloodlines of both Henggong fish and devil bone fish, and had also reached a high level of cultivation. Not even the bodies of peak-level Divine Magi could be stronger than his body! This meant...Ji Hao was even stronger than peak-level Divine Magi?! In terms of physical strength, Ji Hao couldn't be as strong as Supreme Magi, could he?

Spirit creatures had always been willing to respect and admire powerful beings. One could be the ruler and be the law as long as he or she was stronger than them.

Not to mention the fact that the pair of fire snakes had already drilled into Heng Xing's nostrils. Their long snake bodies wriggled, and had still been drilling deeper into his body. While Heng Xing was hesitating, the two snakes had reached half a foot deep into his body.

Heng Xing finally screamed out with a muffled voice, "I submit, I submit...Get them away! Get them away! Ji Hao, I submit, I submit... I'll do whatever you want me to do! But you have to make sure that I can have enough meat to eat, enough booze to drink... And you also have to kill all those brothers of mine!"

Ji Hao pinched the tails of the two fire snakes and dragged them out of Heng Xing's nostrils. Then, he slapped on Heng Xing's forehead and said coldly, "Let out your soul. Don't resist, or you'll be the only one to suffer!"

Biting his finger broken, Ji Hao draw a spell symbol that he learned from Gui Ling, and was created especially for controlling spirit creatures. Next, he activated the Taiji Universe mirror and released a clear stream of light that struck on the blood spell symbols, sending it into Heng Xing’s soul.

Heng Xing quivered instantly, then opened his eyes again. He showed the obedience and respect, that came straight from his soul, with those eyes.

"Master!" Heng Xing tremblingly nodded to Ji Hao.

"Good!" Ji Hao took out a magic pill made by Priest Dachi, put into Heng Xing’s mouth, and said coldly, "From now on, you will follow me everywhere, serving me as my mount."

Chapter 1052: Internal Problems

Although Pu Ban City was protected by the great defensive formation, the water was still six to seven feet deep in many areas.

The sky was filled with dark clouds, and no sunlight could be seen. The air temperature had been dropping all the time. The dampness in the air was strong, and added with the bone-piercing coldness. An endless light rain had been falling in Pu Ban City, while the storm went on in the outside world.

The long-lasting light rain seemed to be nothing, but it indeed managed to raise the water levels of all rivers in Pu Ban City. Accumulated water naturally became an inevitable problem.

Heng Xing transformed back into his original shape as an enormous fish, and quickly swam through a river. From time to time, he murmuringly complained about those brothers of his who never got along with him.

Ji Hao stood on Heng Xing's head, silently listening to his complaints.

Things were simple, nothing too complicated except that the brothers shared the same father but not the same mother, and were on bad terms with each other, fighting for powers and benefits. Unfortunately, Heng Xing was the one who suffered a setback.

Heng Xing's mother was a devil bonefish, a royal among all devil bonefishes. She was also a powerful being who lived since the prehistorical era. The marriage between that evil bonefish and Henggong Fish had shocked the entire Northern Wasteland once.

Sadly, Heng Xing's mother fell in an unexpected natural trial. Before that, she had only given birth to one son, who was no one else but Heng Xing. When Heng Xing was still a baby, the great power of the royal family of devil bonefish was taken over by a

brother of his mother. Thus, Heng Xing became an unloved child.

Heng Xing grew up under the guidance of his father, Henggong Fish with difficulty. When he was powerful enough, Heng Xing was secretly sent to a new world by his father. In that world, Heng Xing was responsible for raising water-kind spirit creatures, and growing military strength for the entire water-kind. He lived in that world for hundreds of years. Therefore, he lost the chance of developing his own force inside his family.

Earlier, the twelve portals opened all of a sudden. Through one portal, Heng Xing rushed into Pan Gu world with countless water-kind spirit creatures. However, he found that his father had gone missing. Then, a group of greedy brothers of his took away his military power immediately and assigned him tens of thousands of weak water-kind warriors, who couldn’t even completely transform them bodies into human shapes. Those brothers of his kicked him out of the decision-making team and put him in charge of daily patrolling.

Poor Heng Xing, with tens of thousands of weak water-kind spirit creatures, he wandered all over the area with nothing serious to do, until he fell into Ji Hao’s hands.

"You poor thing!" Ji Hao stomped his foot against Heng Xing’s huge head.

"Therefore, I’m willing to serve you, Master, but I have to take out all those brothers of mine personally!" Heng Xing gnashed his sharp teeth, even causing a loud creaking noise, while his pair of bowl-sized eyes shining with a fierce light. "I will eat them, bit by bit... I will all eat all of them!"

Ji Hao curved his mouth corners downwards and didn’t respond. ‘Eat your half-blooded brothers?’

Things like that would be indescribably awful to human beings, but to the spirit creatures...Especially to water-kind spirit creatures, which could produce tens, and even hundreds of

millions of children at one time, brothers devouring each other seemed to be a survival instinct.

"I wish you a good appetite!" Ji Hao laughed speechlessly, then stomped his foot against Heng Xing's head once again and said, "Go faster!"

Heng Xing howled towards the sky. His body suddenly expanded, while a torrent rose straight towards the sky under his body. Gradually, this torrent carried Heng Xing up to hundreds of meters high in the sky, rumblingly and swiftly surging towards the Town Hall.

Once the turbid torrent rose, hundreds of heavily armored human warriors suddenly leaped into the sky from all directions, looking at this area with burning eyes.

Ji Hao took out a bronze tablet from the bag tied around his waist and released a strong magic power vibration. Sensing it, those human warriors bowed to Ji Hao together, then darted away and went on patrol, followed by strong gales.

Water was everywhere, and the air was filled with a strong humidity. The environment was perfect to Heng Xing. The sound of waves never stopped, while gales roared across Ji Hao's ears. Within half an hour, Ji Hao arrived in the Town Hall.

He leaped down from Heng Xing's head, who burst out into a growl, after which his body began transforming. He soon turned back into that naked, six-meters tall muscular man, proudly crossed his arms over his chest and stood behind Ji Hao.

Ji Hao turned around and glanced at Heng Xing's naked body, then helplessly took out a large piece of hide and threw it to Heng Xing, "Tie it around your waist...Don't you wear clothes normally?"

Heng Xing head his head high, proudly moved his crotch forward and said, "I am born with a perfect body. How will I hook up with

those hot girls if I cover my beautiful body with clothes? Hehe... Among our kind, the more you have, the more you have to show it!"

Ji Hao's face twitched, and so did the faces of those human warriors guarding the gate of the Town Hall. They fixed their eyes on Heng Xing, and later, some of them lowered their heads, glanced at their own crotches and then turned their heads away.

Ji Hao's face darkened. He felt that he had lost his face.

Throwing a kick on Heng Xing's lap, Ji Hao growled at him, "Put the hide on, or I will force you to cut that thing off and feed it to dogs!"

Heng Xing's face was darkened as well. While complaining, he took over the hide and perfunctorily wrapped that colorful piece around his waist. Then, he turned around and glanced at the water out there, crooking his finger. Following his moves, a long and thick water vine flew over and landed in his hand. He cut off a three-meter-long section of water vine, tied around his waist, and then made a fast knot. After finishing all this, Heng Xing smirked and said, "It's the first time for me to wear a cloth!"

Ji Hao sighed in speechless. Heng Xing seemed to have some problems with his brain. No wonder he couldn't handle those brothers of his and ended up being kicked out of the family, with his power seized away.

Taking Heng Xing, Ji Hao walked into the Town Hall. Tens of thousands of human leaders gathered in this place, and had been shouting loudly, sounding like a million quacking ducks. Among these people, an especially strong man with a strangely bright and loud voice stood in front of Emperor Shun, and had been yelling while waving his arms.

"No! Never! The ten-thousand dragons water-sealing magic formation was designed by Si Wen Ming's father. We all have seen the result. It nearly got us all killed!"

"Therefore, this new flood-control mission can never be given to Si Wen Ming! No! It can never be given to him! We can only select another powerful one to deal with the flood...And, after the problem is solved, people have to be awarded according to their contributions. Everything has to be fair!"

Emperor Shun sat on the ground with crossed legs, with an especially darkened face and without saying any word. Si Wen Ming sat beside him, also with a serious face, as if thunderbolts were about to burst from that face.

People surrounding them talked louder and louder. Many of those people had been arguing about who exactly should be dealing with the flood.

Hearing these people, Ji Hao understood that this new flood-control mission could never be like the last one handled by Si Xi. Currently, water-kind armies had surrounded the city, and the so-called flood-control mission was more of a war against the water-kind.

Since it was a war, it was related to military power. Apart from that, the one in charge would also have to be responsible for the entire military logistic system.

Military power, financial power, added with incredible merit and reputation... Whoever could take the lead and deal with the water, overcoming this flood for good, without a doubt that person would be the next human emperor!

Who would be willing to give such a great opportunity to the others?

Chapter 1053: Dispute Over the Selection of A Person

Ji Hao walked into the Town Hall and stood for a while. People in the Town Hall had been shouting and yelling, so no one took even a glance at him.

Looked around, Ji Hao walked along the wall to an inner corner, then slapped heavily on Yao Meng's shoulder. Yao Meng sat under a pillar at that time, leaning against it and sleeping.

Yao Meng was suddenly woken up by Ji Hao, immediately grabbing the large axe from the side.

Seeing Ji Hao's face, Yao Meng sighed in relief, lowered his voice and greeted, "Brother Ji Hao, it's you! You startled me! I thought I was attacked again by water-kind monsters out there!"

Yao Meng slapped on the ground beside him, and Ji Hao sat straight down next to him. Yao Meng took a long gasp, showed his teeth while twisting his neck, and generated a loud series of bone creaking noise. Then, he said, "I had a scary dream just now...A bunch of crocodiles rushed up in my dream and ate my goddamn legs! Then, you slapped me on the shoulder."

Ji Hao looked at Yao Meng's tired face and asked in a low voice, "Where are your people?"

Yao Meng pointed outside with his thumb and responded, "Si Water City was destroyed, and my Si Water territory didn't manage to survive the flood either. Therefore, I took all my people to Pu Ban City to take refuge."

Dropping the axe, Yao Meng rubbed his hands and looked at Ji Hao, seeming to be a bit embarrassed. "Hehe, Ji Hao brother, that..." stuttered Yao Meng.

Ji Hao frowned, then bumped Yao Meng's shoulder with his own and said, "What is it? Just say it out! We're brothers, we fought

side by side. What's so embarrassing?"

Yao Meng gave a hollow laugh, looked around, then lowered his voice further again and said, "This, eh, I'll just tell you the truth. Hehe, eh, the flood rose so suddenly that I only had the time to take my people and run for life. We were in a great hurry, and didn't manage to bring out much food. You see, I'm just wondering if you can help me with some food?"

"We adults are fine, we can live without food for three to five days...Besides, we're strong, we can live on tree trunks...But those children are not like us. Even if we have nothing left but rice water, we need to make sure that they can have some to drink each day." Yao Meng swallowed and continued with a blushed face.

Ji Hao looked at Yao Meng in shock and asked, "Did you run out of food? Didn't Pu Ban government distribute food?"

Yao Meng spread his hands and looked at Ji Hao, seeming to be a bit helpless and sad, "It has been five days. Emperor Shun did give the order to distribute the food, but only a small amount of food can be distributed each day, and...My Si Water territory is only a small territory. Well, the food I got..."

Ji Hao's face turned dark, "Is someone skimping the food? Under such a situation? Does Emperor Shun know about this?"

Yao Meng helplessly shook his head, lowered his eyelids and said, "No one is skimping the food. It's just that Emperor Shun doesn't have that much food in store. The flood came so suddenly and so violently. People came to Pu Ban City with their families to take refuge... Which one of them could have possibly brought large amounts of food?"

Turning his head, Yao Meng pouted his lips towards a group of elderly men, who stood in the front with serious looks and luxurious clothes. Then, he put his mouth near Ji Hao's ear and said, "Those large clans have food. Ten Sun country has over ten-thousand large granaries in Ten Sun Market. They have cellars

too, with mountain-huge piles of grains and dry meat stored underground. But...I emptied my wallet, and still failed to purchase a single grain of rice from them!"

Ji Hao threw a disgusted glance at those people and said in a deep voice, "Hmm, I have a palace in Pu Ban City, with a garden. It's a quite broad place. Can you find those earls who fought with us against those water-kind things back then, when we were building the water-sealing magic formation? If they have brought their people over too, you go invite them to live in my place together."

Ji Hao slapped heavily on Yao Meng's left knee and continued in that deep and strong voice, "It's perfect. I am just in lack of military strength. Yesterday, people from two small clans tried to rob me. We're all brothers. You go help me guard the place, then I can worry less."

Yao Meng let out a long breath in relief. He grabbed Ji Hao's shoulders and shook heavily. "Brother Ji Hao, cut the crap. You have just saved our lives..." said Yao Meng with a pair of misty eyes.

Clicking his tongue, Yao Meng continued, "I'm not the only one having a hard time. Those few earls who fought with us, they all have small territories, and all suffered great damages. None of their territories managed to survive the flood, and they have all escaped to Pu Ban City with their people...I'm telling them now!"

Ji Hao nodded, took out a few bronze tablets from his sleeves, and handed to Yao Meng. With these bronze tablets, Yao Meng and the other few earls could head straight to Ji Hao's palace, and managers from Yao Mountain City would arrange accommodations for them.

Yao Meng took over the few tablets and walked away excitedly. Ji Hao knitted his eyebrows, took out a jade talisman and created a message on it by using his spirit power, then crumbled it in his hand. He ordered his people to send some food over from Yao

Mountain City. Yao Meng, the other few earls and their people were going to move into his palace. Apparently, the stored food in the palace couldn’t last long.

From the central area of the hall, Emperor Shun’s strong and resonant voice could be heard, "The flood-control mission is related to the future of our humankind..."

Emperor Shun was interrupted violently. A tall and slim elderly man walked out of the crowd. This elderly man had white hair, and the power vibration releasing from his body was as sharp as a sword. With a harsh tone, he said, "The flood-control mission is related to the future of the humankind. Therefore, we can not let Si Wen Ming, a kid, be in charge! Si Xi has just made a huge mistake, and Si Wen Ming might follow the same old disastrous road. It’s hard to avoid!"

This elderly man’s voice was bright and sonorous, sounding like two pieces of iron clanging against each other. Following his voice, an extra sharp power vibration suffused the hall, that made people feel suffocated and uncomfortable.

Ji Hao looked at this man in shock. The power vibration released from this elderly man was even stronger than the power vibration he sensed from Si Xi that day after the latter broke into the level of Supreme Magus. Besides, this elderly man’s power vibration was stable and well-controlled. Si Xi from that day couldn’t possibly compare with him.

"We should give the flood-control mission a further thought. We need to carefully select capable ones among us to be in charge of this." Another strong voice could be heard. Following this raging-fire-like voice, a tall and strong elderly man walked out of the crowd. Looked at Emperor Shun right in the eyes, without showing a sign of fear, this elderly man continued loudly, "This is related to the future of our humankind. Therefore, Emperor Shun, you can’t make the decision alone!

The hall fell into a deathly silence in the following while, and the atmosphere got extremely tense.

These elderly men contradicted Emperor Shun right to his face, without showing any respect. In the hall, the group of human leaders had been waiting silently for Emperor Shun’s decision; these people all had different thoughts. Probably, they were waiting for a result that may or may not be a surprise.

Emperor Shun looked at those two old men with a dark face.

"Gong Sun Sword, Suiren Flame...What do you mean by capable ones?"

Emperor Shun stood up slowly, looking at these two people coldly, and continued, "I haven’t seen you for years. Today, you showed up quite unexpectedly. What do you want?"

From behind Emperor Shun, twelve dreadful streams of power suddenly rose and shredded the power vibrations released from Gong Sun Sword and Suiren Flame instantly, like twelve fierce dragons.

Twelve silhouettes emerged from the air behind Emperor Shun. Each of those man-shaped silhouettes had a blurred face, and was wearing a tall hat, a long robe, and surrounded by coiling faint mist. These silhouettes silently stood behind Emperor Shun, but the strong pressure they released together made Gong Sun Sword and Suiren Flame both take a series of steps back.

Chapter 1054: The Problem of Food

Who were these people?

Ji Hao opened his erect eye. He fully activated his eye of Dao, but still failed to see through the mist coiling around the blur faces of those twelve men. The mist was extremely mysterious, seeming to contain a slight trace of the power of the great Dao of nature. Ji Hao wasn't powerful enough, so he couldn't understand the power contained in the mist. Therefore, he couldn't see the faces of the twelve men.

He didn't know who they were, but he did know that they were strong, very, very strong.

Gong Sun Sword, judging by his name, he should be a direct descendant of Emperor Xuanyuan, a truly powerful elder of the Gong Sun Family.

Suiren Flame, apparently, he was from the Suiren Family. Emperor Suiren was also a respected legendary ancient emperor. Among all human clans, Suiren Family was as important and influential as all the other super clans and families.

As powerful elders from large families like this, one could easily imagine how powerful they were.

Nevertheless, any of the twelve men behind Emperor Shun were way more powerful than Gong Sun Sword and Suiren Flame.

In shock, excitement, and curiosity, Ji Hao fixed his eyes on the twelve, without even blinking. Perhaps, they were those powerful beings that Si Wen Ming mentioned to Ji Hao days ago, the ones who truly managed to cultivate themselves into Supreme Magi; the ones as powerful as ancient star kings.

"You..." Gong Sun Sword barely straightened his waist. The great pressure released by the twelve mostly landed on him and Suiren Flame. The pressure was traceless, invisible, but real. Gong Sun

Sword felt like he had a towering mountain on his head, squeezing a loud series of bone creaking noise out of his body, which everyone on the scene could hear.

Facing the great pressure, dazzling starlight burst from around Gong Sun Sword’s entire body. Sword-like beams of starlight hovered swiftly around his body, tearing the air and causing a shrill swishing noise.

Straightening his body inch by inch, Gong Sun Sword stared at the twelve, gnashed his teeth, and said, "You...You shouldn’t step in human affairs! You shouldn’t even show up, unless human beings are facing a destructive disaster!"

"Human beings are facing a destructive disaster!" One of the twelve slowly began talking. His voice was ice-cold, sounded old, yet indescribably imperatorial.

"But you younger people, you are still fighting over powers and benefits." This man slowly took a step forward. He was especially tall, around a meter taller than normal human beings. Added with the three-feet tall hat worn by him, he looked just like a mountain, making Gong Sun Sword feel hard to breathe.

"We will not step in human affairs. Today, we come to tell you something." said the man coldly and harshly, "Don’t intrigue against each other, don’t fight over those unimportant things. The flood has already drowned countless villages and killed incalculable human beings."

The man stomped his foot fiercely and vibrated the Town Hall, even the entire Pu Ban City. Next, he growled resonantly, "To you, those ordinary people may be no more than a number...But they are human beings, and they share the same bloodline with us."

"You have a quarter of an hour to scheme a detailed plan to deal with the flood." continued the man coldly, "If you are still talking nonsense in this place after a quarter of an hour, you shall die! What can you do if we let you live? Waste food?"

Gong Sun Sword, Suiren Flame and the other human leaders who had been arguing intensely against Emperor Shun these days were now soaked in cold sweat. They looked at the twelve hazy silhouettes with fear. An overwhelming aura of killing had been releasing from the twelve, sweeping across the entire Town Hall like a hurricane.

The twelve mysterious, powerful beings seriously wanted to kill these human leaders! The intent of killing was solid real!

If in a quarter of an hour, these human leaders on the scene failed to come up with a detailed, doable plan to control the flood, these twelve mysterious, powerful beings with unknown identities would truly kill them!

"It'll be good if we can kill all these people. A bunch of useless things, they will solve nothing even if we let them live. From all clans, all families, countless people are eager to climb up to higher positions. Kill them all, and plenty of people will be willing to take over their duties." said another hazy silhouette, who had been releasing a strong cold power that was about to freeze the internal organs of everyone on the scene.

The hearts of many human leaders in the hall missed a beat. Meanwhile, cold sweat started flowing down from their foreheads in streams.

Wasn't it right? Not to mention the other abilities of human beings, in mere terms of fertility, except for a few kinds of spirit creatures, no other species in Pan Gu world could ever compare with the humankind.

Each of these human leaders had brothers, sisters, and ambitious descendants, who had eyes fixed on their positions,. If they all died, nothing would be different at all. A new batch of people would take over their duties, keeping their clans and families in perfect orders. To any large human clan, no elder or leader was ever indispensable. The clans would remain developing even if

some of their elders or leaders died.

Gong Sun Sword, Suiren Flame had been sweating harder than the others. They glanced at the twelve mysterious powerful beings in fright. Next, Suiren Flame gnashed his teeth and abruptly took a reluctant step forward. He politely bowed to Emperor Shun and said, "Emperor Shun, you shall make the decision regarding the matter of flood-control."

Suiren Flame gave up. However, he still left Emperor Shun a trap with his words.

He said ‘you shall make the decision’... What did that mean? If the flood were successfully controlled, the credit would go to everyone; if the mission failed, Emperor Shun and whoever he put in charge of this mission would be the ones taking the blame!

This was what Suiren Flame meant, so execrable.

Emperor Shun gave a complicated glance at Suiren Flame, then took two steps forward. Looking at the group of human leaders in the hall, he said seriously, "We’re running out of time. As leaders, as can still run a slow discussion in here, but our people can’t bear waiting. Many of our people are struggling and crying in the flood right now, many of our people are starving and freezing to death. Things should be settled"

Taking a long breath, Emperor Shun glanced at people on the scene and continued in a deep and strong voice, "Three days, I give you three days! Food, for Pu Ban City, and the entire humankind, whoever contributes the most food, or whoever can solve the food crisis to the maximum degree, will be in charge of the flood-control mission!"

Ji Hao popped out his eyes and subconsciously turned to Si Wen Ming.

This plan of Emperor Shun was perfect. Currently, the most urgent problem was the food. Without the food, people would start

doubting; without the food, many human beings would starve to death; without the food, where could people get the strength to overcome the flood?

Emperor Shun was forcing those large clans, who had stored great amounts of food for themselves, to give it out!

Besides, even if all those large clans gave out all their food in their stores, they could never contribute more food than Si Wen Ming! One had to mention that Si Wen Ming married Tushan Princess, and Tushan Family was the richest human family, that could even be mention in the same breath with the dragon-kind and phoenix-kind!

As for divine weapons or pre-world magic treasures, the ones possessed by Tushan Family might not be as many as the ones possessed by the dragon-kind and phoenix-kind. But speaking of human world resources, such as armaments and money, Tushan Family was definitely much richer than the dragon-kind and phoenix-kind.

Once Emperor Shun said it out, the food crisis of the humankind would be solved in the short run.

Chapter 1055: Rob Food

Supported by a strong force, Emperor Shun's proposal was approved unanimously.

Human leaders in the hall left in groups, all with serious looks, sparkling eyes, and countless thoughts hiding in their heads.

Ji Hao stood by a pillar with his hands held in sleeves, looking at these people.

Soon, someone noticed Ji Hao. A tall and slim young man with an oddly-shaped longbow carried on his back split the crowd and walked to Ji Hao with big steps.

"Earl Yao, Ji Hao?" The man walked to less than half an inch away from Ji Hao, such that his nose almost touched Ji Hao's nose when he asked with a weird tone.

"Piss off!" Heng Xing was standing beside Ji Hao, with his arms resting on the hips. Before Ji Hao responded, Heng Xing had already popped out his eyes and swiftly thrown a punch at the young man's cold face. Heng Xing admitted Ji Hao as his master already. To a not so smart spirit creature, the master should always be loyally protected.

The young man had nearly pressed his nose against Ji Hao's nose when asking a question. Without a doubt, that was provocative.

Heng Xing hadn't yet realized what exactly was happening, but his body reacted the first.

The young man carelessly raised his right arm and conveniently slapped at Heng Xing's fist. A thunderous bang was generated, then the young man's look changed suddenly. His right wrist popped loudly, while his upper body leaned backward. His feet could no longer steady his body, and consequently, he staggered a few steps backward.

"You!" The young man glared at Ji Hao, subconsciously putting

his hands on his bow.

"I am Earl Yao Ji Hao!" Ji Hao coldly looked at the young man and said, "If you want to avenge Yi Shen and Yi Tian, wait until the flood is handled. Human beings are facing a disaster, and under the current situation, I don’t want to fight you and weaken the humankind for no reason."

The young man swung his hand, coldly and sharply staring at Ji Hao for a while. Then, he abruptly lowered his voice and laughed, "No, I just want to say thank you. Without you, I wouldn’t have the chance to succeed the greatest power of Eastern Wasteland. Remember, I am Yi Di, Yi Tian was my elder brother."

Grinning weirdly, Yi Di continued in a soft voice, "Ten Sun Country elders have already set the rule. Since Yi Shen has died, whoever gets you killed will be the new prince. Therefore, keep your head well, because I will take it away personally."

Ji Hao blandly looked at Yi Di. Raising his hand, Ji Hao quickly pointed at Heng Xing and said, "Defeat my mount first if you want to kill me. You failed to take a slight punch of my mount, how dare you say that you want to kill me?"

Yi Di glanced at Ji Hao in a complicated way. He raised his right palm and looked at the blood on his palm. As he swung that hand, the blood disappeared right away. He glimpsed at Heng Xing and said in a strange tone, "Kill people...A great strength is not the only thing that allows you to kill."

Snorting coldly, Yi Di turned around and walked out of the hall.

Soon later, another young man carried a longbow and came to Ji Hao. The young man looked at Ji Hao from head to toe, then pointed at his own nose and said, "I am Yi Ren. Did Yi Di challenge you? Don’t die in his hands, please, because your head, and the glory and power that will be delivered by your death, will all be mine!"

Yi Ren proudly held his head high and walked out of the Town Hall.

"It seems that I have indeed caused myself quite some troubles these years." Ji Hao smiled and said in a low voice. "If the flood didn’t exist, I wouldn’t even give you a chance to walk out of this hall." Clicking his tongue, Ji Hao continued.

Back then, Ji Hao beat up Wuzhi Qi and Zhu Rong Tianming in front of everyone, right in this hall. With his bad temper, if human beings were not facing a great disaster, and he wasn’t afraid of causing internal cleavages, he would have slaughtered Yi Di and Yi Ren already.

Soon, people in the Town Hall all left. The mysterious twelve had disappeared already, but nobody knew when that happened.

Ji Hao took Heng Xing, walked to Si Wen Ming and said grinningly, "Uncle Wen Ming, my place is in lack of food too. When the food from your family arrives, can you give me some? Just now, I let Yao Meng and the other few brothers take all their people to my place."

Si Wen Ming squeezed a faint smile out of his serious face, nodded to Ji Hao and said, "Tushan Family have already sent over an installment of food. Shipping overnight, it will arrive in the city in less than one day. I will distribute some to you when the food arrives."

Emperor Shun had been holding a serious dark face all the long. But on hearing Ji Hao, he finally smiled, warmly nodded to Ji Hao and said with a strong voice, "Ji Hao, just now, you held your temper and didn’t start conflicts with those two kids. This is good. In the future, you shall help Wen Ming as much as you can. The duty is heavy, and you can’t be as emotional as before."

Ji Hao smiled. Judging from Emperor Shun and Si Wen Ming’ words, as he thought, all of this was planned by them.

With the food aid from Tushan Family, the food crisis in Pu Ban City would be eased largely. Apart from this, Si Wen Ming could also reasonably be in charge of the flood-control mission, handling the overall situation. Once the flood was overcome successfully, Si Wen Ming would definitely ascend to the throne with this credit, and no one would be able to doubt him.

"But, uncle Wen Ming, how much food did Tushan old man send?" Ji Hao knitted his eyebrows, pointed at the gate of the Town Hall, and said, "If those people join hands..."

Si Wen Ming smiled and said confidently, "Let's not mention if they can reach an agreement within three days to select one or two people to compete against me... Even if all large clans in Pu Ban City join hands right now and put together all their stored food, that wouldn't be more than the installment sent over by Tushan Family this time."

Ji Hao was stunned. Si Wen Ming's words made he show his teeth in shock.

Tushan Family was indeed super rich. They were even confident enough to believe that the food they sent over was in a larger quantity than all the stored food in the entire Pu Ban City!

Ji Hao suddenly realized that compared with super rich clans like Tushan Family, his Yao Mountain territory was way too poor.

Ji Hao didn't leave the Town Hall. Arranged by Emperor Shun, it was practically certain that Si Wen Ming would shoulder the main responsibility for the flood-control mission. Therefore, Si Wen Ming had already started to make overall arrangements.

Emperor Shun's ministers and the commanders of his family armies, family ministers from Si Wen Ming's family, and those princes from large human clans and families who were willing to support Si Wen Ming, all gathered in a smaller hall behind the main hall. Everyone was busy. Tasks started to be assigned, and resources began to be allocated. Si Wen Ming already had a plan,

which was greater and more imaginative than Si Xi's ten-thousand dragons water-sealing magic formation. This greater plan included the perfect solutions for all possible future problems, but it was hundreds of times more complicated and difficult than Si Xi's water-sealing magic formation.

Ji Hao was a knowledgeable one, but on hearing about this plan of Si Wen Ming, he had all his fine hairs standing straight up. He felt like weak electric bolts were moving across his skin.

Great, magnificent, Ji Hao couldn't even imagine how Si Wen Ming came up with this plan!

Once it worked, not only this flood, even many other problems that the human society had would be solved naturally.

When Ji Hao was absorbedly in listening to Si Wen Ming, a beam of red light dazzled out of the latter's sleeve. In his sleeve, a triangle-shaped jade talisman exploded suddenly.

Si Wen Ming's look changed immediately.

"The food transportation troop from Tushan Family is under attack. The enemies...are extremely powerful!"

Chapter 1056: Food Transportation Troop

A quarter of an hour ago, east side of Pu Ban City, in the heavy storm, a large-scale transport troop had been moving in the flood.

A whole ten thousand starry sky spirit turtles held their heads high, swiftly moving on the surface of the water. Dense clouds of mist rose from under these turtles' feet. They were enormous, each one of them nearly twenty miles long from head to tail. Standing on the back of each spirit turtle was a metal city.

In these metal cities, cabins for passengers had all been removed already. Instead, every metal city was now filled with food. Grains, fruits, vegetables, cured meat, ready-to-eat rice cakes, potato cakes and all other kinds of food filled every room in every metal city.

Following behind the ten-thousand enormous spirit turtles were tens of thousands of floating cities, built with logs. Each of these square-shaped floating cities was around ten miles squared in area, with nothing inside but differently sized sacks, stuffed with all kinds of food.

These floating cities were unpowered, tied with tens of water-tank-sized ropes and pulled by whales. Each of those whales was hundreds of meters long, and had been spouting water, singing with beautiful, high-pitched sounds. These whales held the ropes in their mouths, moving against strong waves at their highest speed.

Nearly a hundred thousand floating cities were being pulled by these whales, fifty whales for each city. Five million whales that belonged to Tushan Family were put to use this time.

The transport troop was huge, extending for countless miles, without an end that could be seen. This enormous troop tore apart the curtain of the rain, crushed the waves, and approached Pu Ban City with an indescribable, tremendous momentum.

If Ji Hao were here, he would definitely give a praise sincerely — Super, super rich!

Tushan old man stood on the head of the first spirit turtle, seeming to be in good spirit. Holding a cup of tea, he leisurely took a sip, abruptly laughed out, and said, "Do those people actually wanna run a financial competition against our Tushan Family? Hmm, the throne belongs to my son in law. No one can possibly take it away!"

A twelve-meter tall Jia Clan warrior stood beside Tushan old man. The skin of this Jia Clan warrior was golden, slightly translucent and with a crystal luster. Hearing Tushan old man, this Jia Clan warrior asked with a deep voice, "Master, what if those large clans in Pu Ban City join hands and take out a larger quantity of food? Should I go kill them?"

"Kill, kill, kill, kill your ass!" Tushan old man turned around and slapped heavily on the Jia Clan warrior's knee. Followed by a loud popping noise, Tushan old man showed his teeth in pain. Swinging his hand, Tushan old man proudly sneered and said, "Firstly, I'm afraid that they all have different purposes, and can't easily reach an agreement..."

"Secondly..." Tushan old man glanced at the enormous transport troop behind him, continued in a cold and confident tone, "Even if they do join hands, how much food can they provide? They still have to think about the wellbeing of their own people, don't they? How much can they possibly provide? But this troop of mine is only transporting the first installment of the food aid from us!"

Stomping his foot against the spirit turtle's head, Tushan old man narrowed his eyes. A dangerous-looking cold light sparkled in those narrowed eyes of his as he continued, "If their stored food is truly more than our first installment, hehe, the five-million whales back there, slaughter them all and serve as food."

"In the East Sea, our Tushan Family has raised tens of thousands

of whale flocks, and each flock has more than thirty-thousand whales. Those are nothing but five-million whales that I can bear to waste!"

The Jia Clan warrior shrugged and didn't say anything else.

He had served Tushan old man for many, many years. He knew that Tushan Family was incredibly rich. He witnessed many unreasonable things which were done by Tushan Family people because of their wealthiness. However, this time, he was still shocked by Tushan old man's swords.

He didn't understand why Tushan Family would raise so many whales? For food? Or, did those whales have other functions? This was a trade secret of Tushan Family, and the Jia Clan warrior smartly didn't ask any further questions.

The rain was heavy and the waves were strong. Tushan old man was in a heightened spirit. He sat down on the spirit turtle's head, looking at the rapidly flowing water, and started singing a folk song with a hoarse voice that was not so pleasant to hear. Shaking his head, he clapped his hands, and even splashed the tea all over his own body. But, he didn't pay any attention to that.

"Hehe, a son in law of our Tushan Family is going to become the human emperor!" Tushan old man grinned happily, showing his shining teeth. "Shame, Emperor Shun married too soon. Back then, when I tried to get close to him, he was already a father."

"But now, isn't Si Wen Ming my son in law? With the support of the human emperor in the future, the business of my Tushan Family will naturally reach to every corner of the world. In the future, our Tushan Family will be the top one on the rich list of this world. The dragon-kind and phoenix-kind can just step aside!"

Swish! A sharp arrow flew over through the rain curtain from a long distance away. The arrowhead was burning, generating a great heat that evaporated the rain, leaving a clear stream of steam in the air.

Tushan old man was immersed in his own thoughts, that when he saw the arrow, it had already reached less than three feet away from him. With Tushan old man's reaction speed, he could never dodge this lethal arrow.

The Jia Clan warrior standing beside Tushan old man immediately burst with a deep shout, while a blood-red light flashed across his four eyes. The air in front of Tushan old man suddenly became as solid as an iron wall. The arrow bumped on the invisible air wall, stirred up waves of ripples, then exploded, turning into a sphere of flame, tens of meters radius.

Even the fire or the heat didn't manage to approach Tushan old man, as the cold deep shout of that Jia Clan warrior blocked everything.

Tushan old man paused, then leaped straight up and shouted, "We're under attack! Fight! Fight! Send emergency signals to Pu Ban City! Damn it! That was an Eastern Wasteland sunset arrow! Those bastards in Pu Ban City don't want Wen Ming to be in charge of the flood-control mission! They came for the food!"

Tushan old man was smart and crafty. At the moment he saw that arrow, he figured out ninety-nine percent of the truth.

He took out a triangle-shaped magic talisman from his sleeve, murmured something to it and crumbled it. Next, he raised his hand and sent a few red fireballs into the sky. Those fireballs exploded in the air, letting out streams of flame, flying in all directions. These few exploding fireballs could be seen from thousands of miles away.

Following a series of swishing noise, countless people showed up on the back of all spirit turtles. Meanwhile, incalculable warriors, who were armed to the teeth, rushed out from those floating cities. Tushan Family was rich in money, food and armaments. Therefore, they had raised a great army.

Thunderous sounds of waves came from all directions. Strong

spirit creature power vibrations rose, reaching straight to the clouds. In the sky, dense dark clouds began rolling restlessly.

Thunderbolts dazzled in the dark clouds while waves rose in all directions. Countless armed water-kind spirit creatures beat the dragon skin battle drums, blew the dragon bone battle horns, and approached from every direction, along with a strong aura of killing.

Among these water-kind spirit creatures were large groups of human warriors, heavily armored, with their faces covered with visors. These human warriors were mixed with the water-kind army, hiding while measuring that food transport troop with their eyes.

Chapter 1057: The Bottom-line

Greediness... Those water-kind spirit creatures weren't trying to hide their greediness at all. They pounced on the transport troop of Tushan Family like starving wild dogs.

Human warriors mixed in the water-kind army had their eyes sparkling. They hid their strong and sturdy bodies in the groups of water-kind creatures, while reaching their heads out and throwing complicated glances at the transportation troops.

The sound of waves grew louder and louder. Long and heavy breathing noises let out by those water-kind spirit creatures swept across the water surface like a hurricane. They greedily looked at the troops, looked at those mountain-like piles of food, then looked at those enormous spirit turtles and whales pulling the floating cities.

"Brothers! Do it! Take as much as you want! All your harvests will belong to no one else but yourself!" A giant water-kind spirit creature raised his trident fiercely and growled out. This water-kind creature was nearly a hundred meters tall, and had tens of tentacles wriggling on his face. "Take all that food! Eat those people! Eat all of them!"

"Ba*stard, half of that food belongs to us!" A tall and slim man who stood in a group of water-kind spirit creatures shouted in anger. This man was wearing a black leather cloak, that covered his entire body. Obviously, he didn't want to reveal his identity. Nevertheless, the longbow carried in his hand and the quiver tied around his waist, along with the special power vibration he released, told everyone that he was from the Eastern Wasteland!

His shouts sounded incredibly weak among the waves of crazy cheers bursting from those water-kind spirit creatures. Those water-kind spirit creatures didn't pay any attention to him. Hundreds of giant spirit creatures transformed back into their

original shapes, raised mountain-like waves, and marched towards the transport troop.

Countless water-kind spirit creatures stood on the waves, following behind those giant spirit creatures. They had already sensed the aroma of the wine and meat from the transport troop... But of course, in comparison to the food shipped by the troop, they cared more about the troop itself.

How could dry meat taste better than fresh human meat? To spirit creatures, human blood and human flesh had high nutritional value, especially the blood and flesh of human warriors, rich in strong spirit blood and life-force. By eating a human leg, a major improvement could be delivered to a spirit creature.

"Eat them all, eat them all!"

They didn’t only want to eat all the food shipped by the transport troop of Tushan Family, they also intended to swallow every last Tushan Family person on the scene.

"Bunch of poor idiots!" Tushan old man stood on the turtle’s head and angrily looked at those water-kind spirit creatures, who were in coarse clothes. He snorted coldly, then swung his arm backward.

Hundreds of different sized Yu Clan divine towers emerged from the transport troop. Inside each divine tower, magic crystals were burning in magic crystal boilers. Mountain-like piles of magic crystals were soon transformed into energy, surging into the complicated spell symbol and magic talisman groups in each tower.

Buzzing noises were started. Splendidly shining erect eyes shone on top of each divine tower, releasing large streams of colorful light that quickly wove into a thick and glaring defensive magic screen in the air.

The transport troop was entirely wrapped up. Tens of giant water-kind spirit creatures rushed too fast and didn’t manage to stop timely. As a consequence, their heads bumped into the magic screen and generated muffled thunders. Thousands of water-tank-sized thunderbolts burst from the magic screen and struck on the bodies of these giant spirit creatures.

Struck by the thunderbolts, the tens of giant spirit creature shivered intensively. They straightened their bodies and howled hoarsely towards the sky.

Rumbling thunders didn’t stop. Fierce thunderbolts descended from the sky without an end, landing on the bodies of those giant spirit creatures like enormous sharp swords. They left bone-deep slashes on their bodies and crushed their skins and muscles.

"You idiots have to understand one thing. With money, you can even hire gods!" Tushan old man held his hands behind his body, stood on the turtle’s head, and said while smiling faintly, "With enough money, you can buy anything, such as... Divine towers from Yu Clan...Although each year, not too many divine towers will be sneakily sold by those money-mad Xiu Clan masters, we’ve been buying from them for so many years. Therefore, our Tushan Family have plenty of divine towers."

Tushan old man smiled calmly and carelessly, while the tens of giant spirit creatures were almost burned to death. Those spirit creatures weakly turned around and attempted to run with all of their remaining strength.

A series of creaking noise came from a distance. Over a thousand spirit turtle abruptly largely opened their jaws. Standing in their huge, cave-like mouths, were fort-breaking catapults, sparkling with cold light and releasing fierce power vibrations. Before those giant spirit creatures could do anything to dodge, earth-shaking booms could be heard. All catapults fired almost simultaneously.

Water-tank-thick, nine-meters-long arrows were shot out. These

extra large arrows were entirely made from magic crystals, and pierced deeply into the bodies of those giant spirit creatures, followed by strong gusts of wind.

Countless dazzling spell symbols sparkled on these extra large arrows, which then exploded. Spheres of thunder-flame and thunderbolts burst inside those spirit creatures' bodies, banging thunderously, even damaging people's ears with the sound. Destructive impact waves landed on the water surface and crushed countless water-kind spirit creatures hiding in the water. Instantly, blood dyed the water red.

Tens of Divine-Magus-level giant spirit creatures screamed heartbreakingly. Each of them had half of their body destroyed by the explosion, that seriously consumed their spirit blood. They howled weakly while fleeing away with difficulty.

This brutal scene frightened those relatively weaker water-kind spirit creatures, who didn't have much of battle experiences. These water-kind spirit creatures were made to hide in those water worlds by Gong Gong. Ever since they were born, they had been safely and leisurely resting in those water worlds, and never let out any blood.

Tushan Family troops severely wounded those giant spirit creatures with large-scale weapons, and such a cruel scene softened the limbs of those smaller sized water-kind spirit creatures. They were stunned, stood in the water as they forgot what to do.

A minute ago, these water-kind spirit creatures were swollen with arrogance. But now, they all had their mouths shut. However, human warriors mixed in the water-kind army reacted pretty fast.

Nearly a hundred-thousand heavily armored human warriors quickly gathered together, pulled out their bows, and cast a strange spell with deep voices simultaneously. From their bodies, sharp beams of arrow light reached to the sky. Looking down from above, the formation of these human warriors looked like a flying

arrow.

The one with a black leather cloak, who shouted loudly at those water-kind spirit creatures earlier, pulled his bow open and cast a resonant growl. Following his voice, the arrow light released from nearly a hundred-thousand human warriors transformed into dazzling light streams, ceaselessly merging into his bow.

"Eastern Wasteland arrow formation!" Tushan old man's eye corners twitched in rage. "You b*stards! For power, for benefits, are you going to leave those people in Pu Ban City to die?!" shouted Tushan old man furiously.

"For the throne, what's the big deal to let a few lowly people die?" The man in a leather cloak laughed coldly as he loosened his fingers and released an arrow.

From around fifty miles away, a three-thousand-meters long beam of arrow light broke the space and accurately pierced into the defensive magic screen created by divine towers, right in front of Tushan old man. A black space crack was left in the sky.

Pop! The magic screen was penetrated by the arrow light. The arrow light flashed across the air and reached Tushan old man's face.

Chapter 1058: Interceptions

After receiving Tushan old man's message, Ji Hao darted out of Pu Ban City the first.

The golden bridge transformed into a golden beam of light, flashing in the sky. However, before Ji Hao reached ten-thousand-meter high, an iceberg smashed straight down, forcing him to stop.

The dark blue iceberg was transparent and crystalline, hundred-miles wide, and had been releasing a fierce cold power. The iceberg descended towards Ji Hao's head, and the strong airstreams it generated even made Ji Hao close his eyes.

Snorting coldly, Ji Hao punched at the iceberg.

The fifth turn of the cultivation method with nine turns was activated. A dragon-like strong strength burst from his body. Along with a slight bone creaking noise, Ji Hao grew three-feet taller. He put forth all the strength through his arms, which swelled and turned as thick as normal people's waists.

The heavy punch generated by pure physical strength landed on the iceberg and caused a sky-shattering bang. A few screams came from a distance away, while the iceberg collapsed, turned into fine ice crystals, dissipating in the air.

Hailstones started falling from the sky above Pu Ban City. The iceberg was shattered, and the strong cold power contained in it was released, spreading, frozen raindrops in the air. It turned the raindrops into fist-sized hailstones, which came roaring down.

Ji Hao threw a cold glance where the screams came from. He snorted again coldly. The golden bridge shone with a golden light and carried Ji Hao and tens of elite warriors under Emperor Shun's command, flying eastward.

From the higher sky, a loud cracking noise could be heard. Tens of streams of water pouring down from a dark cloud suddenly

froze into ice. Meanwhile, a strong spirit creature power vibration spread wave after wave. White ice scales quickly grew out on those frozen water streams. Within a blink of an eye, those frozen water streams turned into tens of enormous ice dragons. They roared hissingly while pouncing on Ji Hao.

At the same time, numerous extremely thin streams of water emerged above Ji Hao's head. These thin water streams were coiled by cold airstreams. They wove together and glowed with a dim light, forming into a large dense web. These thin water streams seemed to be harmless, but if one looked closer, he would find that every single one of these water streams was actually especially sharp, no worse than any top-grade weapon.

By bumping into this large web woven from these thin water streams, any ordinary human beings would be cut into thousands of pieces.

"Impressive!" Ji Hao grinned coldly. Opening his mouth, he let out the Taiji divine sword. Same as before, the sword transformed into a coiling black and white stream, spinning like a drill, instantly penetrating all the ice dragons.

A strong yet faintly visible airstream was released from the sword, with countless spell symbols dimly sparkling in it. Suddenly, all those ice dragons struck by the sword began burning. The golden flame lingered on those ice dragons, burning ragingly. Meanwhile, the tongue of flame reached upward through the air.

Far away, someone cried out in alarm in a dark cloud. The essence sun fire released from the Taiji divine sword had actually reached the attacker within a few seconds, who hid in the dark cloud, through the connection between the attacker and those ice dragons.

A few hideous giant spirit creatures rushed out of the dark cloud while crying and howling in pain. A strong cold power was released from their body, but the golden essence sun fire lingered

on their bodies, burning violently. They boosted up their powers as much as possible, trying to cover their bodies with ice. However, the harder they tried, the more rapidly the fire burned.

Within a couple of breaths, the few spirit creatures were burned into strands of ash, drifting away in the air.

Those ice dragons disintegrated, and those thin water streams disappeared. Ji Hao gave a cold snort once again, took back the sword and let out the Pan Gu bell. He activated the golden bridge and flashed to the east.

In that dark cloud, countless man-shaped silhouettes were faintly visible. However, Ji Hao's essence sun fire was way too terrifying. That purely positive power was like a natural disaster to all spirit creatures, making them feel extremely unsafe.

Countless water-kind spirit creatures watched Ji Hao flying away. Yet, none of them did anything to stop him.

Galloping all the way, the golden bridge flashed over a thousand miles away in a twinkling of an eye. Many reckless water-kind spirit creatures showed up on the way, waving their simple low-grade weapons while treading on watery clouds, trying to stop Ji Hao. Ji Hao didn't even move his little finger. Instead, he let the Pan Gu bell float above his head, bumping forward. All water-kind spirit creature who dared to stand in his way were crushed, and none of them survived.

"A bunch of idiots!" Heng Xing excitedly stood behind Ji Hao with his eyes popped out, looking at the blood of those water-kind spirit creatures splash all over the sky. "Hah, my master is so powerful. Kill more, I'm just hungry!"

Thrusting out his hand swiftly, Heng Xing grabbed over a tens of meters long crocodile tail from the air. He grinned, held the long and thick tail with both arms, and began wolfing. That made his own body be covered in blood, making him look quite scary.

Ji Hao curved his mouth corners down, prepared to teach Heng Xing some table manners. But suddenly, over a thousand arm-thick silver chains drilled out from the dark cloud in the front, roaring over. A strong metal power spread from these chains, transformed into visible translucent weapons hovering around those chains.

Followed by a loud series of metal clangs, those chains interwove and formed another dense giant web in front of Ji Hao.

Ji Hao bumped into that web directly. The Pan Gu bell sent up a dazzling puff of fire sparkles against the web. Friction forces were caused between those chains, which generated water-tank-sized spheres of thunderbolts, striking on the bell.

Ji Hao couldn't tell what those chains were made from. The Pan Gu bell was a powerful supreme magic treasure, but it only managed to leave some deep scratches on those chains, and failed to break any of them. Within a blink of an eye, the strong metal power gathered over from all directions. As those chains absorbed the metal power, those scratches and cracks caused by the bell disappeared speedily.

Deep roars came from the dark cloud. An eighteen-meter tall muscular man slowly descended from the dark cloud. This man was wearing a thick dragon-skin armor, with his face covered in a piece of dragon-skin that had two holes in the eye area.

"Who are you?" Ji Hao quickly took a circle around this man with his spirit power. This man had his face covered, but the sense of power released from his body was strong and familiar. This was a pure-blood Taotie, and judging by his power, he should be a rather important figure in the Taotie Clan in Western Wasteland.

This man didn't want Ji Hao to see his face. Therefore, it was highly possible that he was one of the few Taotie Clan elders stationed in Pu Ban City!

Western Wasteland was infertile, and this was a well-known

truth. For this reason, all large Western Wasteland clans were underpopulated. Because of this, they had many demands to the alliance of human clans. Therefore, these large Western Wasteland clans always had good relationships with human leaders in Pu Ban City.

A Taotie popped out in his way, so Ji Hao gave up on the first question he asked. Instead, he straightforwardly threw out another question, "How much they pay you to make you come stop me? Taotie, how much they paid you? I'll double it!"

Taotie's body slightly quaked, then he responded with a muffled voice, "Do you...Do you know me?"

Ji Hao showed the whites of his eyes and said straightforwardly, "Step aside. After this is over, go to my palace. No matter how much they paid you, I'll double it!"

Taotie clicked his lips, hesitated for a second, then abruptly laughed hollowly and said, "I...In fact, I came to help you, Earl Yao!"

Taotie, A mythical ferocious creature, one of the four evil fiends in Chinese mythology. In ancient Chinese mythology like "Classic of Mountains and Seas", taotie (饕餮) is one of the "four evil creatures of the world" or four fiends along with Hundun (Chaos beast), Qiongqi (Qiongqi beast) and Taowu (梼杌).On the opposite side, there are Four Holy Creatures in Chinese mythology which are called Azure Dragon, Vermilion Bird, White Tiger and Xuanwu（black tortoise).

Chapter 1059: Hou Tu and Gong Gong

The Jia Clan warrior standing behind Tushan old man took a sideway step, raised a hexagon-shaped golden shield with both arms, and blocked the arrow light.

The sword formation gathered all the strength of nearly a hundred thousand Eastern Wasteland archers and generated the arrow light, which was powerful enough to kill a God. The defensive magic screen created by hundreds of divine towers was easily penetrated, which clearly proved the powerfulness of the sword light.

The golden shield was coiled around by flowing streams of light. From the shield, hexagon-shaped halos spread out wave after wave like water. They transformed into a golden sphere and wrapped around Tushan old man and the Jia Clan warrior.

The arrow light spun swiftly, drilling into the shield. The Jia Clan warrior was as sturdy as a mountain. He raised the shield with both arms and stayed perfectly moveless. Blood veins bulged from his arms one after another, while his four eyes shone brightly with a fierce light. Four beams of blood-red-light dazzled out from his eyes and reached three feet away, making him look like a wild beast, strong and brutal.

"Break!"

The Jia Clan warrior roared in fury. He pulled out a golden machete from his waist and hacked heavily on the arrow light.

A thunderous bang was generated. The arrow light generated by the Eastern Wasteland sword formation was cut by him. The arrow light disintegrated and transformed into countless fierce gusts of wind, blowing everywhere, shaking the splendidly glowing defensive magic formation.

"Tushan Zun, good job!" Tushan old man gently patted on the

knee of that Jia Clan warrior, and grinned in satisfaction, "With you, I shall worry nothing, haha!"

Tushan Zun let out a heavy, scorching breath. With his right hand, he carried the large shield, which was as tall as himself, left hand gritted that three-meter-long large machete. Showed his teeth, this strong Jia Clan warrior burst with a resonant roar towards those dumbfounded Eastern Wasteland archers.

This roar sounded like tens of thousands of thunder bursting simultaneously. Overwhelming sound waves spread out and raised mountain-like waves. Countless water-kind spirit creatures were hiding in the water, yelling and shouting. But as the waves were raised, their bodies exploded one after another. Within the area thirty-mile in radius, all water-kind spirit creatures were shattered by a roar of Tushan Zun. The water was already dyed red by blood, and after the roar, the redness turned even darker.

Roaring waves flooded towards the Eastern Wasteland formation. The eastern Wasteland warriors with a leather cloak stood in the front of the formation. He growled out furiously and released a sharp power vibration that split the tremendous waves like a sharp sword. Afterward, he slightly quivered and staggered two steps backward. Large streams of blood flowed out from under his visor. Apparently, he was wounded by the resonant roar of Tushan Zun.

"I am Tushan Zun, at the stage of sun and moon!" Tushan Zun clanged his chest with the hilt of the machete, laughed wildly out and growled, "Who dares to taste my machete?"

The Eastern Wasteland archer with a leather cloak remained silent, while those water-kind spirit creatures near Tushan old man’s spirit turtle, turned around immediately, raised a series of waves, and fled desperately.

Technically, the stage of sun and moon equaled to the level of Supreme Magus. Jia Clan warriors were born strong, perfectly

gifted. Once a Jia Clan warrior reached the stage of sun and moon, he could be like a meat grinder in any battle. Human Supreme Magi were supported by the natural laws of Pan Gu world, that allowed them to strengthen themselves with the powers of real stars. Otherwise, human Magi would be at a lower grade than Jia Clan warriors at the stage of sun and moon.

Tushan old man’s bodyguard was actually a sun and moon stage Jia Clan warrior!

"What's the big deal of being rich?" The Eastern Wasteland archer with a leather cloak cursed angrily. Just now, he was wounded by nothing but a roar of Tushan Zun. Tushan Family people were not strong fighters. Tushan Zun was Tushan old man’s bodyguard. Clearly, this had everything to do with Tushan Family’s money!

"I love to hear that the most!" Tushan old man grinningly nodded to that archer and said, "I am rich. Our Tushan Family is the richest family in the world. We are rich indeed, and we can hire many many powerful beings to protect us. Whatever you say!"

Chuckling coldly, Tushan old man pointed at that archer, and said, "I am sending the food to Pu Ban City to save people in there, so that they don’t have to starve to death! You young people, you’re too heartless. You wanted to destroy all these food. Where is your conscience? Did you feed your hearts to dogs?"

The archer turned his eyes away. But abruptly, he laughed out loud coldly, and said, "I’m not the only one doing this...What are you waiting for? A show? Or, are you gonna give up the great opportunity to Si Wen Ming?"

From the water-kind army in the surroundings, troops of heavily armored human warriors emerged, all with faces covered by visors. Obviously, these warriors were divided into seven to eight groups. They came from different directions, and had their sparkling eyes fixed on Tushan old man.

Tushan old man lowered his eyelids, sighed slightly, and said, "Hehe, this is interesting. If I capture you all alive and send you back to Pu Ban City, would those people behind you still be shameless enough to live?"

A strong warrior wielded the large axe held in his hand, and said in a deep voice, "Therefore, old man, we can't let you go to Pu Ban City alive. As long as we chop you into pieces in here, and kill every last one under your command, who would know what happened in this place?" While speaking, a strong power vibration released from his body.

A spinning yellow-colored dense mist rose from behind a dark cloud like a yellow dragon, diving straight down from the heaven. From the yellow mist, Hou Tu reached out his upper body, then threw a punch down toward Tushan old man, without saying a word.

Tushan Zun roared out in rage and raised the shield with his left hand, shielding Tushan old man under. Hou Tu's fist shattered the defensive magic talisman created by divine towers and heavily landed on the shield. Tushan Zhun's body suddenly sank, as a dreadfully strong force went through his body.

Followed by a thunderous bang, the spirit turtle that Tushan old man and Tushan Zun mounted on screamed shrilly. Next, its enormous head exploded. The strong force that came through Tushan Zun's body blew up the turtle's head.

Tushan old man flashed across the air like a bolt of lightning. When the explosion happened, he had already moved to the central area of the transport troop. Tens of heavily armored elite warriors immediately surrounded him. Tushan old man looked at Tushan Zun and shouted harshly, "Zun, fight with full power. Don't worry about me!"

Tushan Zun nodded heavily. Holding in his right hand, the machete magically sparkled and sliced across Hou Tu's chest,

leaving an arc-shaped, dazzling stream of blade light.

Hou Tu didn’t manage to dodge. A big half of his chest was cut open by Tushan Zun, as large streams of golden sticky blood spurted out from his body. Hou Tu roared in pain. An enormous dense yellow cloud rolling down from the sky wrapped up Tushan Zun and himself.

"Together!" That Eastern Wasteland archer shouted out loud. "I don’t believe that this old man has two Supreme Magi guards! Let’s do it together! Chop this old guy! Then we can split the food evenly!"

Groups of human warriors burst with thunderous roars, mixed with those water-kind spirit creatures, and marched to the transport troop.

Dark cloud gathered in the sky, within which, an enormous silhouette was faintly visible.

Gradually, that silhouette turned clearer and clearer. That was a magical creature, with the upper body of a muscular, strong man, and the lower body as a black dragon tail. He had a pair of dragon horns on the forehead, coiled by streams of watery light.

This man lowered his head, glanced at the transport troop, then gently waved his hands. The action of his raised sky-devouring waves, smashing down towards the transport troop in an unstoppable way.

"Hou Tu, I am Gong Gong. I’m here to help you!"

Chapter 1060: Food Again

Tao Sha was the name of that Taotie Clan elder, and was a bit shameless.

As a pure-blood Taotie, Tao Sha held a highly important position in his clan. He was the totem of his clan. More importantly, he was a truly powerful, core elder of that large clan.

Standing on the golden bridge, Tao Sha rested his hands on his hips and murmured with a muffled voice, "Earl Yao, you can't lie to me. They promised me a large quantity of food. Will you really double it? Hehe, we are Taotie Clan, we won't be fooled!"

Giving Tao Sha a side glance, Ji Hao responded impatiently, "Of course I'll double it. Even if my Yao Mountain territory can't afford it, we have Tushan Family on our side. Are you afraid that Tushan Family don't have enough food?"

Tao Sha tilted his head and pondered for a while. He seemed to think Ji Hao's words were reasonable, as he let out a long breath in relief, and laughed happily, "This is making sense. Hehe, Si Wen Ming, that kid, he is Tushan old man's son in law!" Clicking his tongue, Tao Sha continued, "Eh, I was too anxious. I must have lost my mind back then. Why did I accept their offer? I should have gone straight to Si Wen Ming!"

Clicking his tongue once again, Tao Sha took out a thumb-sized silver chain, which was glowing with a sharp cold light. He gently stroked the chain, seeming to be quite sad.

The power vibration released from the chain was especially sharp, such that Ji Hao felt like being pricked by needles even from the distance. This chain was such a fierce weapon that ordinary people could never get anywhere near it, because they would definitely be shred into pieces by its power vibration.

"This is?" Ji Hao asked curiously.

"Taotie teeth!" Tao Cha coiled that long chain around his left hand and responded with his muffled voice, "The greatest treasure of our Taotie Clan. It was a nature-crafted chain, and the teeth of generations of our Taotie ancestors were pulled out by their descendants after they died, melted and merged with it. It’s a pre-world magic treasure!"

Tao Sha frowningly touched the few slight scratches on the chain, as if he were suffering a heartache. Then, he looked at Ji Hao from head to toe, said, "Where did you get that bloody bell of yours? We have inherited our ancestor's memories through our bloodline, but we have no impression of that bell. Eh, Taotie teeth only bumped against it for a few times. How can it be scratched like a piece of iron?"

Ji Hao chuckled, not wanting to answer this question. Instead, he asked straightforwardly, "Who hired you to stop me?"

Taotie blinked his eyes, laughed hollowly, slapped his chest and said, "Earl Yao, you doubled the quantity of the food for our Taotie Clan, and I sincerely appreciate you. So, I will fight for you. But, as for the one hired me earlier, I truly can’t tell you his name. I’ve already lost half of this old face of mine. I can’t bear to lose all of it, can I? I did it for no one but those children in my clan... Hehe, otherwise..."

Shaking his head, Tao Sha pointed at Pu Ban City and continued coldly, "I’m not the only one. Many people are still waiting out there. I was here to stop you, while some others went for Si Wen Ming’s troop!"

Ji Hao’s face turned dark. Didn’t those people go too far? He couldn’t help but shout in anger, "What do they want? Are they truly going to tear the humankind apart, make all human beings homeless, and become slaves of the water-kind?"

Tao Sha remained silent for a while, then sighed heavily, and said, "I don’t know what do they want. Our Western Wasteland is

poor. We never had too much food stored in our clan. If we don’t do whatever we can to get some food back soon...I’m afraid those children would all starve to death!"

Spreading his hands, Tao Cha said blandly, "People are dying. Humankind is falling apart...Hehe, whatever it is, fill our stomachs and survive, isn’t this the most important thing?"

Ji Hao stayed silent, boosted up the power of the golden bridge, and raised the flying speed.

Tao Cha and the others who came to stop Ji Hao, their words may not be pleasant to hear, but they were telling the truth.

Western Wasteland had the richest metal power in the world. Because of the high density of the metal power, the lands in there could barely grow crops. Therefore, Western Wasteland had been poor since always. Although mineral resources were rich, the food was extremely scanty. Basically, no family could have the food for tomorrow.

In peaceful days, strong Western Wasteland clans such as Taotie Clan, Zhuwu Clan, Chaos Clan, could sell mineral resources to clans from Midland and the other three Wastelands, to trade for food and daily necessities. But the flood came so suddenly that it left no time for the humankind to prepare anything. Even the food stored in Pu Ban City was no longer enough, not to mention those Western Wasteland clans.

As Tao Sha said, if they couldn’t bring back some food as soon as possible, those Western Wasteland people would truly starve to death. In order to save his people, Tao Sha covered his face and came to try to stop Ji Hao. However, he didn't send out the Taotie army to loot around the world. This was already law-abiding, could even be counted as moral.

"We will have food!" Ji Hao looked at Tao Sha and said word by word, "The flood will soon be past...Whoever started this, we will make them pay!"

A strong gust roared down from the higher sky, following which, an extremely sharp pair of claws reached fiercely down towards the golden bridge.

Ji Hao raised his head. Above in the sky was an enormous golden-wing roc bird. Standing on the birds' head was a strong man, whose face was covered in leather, and body wrapped in a coarse piece of cloth.

"Duo!" Ji Hao activated the Pan Gu bell and released a stream of Chaos power that surrounded the golden bridge. The bird's claw heavily landed on the Pan Gu bell and generated a thunderous bang. Fire sparkles rose from the rock's claws, but the Chaos power streams released from the bell didn't even move.

The roc bird screamed furiously. Its eyes dazzled with two beams of golden light, piercing towards the Pan Gu bell like a pair of swords.

Following a sizzling noise, the two sharp beams of light cut on the bell. Fire sparkles flew all over the sky, yet, the bell remained perfectly unharmed.

"Ah!" The man standing on the birds' head growled thunderously and wielded his pair of arms. Two water-tank-sized, sawtoothed flying wheels swished down, glowing with a cold light as they whirled swiftly around the bell.

A buzzing noise could be heard without an end. The pair of flying wheels left long streaks of fiery light in the air. On the surface of the Pan Gu bell, patterns of clouds sparkled, under the effect of which, the pair of flying wheels failed to cause any harm to the bell either.

Tao Sha gave a heavy sigh, raised his head, and shouted, "Old bird, stop fighting...Earl Yao is generous, he promised us double quantities of food. Hehe, why would we fight him? We can fight for Earl Yao together...He doubled the food, double!"

The strong man standing on the bird’s head quivered, then lowered his head and looked at Ji Hao. The man abruptly puffed off the piece of leather wrapped on his face and showed a cold and square face.

That serious face had been twitching unnaturally. This man stared at Ji Hao for quite a while, then finally squeezed out an embarrassed smile and said, "Earl Yao, what a coincidence that we ran into each other! Where’re you going? As long as we can get food, we’ll do anything!"

Tao Sha smirked, while the man laughed hollowly.

Ji Hao gave a bitter grin. Food, food again. The shortage of food had been driving these clan elders crazy.

Chapter 1061: Trap Gong Gong with the Bell

"Double, I'll double the food! I'll give you double quantities of food!"

All the way, Ji Hao said the same thing over ten times. Those clan elders from poor Western Wasteland clans who came to stop Ji Hao all shamelessly switched side and followed Ji Hao with serious looks, to offer help.

None of these elders were weaker than Tao Sha. Two of them were even much older and strong than Tao Sha. Those two were in the human army led by Emperor Xuanyuan. They had even attended a frontal battle against Chi You Army, which was commanded by the real Chi You.

Facing the strong individual strengths of these elders, added with their powerful supreme magic treasures, if Ji Hao didn't decisively promise them double quantity of food, he wouldn't be able to avoid their interceptions easily, even if he had a few supreme magic treasures.

The golden bridge was fully activated, then transformed into a hundreds of meters long, clear golden light, flashing across the sky. With those elders and around two-hundred elite warriors under their commands, Ji Hao galloped to the food transport troop from Tushan Family at his highest speed.

From the distance, Ji Hao had already seen Tushan Zun and Hou Tu, who were fighting intensively in the air.

Tushan Zun had the shield in his left hand and the machete in his right. The amazing talent of battling that belonged specially to Jia Clan people was put to full use by him. The machete in his hand looked like a soul-taking devil; every time it flashed across the air, it would definitely leave a bone-deep wound on Hou Tu's body.

Hou Tu was 'hatched' in the Divine Origin Pool not long ago. He

was generated by the great Dao of Pan Gu world, and was incredibly powerful. Every single move made by him was supported by the tremendous natural power. However, as he was newborn and wasn't conscious as he was supposed to be, his battling skill was indescribably poor.

Facing Tushan Zun's especially effective attacks, Hou Tu looked like a drunk man who tried to smash a nimble flea with a giant rock. Hou Tu divine seal and the other few divine treasures with the nature of earth had been hovering in the sky in disorder, yet none of them could touch even a hair of Tushan Zun.

For quite a few times, Tushan Zun nearly beheaded Hou Tu right on the spot. Fortunately, Hou Tu had an incredibly strong defensive power. Supported by the natural law of Pan Gu world, his life-force was also amazingly strong, which allowed him to survive Tushan Zun's lethal attacks.

From the sky, yellow-colored blood splashed down without an end. Hou Tu was wounded by Tushan Zun over and over again. His body was enormous, and his blood shed like fountains. His blood fell into the water and sank straight to the bottom, looking like golden beads.

Countless water-kind spirit creatures crazily rushed up, fighting each other over the divine blood shed from Hou Tu's body. Occasionally, a water-kind spirit creature could find a drop of divine blood and swallow it immediately.

How could these weak spirit creature ever withstand the divine power of Hou Tu? Mountain-like earth power erupted and detonated the bodies of countless spirit creatures. Their blood dyed the water red again. Instantly, the water-kind army was thrown into Chaos.

Dark clouds rolled down from the sky. The divine God, who called himself Gong Gong, descended from the air. He glanced at Hou Tu blandly, who was being beaten violently by Tushan Zun,

then took a half circle in the air and avoided them. He unhurriedly reached above the food transport troop.

"Don’t panic. Combine your powers and attack the transport troop!" From Gong Gong’s eyes, two streams of black mist puffed out, reaching thousands of meters away, wriggling in the air like a pair of black flood dragons. He growled resonantly in a harsh tone while pointing his right forefinger at Tushan old man.

"Their blood, their flesh, are all your food. Do it together... What are you waiting for?" Gong Gong roared out shrilly while waving his hands towards the water surface. A pair of thousands of meters long water dragons rose from the water, flew up into the sky along with an eye-piercing swishing noise, and soon reached to tens of thousands of meters high. Then, they smashed down overwhelmingly towards the defensive magic screen created by the divine towers.

The pair of water dragons were like two long and strong whips that lashed on the magic screen, created by hundreds of divine towers.

The thunderous booms disabled warriors under Tushan old man’s command from steadying their own bodies. Millions of whales roared out and created destructive sound waves that transformed into visible white air blasts, spreading out. Immediately, countless water-kind spirit creatures who had approached the transport troop exploded.

The pair of water dragons surged, shaking the defensive magic screen. Countless thin cracks appeared on the splendidly shining magic screen. Along with earth-shaking explosive sounds, ten of the smallest divine towers couldn’t bear the heavy load. They let out raging flames and exploded.

The explosions of the ten small divine towers affected the whole area with a radius of tens of miles.

Around ten floating cities were blown up. Warriors guarding in

those floating cities were sent far away. They howled, screamed, as many of them were shattered in smoke and fire sparkles.

Sacks of food flew into the sky. Sacks were broken, as golden grains sprinkled like a heavy rain.

These grains were cooked immediately by the high air temperature. A thick aroma spread through the air, making people drool.

Hundreds of whales were also sent flying up by the series of explosion, screaming in the sky. Their enormous bodies were sent to hundreds of miles away, landing on floating cities and causing more chaos.

"Hou Tu....Gong Gong..." Tushan old man raised his head, looking at the two true Gods, shouted in confusion, "You are fallen, ancient Gods. You shouldn’t be alive!"

Gong Gong lowered his head. Two immeasurably deep swirls had been spinning in his pair of eyes as he said, "Mortal people...Kneel, give me all you have, just like your ancestors, who kneeled under our feet. You kneeled once, and you shall continue kneeling."

Gong Gong sounded a bit evil and vicious as he continued, "These standing mortal beings are so annoying. I truly want to strangle them all!"

A clear golden light split the space and flashed over. Ji Hao gave a resonant roar, left Tao Sha and the others on the golden bridge, and darted towards Gong Gong alone.

Gong Gong scornfully turned around and cast a cold glance at Ji Hao, then conveniently pointed his finger at him. Following his move, a dark ice spear swished out from the air, stabbing towards Ji Hao.

Followed by a loud bang, the ice spear bumped on the Pan Gu bell. The ice was hundreds of times harder than steel, yet, it shattered against the bell. Ji Hao slightly shook his body and

continued darting to Gong Gong. Gong Gong turned around in surprise, looking at Ji Hao confusedly.

Ji Hao didn’t give Gong Gong any chance to launch the second move. He pointed his finger out and let the Pan Gu bell spin above his head, releasing a stream of Chaos power. It broke the space and reached to Gong Gong within a blink of an eye.

Chaos powers descended overwhelmingly and turned into a giant cage that enveloped Gong Gong.

Ji Hao looked at Gong Gong, who was stunned by now, sneered and said, "I suddenly remembered that this bell of mine can not only be used for defense, it can also trap the enemies. Indeed a top-grade piece. You’re Gong Gong, right? Come out and hit me if you can!"

Gong Gong paused, then burst with a furious roar. He pulled out a pair of long whips and lashed the bell from the inside, as hard as he could.

Muffled clangs were caused from inside the bell without an end. Gong Gong rang the bell thunderously, generating waves of gray mist, rumbling around himself. Wherever the gray mist reached, everything was destroyed.

The Pan Bu bell rang, and everything back to Chaos.

Gong Gong struck the bell with his greatest effort. By doing this, he had actually been attacking himself through the bell. After around ten bell rings, even his skin had disappeared, exploding his black muscles.

Chapter 1062: Fight the Army Alone

"Break! Break! Break!"

Gong Gong raised the pair of whips and lashed crazily inside the Pan Gu bell.

With Ji Hao's current power, a bell ring generated by him could turn everything within a nine-meter area back into Chaos. Gong Gong was way more powerful than Ji Hao, and a bell ring generated by him with full power was powerful enough to destroy everything within thousand-miles. However, he was trapped inside the bell. Under Ji Hao's control, the bell rings he caused only affected the area meters in radius around him. All the destructive Chaos power was taken by Gong Gong alone.

Gong Gong's skin broke bit by bit; his blood had been shedding, and muscles were falling off. Every time the bell rang, a layer of flesh would disappear from Gong Gong's body. His blood, skin and flesh were turned into gray Chaos mist, absorbed by the bell.

After a hundred bell rings, Gong Gong's body had become like a broken skeleton. In that hundred-meter-tall body of his, many dark, crystal-like bones were exposed; even these bones were thickly covered in thin cracks.

A small black bell floated above Gong Gong's head, releasing streams of black smoke, transforming into dark waves and shielding Gong Gong's body, barely fighting against the power of the Pan Gu bell. After another series of bell rings, a few thin cracks appeared on the black bell as well. Meanwhile, black smoke had been puffing out from the small black bell, turning into sparkling light and merging into those cracks, fixing the bell.

Besides the small bell, a black flag and a black seal floated around the bell. They had also been releasing dense black smoke, creating dark waves to protect Gong Gong.

Gong Gong gasped quickly for air, softly lying down under the dense dark smoke while looking at Ji Hao. His eyes were out of focus.

"What is this? I...I never knew that such a powerful treasure existed in the world...And, I sensed the power of Saint Pan Gu from this bell." Gong Gong looked at Ji Hao and murmured torpidly. "The power of Pan Gu, the holy father..."

"Don't! Please don't!" Ji Hao sneered to Gong Gong and said, "As far as I know, Pan Gu's bloodline is only possessed by the dragon-kind, the phoenix-kind, and the humankind. The dragon-kind inherited Pan Gu's strong body and great strength, the phoenix-kind have the powerful soul, and the humankind is gifted with Pan Gu's thriving bloodline. As for you...You're nothing but a bunch of secondary products created by Pan Gu along with the word. Don't call him father!"

In Ji Hao's spirit space, the mysterious man slowly showed up. Through Ji Hao's eyes, he gave a complicated glance at Gong Gong, chuckled blandly and said, "Compared to the first Water God in the world, this one is so weak. And he has an evil mind... Such a humiliation to Pan Gu. Pan Gu would never want to be his father!"

Gong Gong was so enraged by Ji Hao's words that he couldn't even breath for quite a while.

He stared at Ji Hao with his teeth gnashed tight. A short while later, he burst with a loud growl and shouted, "What are you waiting for?! Kill this boy! Get me out of this bloody bell!"

Gales roared, and dark clouds rolled. Thunders rumbled in the sky, while lightning bolts dazzled down, striking straight to Ji Hao.

Surrounding the food transport troop from Tushan Family, waves rose, layer by layer. The further from the troop, the higher the waves grew. Soon, thousands of waves rose from the water and surrounded Ji Hao and all the others.

The waves closest to the troop were only around three-hundred meters tall, but the furthest waves were tens of thousands of meters tall already.

Standing on those wall-like waves,were countless hideous-looking water-kind spirit creatures, shouting and swaggering. Thousands of enormous spirit creatures released strong power vibrations while treading on waves, approaching Ji Hao.

"Kill! Kill! Kill!"

Sky-shaking roars of those water-kind spirit creatures resounded across the whole world. Countless battle drums were pushed to the tops of waves, beaten violently by strong spirit creatures with oddly-shaped bone sticks. The sounds of drums were heavy and disordered.

"Ji Hao, it’s your chance!" The mysterious man said in Ji Hao’s spirit space. His eyes shone with a vivid blue light, that made Ji Hao’s spirit space look like a beautiful sea. "You do not lack the extreme positive power, but you do lack the extremely negative power...Absorb the life-force of these water-kind spirit creatures. More or less, you will be able to extract some extremely negative power!"

Ji Hao understood what the mysterious man meant. He was cultivated by Priest Dachi based on the great Dao of Taiji. He was not limited on the extremely positive power, but he did lack the extremely negative power. The star of extremely positive power in Pan Gu world was occupied by an unknown powerful being, Normally, it wouldn’t even show up. Therefore, in order to grow extremely negative power, Ji Hao needed to absorb some extremely negative power first, then discover the great Dao of the extremely negative power from it.

The Taiji Universe mirror rose into the sky, followed by a sharp beam of light. A misty white light spread out, instantly covering thousand-miles.

The world seemed to fall into a deathly silence all of a sudden. This was the first time for Ji Hao to fully activate the power of the mirror. He didn't think that such a magical effect would be caused, The entire area was frozen suddenly, and became like a transparent, giant piece of ice. It was all clear and clean, with a soft, mysterious negative power coming from it.

All those fiercely approaching enormous water-kind spirit creatures and swaggering smaller shaped spirit creatures had the nature of water. Because of this, they each had a trace of pre-world extremely negative power hiding in their deepest acupoint.

Ji Hao boosted up the power of the mirror as much as he could. Within the area thousand-miles in radius, the trace of pre-world extremely negative power contained in the body of each of those water-kind spirit creatures was ignited.

A little fire could kindle the forest. The pre-world extremely negative power was that little fire, while the bodies of these water-kind spirit creatures, their blood and flesh, their life-force, and their powers gained through severe cultivations, even their souls, were that great forest!

A gray-white, extremely cold fire burned ragingly. Water-kind spirit creatures within this area cried heartbreakingly, all turned into strangely shaped torches. The grey fire covered their bodies and burned everything inside them.

There were indeed some differences between these spirit creatures. The weaker ones only managed to gave a short cry before they were burned into hair-thin strands of gray-colored extremely negative power, drifting in the air. Those stronger ones, who were at the level of Magus Kings or even Divine Magi, burned for a much longer span of time.

They had great amounts of negative powers inside their bodies. The extremely negative fire slowly purified their bodies and souls, gradually refining the extremely negative power inside them bit by

bit.

The heavy and disordered sounds of drum stopped abruptly. In the distance, on top of layers of wave, the other water-kind spirit creatures were dumbfounded, watching their own kind be swallowed by the white, extremely negative fire.

Gong Gong quivered intensely. In both shock and fear, he stared at Ji Hao, and shouted in a hoarse voice, "The extremely negative power? Can any living being still use this power? You, you... Attack! Attack together! Kill him! Kill him!"

The seal floating above Gong Gong's head buzzed loudly. Next, a black stream of light swept across the water surface in an area hundreds of miles around him.

Countless water-kind spirit creatures couldn't help but roar out, crazily pouncing on Ji Hao.

Tao Sha and the other elders growled thunderously, prepared to rush out and help Ji Hao. But, Ji Hao shouted out loud, "Elders, please stay put. I can deal with these reckless things alone!"

Chapter 1063: Flying Bears Kill

"Such a powerful treasure!" Stunned, Tao Sha looked at the Taiji Universe mirror that floated above Ji Hao's head, glowing like a moon. "How much food can this treasure trade for?"

Besides Tao Sha, all the other elders who once tried to stop Ji Hao had their face twitch. They were shocked, and even had a lingering fear. Meanwhile, they felt so lucky that they didn't start any life-risking fight against Ji Hao, who seemed to own countless supreme magic treasures!

The Taiji Universe mirror shone in the sky. White misty light descended like a drizzle. Under Gong Gong's command, countless water-kind spirit creatures fearlessly marched towards Ji Hao. However, once they entered the area covered by the light of the mirror, they would pause immediately. In the following moment, a gray-white fire would burn from inside their bodies, soon igniting their entire bodies.

Water-kind spirit creatures who were still in their original shapes and looked barely like human beings could last for around a second in the fire. The ones who looked seventy to eighty percent like human beings and were as powerful as ordinary human warriors, could last for a breath. The ones as powerful as human Senior Magi, and looked quite like human beings, could last for three to five breaths. Only those Magus-King-level and Divine-Magus-level spirit creatures, who were mostly enormous in shapes, could last for around a quarter of an hour in the extremely negative power. Their great powers and strong life-forces allowed them to howl and scream in the fire without being killed. While fighting back the soul-deep, heartbreaking pain, they rushed towards Ji Hao for hundreds of miles. But still, before they could approach Ji Hao, they were all turned into puffs of white ash, dissipating in the air.

Differently sized streams of extremely negative power drifted in the air. The Taiji Creation cauldron floated in front of Ji Hao,

released a strong suction force. Streams of extremely negative power flew towards Ji Hao, then be swallowed by the cauldron, started being purified in the cauldron.

Within a small half an hour, at least a million water-kind spirit creatures were burned up by the extremely negative power, without leaving a trace of their souls.

"Terrifying..." A Zhuwu Clan elder brushed the steel-needle-like beard on his chin with his fingers while murmuring with a deep voice, "Ji Hao, this boy hasn't got married, has he?" Clicking his tongue, this elder continued, "Hmm, his territory is broad. I can raise many children, right?"

"If you have girls with big stomachs in your clan, just send them to Ji Hao! It will be nice!" Tao Sha smirked and said, "But, Zhu Rong, that kid likes Ji Hao. Ji Hao is now with Zhu Rong Man Man!"

The group of powerful yet slightly shameless elders glanced at each other, then had their looks turned weird. An elder with white hair, who seemed to be older than the others, clicked his tongue, lowered his voice, and said, "Hmm, he's fast, but it's not too late though! He hasn't got married, which means we still have chance...Even if he is already married, we can still send him a few girls. Zhu Rong Man Man wouldn't just kill them, would she?"

Ji Hao stood in the midair. His left eye had turned purely dark, while his right eye was pale like paper. Between his eyebrows, his erect eye released a bright light that shone from the sky. The extremely negative power had been surging into the Taiji Creation cauldron, while thin streams of purified extremely negative power flowed into his body, merging with his primordial spirit. Gradually and silently, a prehistorical, strange sense of power spread out from his body.

The group of elders had their looks changed again in shock. Tushan old man stood in the transport troop, staring at Ji Hao

with passionately sparkling eyes.

"This sense of power...Hehe, hehe, my younger brother's granddaughter is growing up, ah! I have to talk to Zhu Rong about this when I get back. My younger brother's granddaughter and Zhu Rong Man Man, they can be sisters. It will be so nice!" Tushan old man grinned quite delightfully, but that grin of his had a trace of indescribable seriousness and sadness in it.

The power of sense spreading from Ji Hao's body could only be sensed from those old powerful beings who had been living as true Supreme Magi for countless years. Ji Hao was obviously not as powerful as those mysterious beings. The only explanation of that sense of power was that in both terms of cultivation and potential, Ji Hao was swiftly reaching to the level of those mysterious powerful beings.

"Hmm, as long as Wen Ming can ascend to the throne, with Ji Hao helping him...It will be worth everything!" Tushan Old man grinned even wider, squeezing his eyes into a pair of lines. Countless water-kind spirt creatures screamed before they were burned into ash, but in Tushan old man's ears, this was even more beautiful than any music.

"Kill him!" Under the power of the Taiji Universe mirror, ordinary water-kind spirit creatures couldn't cause any threat to Ji Hao. Seeing this, human warriors mixed in the water-kind army were agitated. The leader of those Eastern Wasteland archers wielded his longbow, pointed at Ji Hao and burst with a growl.

The Eastern Wasteland sword formation was formed once again. Tihs time, all Eastern Wasteland archers bit their tongues broken. Each spat out a mouthful of spirit blood on their bows. A fierce power vibration drilled up into the sky, while dazzling beams of light merged into the leader's bow. A bright arrow light had been compressing, and within a blink of an eye, the arrow light became a nine-feet long, almost tangible arrow.

"Earl Yao Ji Hao, die!"

Followed by a cracking noise, a thumb-thick black space crack appeared in the air. The arrow broke the space and reached to Ji Hao's face instantaneously.

Ji Hao laughed. A beam of light flashed across the Taiji Universe mirror. Immediately, a misty light screen emerged before Ji Hao's face, and in the very next moment, the arrow was teleported back to the leader of Eastern Wasteland archers, piercing into his forehead along with a puffing noise.

The head of that leader was blown up. The arrow gathered the powers of nearly a hundred thousand archers, flew into the formation from the front, and pierced through the entire formation within ten-thousandth of a second.

Thousands of archers had their bodies penetrated by the sharp light. The strong power tore their bodies into pieces, and created a six-feet wide path of blood in the sword formation.

Human bodies exploded one after another. Eastern Wasteland archers roared out, then turned around and fled straightaway.

Shrill horns came from the direction of Pu Ban City. Following that, muffled wing-flapping noises could be heard from the air. Heavily armored flying bears descended from dark clouds. Sitting straight on the backs of these flying bears were You Chong warriors, armed to the teeth and with serious, cold looks.

Flying bear knights pulled their bows open and aimed down, releasing waves of arrows towards those desperately running Eastern Wasteland archers.

Arrows swished down from the sky and punctured those Eastern Wasteland archers' bodies, violently. Before these warriors pulled these arrows out from their bodies, the explosive spell symbols attached to the arrowheads were activated. Those archers' bodies were sent into the sky, torn limb by limb, then fell back down light

shooting stars.

"Kill every last one of them!" Si Wen Ming trod on the head of a winged dragon, pointing down with his long sword as he growled, "They colluded with the water-kind and attempted to destroy the life-saving food of our humankind. They all deserve to die!"

Those flying bear knights hung their strong bows on the hooks tied on their left legs, then pulled out their heavy long spears and roared like beasts, driving down their mounts from the air. Flying bears folded their wings and shot down like stones. Knights lunged their spears, fiercely piercing into those archers who didn't manage to dodge. The shaking long spears tore those archers' bodies into countless bits.

With one dive, almost all Eastern Wasteland archers were crushed. Only three to five hundred luckily survived.

Flying bear knights whistled brightly and rose again into the sky. Next, another troop dove down.

A rain of blood fell, with a strong blood scent brought down by the gales. The attacks launched by those flying bear knights made all human warriors mixed in the water-kind army scream.

"Zhu Rong! What are you waiting for?!" Hou Tu shouted out hysterically after suffering another heavy hack from Tushan Zun.

Chapter 1064: Burn the Cities

Hearing Hou Tu, Ji Hao couldn't help but pause in shock.

Zhu Rong? The true Fire God Zhu Rong? The one from the heaven? Back in Feather Mountain, Ji Hao had destroyed Zhu Rong. Ji Hao destroyed Zhu Rong's soul, and even shattered his divine talisman. But, who was this one called Zhu Rong by Hou Tu?

Just now, struck by the pair of fierce water dragons Gong Gong created, ten small divine towers in the food transport troop exploded, and started a great fire that burned tens of floating cities with food in it. The fire was still burning, and the air was suffused by an aroma of grilling grains.

Tushan Family warriors didn't have the time to fight the fire, and the fire grew stronger and stronger.

Hou Tu growled Zhu Rong's name, and following his voice, a tens of thousands of meters tall, enormous stream of fire swooshed out from a burning floating city. The purple-red fire transformed into a tremendous fire lotus, spreading to all directions. From that enormous fire stream, a thousands of meters tall silhouette darted out.

The upper body of that creature was a muscular man, but the lower body was a fire Qilin. A red seal hovered above his head. An oil lamp was carried in his left hand, and a long sword was gripped in his right hand, coiled by flame. This man opened his mouth and let out a violent wave of flame once he darted out of the fire.

The purple-red flame surged in streams. The fire released by this man was as sticky as glue, lingering forever on the bodies of human warriors, burning their armors, clothes, skins, muscles and bones. Tens of thousands of Tushan Family warriors were wrapped by the fire. They howled, screamed, and rolled on the ground. But no matter how hard they tried, they couldn't put out

the fire.

Some Tushan Family warriors burning by the fire couldn’t bear the great pain anymore. They jumped into the water roaringly. However, the fire remained burning on and inside their bodies, and even the water failed to kill the fire. The howls sounded especially muffled from underwater. The water began boiling, as dense streams began rising.

"You...How did you get in?" Protected by a group of guards, Tushan old man fled away from the fire.

"I can reach anywhere with fire!" The half human and half Qilin man lowered his head, looking at Tushan old man, and responded with a majestic tone, "You set a fire in this place, and the fire is a broad path to me!"

Ji Hao’s eye corner twitched. If what he said was real, if even a candlelight or a torch could become a path for this man to intrude, things would be so out of control. If this were real, in the future, Ji Hao could only use luminous pearls and other luminous gemstones as the source of light in Yao Mountain City. No fire could ever be allowed in the city.

"Damn it. If that’s true, my people won’t even be able to cook food anymore. How can it be? Everyone eating raw meat?" Ji Hao’s scalp numbed slightly. Why was this Zhu Rong so hard to deal with?

From the oil lamp in Zhu Rong’s left hand, streaks of flame had been rising, transforming into fire dragons and roaring in every direction. Wherever those fire dragons landed, the food, the wooden floating cities, those Tushan Family warriors, those whales pulling floating cities and the flood around those whales, were all burned up. Wherever those fire dragons swept across, nothing was left. Slightly touched by those fire dragons, even those divine towers were quickly ignited. Thousands of meters tall divine towers burned ragingly, as spell symbols inside the towers

popped. Soon, around ten divine towers exploded, helping fuel the fire!

"I am Zhu Rong!" The man raised the oil lamp, shouted loudly while releasing the fire. "Mortal beings, you showed no respect to the heaven, no respect to divine Gods. Today, I will clean the mortal world with fire to teach you how to be a decent mortal being!"

Ji Hao sent up the Taiji Universe mirror. A great misty wave of extremely negative power sprayed out.

Along with a puffing noise, the extremely negative power violently broke the defensive magic screen created by the divine towers, transformed into bone-piercing cold gales, and screamed across. The frigid gales clashed intensively against the fire, generating countless mirages of icebergs and oceans of flame. Ji Hao slightly quivered, while the enormous body of that man, who called himself Zhu Rong, shook intensely.

"Are you Zhu Rong?" Ji Hao laughed coldly, "What a joke? I killed Zhu Rong in Feather Mountain!"

"So what?" Zhu Rong raised his head, looked at Ji Hao, and said blandly, "You killed a Zhu Rong, more Zhu Rong will naturally emerge from the heaven! Zhu Rong is not only a forename, it’s also a title...The head of the department of fire in the heaven is Zhu Rong! I am Zhu Rong now!"

Zhu Rong opened his eyes. His glowing-red eyes shone abruptly, followed by two shrill sounds. Two fire bees flew out from Zhu Rong’s eyes. The bees had a size of a water tank, wrapped in purple fire, and flew amazingly fast. They pierced towards Ji Hao along with strong streams of purple fire, like two bolts of lightning.

"What the hell?" Ji Hao growled out and swung his arm backward, pulling out the Taiji divine sword and hacking on the two bees.

The Taiji divine sword easily split the bodies of the two fire bees, but Ji Hao immediately realized that he had been fooled, that he made a mistake. Those two bees exploded. Highly compressed, sticky flame burst from their bodies, and expanded to thousands of miles in radius, turning into a storm of fire as they fell to the ground.

"The food!" Tushan old man screamed out.

"The food! Damn it!" Ji Hao lowered his head. The two fire bees were actually two incredibly powerful fire bombs that were sent out to destroy the food!

The temperature of the purple fire was awfully high. Wherever the purple fire reached, with a slight touch, sacks of food and those wooden floating cities would immediately turn into strands of smoke. Over a thousand floating cities were burned within a blink of an eye, and even those whales were burned into ashes.

Ji Hao growled in fury, approaching Zhu Rong with big steps.

Zhu Rong laughed viciously. From all directions, thousands of divine warriors wearing flame armors emerged, holding large burning flags. As they waved those flags, countless streams of flame gathered in the sky, turning into an ocean of flame as they descended. All the food brought by Tushan old man was going to be swallowed by the fire!

Tushan old man helplessly clapped his hands, sighed slightly and said, "It doesn’t matter...If this installment is burned, I have more coming over."

Ji Hao heard Tushan old man clearly. He took a glance at this old man speechlessly. He didn’t know what to say about the wealthiness of Tushan Family.

The eyes of Tao Sha and the other elders all turned red. That was food! That was food! The food that could save lives! So much food, that was enough for any of their clans to live for months!

"You damned thing!" Tao Sha threw out the Taotie teeth while roaring madly. Thousands of silver chains reaching those divine warriors along with shrill swishing noises.

Ji Hao flashed across the air and reached to the Pan Gu bell. He rang the bell, then pointed at Gong Gong, who was still trapped in Chaos power streams and was severely wounded. He sneered and said, "Take back the fire if you want him to live!"

Before Zhu Rong responded, Ji Hao straightened the Taiji divine sword and fiercely penetrated Gong Gong’s lower belly.

Chapter 1065: A Fire Knows No Morals

Gong Gong's bones were even softened by the Pan Gu bell. He screamed in pain, as his body seemed to be split by the Taiji divine sword. The upper half of his body was cold, like a large piece of ice, frigid and stiff. He couldn't even feel his lower body anymore. As for his upper body, he felt that his upper body was soaking in a stove filled with melted metal. The scorching heat made clouds of steam rise from his body, while thin strands of flame puffed out from his hair. His entire upper body was burned red.

He was the Water God! He was Gong Gong, the Water God! Fire had come out form the body of the Water God, which was against nature, which was killing him! Gong Gong stared at Ji Hao, seemed to cry but failed to shed any tear. He opened his mouth, wanting to talk, but spurted out a long stream of fire.

Zhu Rong paused, and so did Hou Tu, who was still fighting Tushan Zun.

Zhu Rong paused briefly, because a Taotie teeth chain wrapped around his arm. He flicked his arm, and easily threw the chain far away.

Hou Tu paused briefly, and this brief pause nearly got him killed. Tushan Zun seized the opportunity. His large machete created tens of flexible beams of blade light, thickly landing on Hou Tu's neck. A big half of Hou Tu's neck was cut broken, as melted-gold-like marrow splashed out and covered his body, making him look like a golden statue.

Hou Tu screamed out loud and covered his neck with both hands, silently raising a strong yellow wind while he rose into the sky.

Zhu Rong threw a strange side glance at Hou Tu, who was wounded seriously, then looked at Gong Gong, who was still trapped. Next, Zhu Rong raised his right arm high, seeming to order his warrior to destroy all the food.

Unlike those old divine Gods in the heaven, Hou Tu, Zhu Rong and Gong Gong were all newborn. They came out from the Divine Origin Pool not long ago, so

no friendship existed between them at all. Naturally, they wouldn't want to save each other. Besides, fire and the water had always been incompatible, this was the nature. Seeing Gong Gong injured severely, Zhu Rong only wanted to laugh. Why would he ever do anything to help Gong Gong?

A pair of tremendous wings slowly descended from the sky. Kun Peng's hoarse voice echoed through the clouds, "Zhu Rong, slow down...Earl Yao Ji Hao, you again, you came to ruin our great plan again!"

Ji Hao gripped the hilt of the Taiji divine sword and twisted. Tens of Gong Gong's ribs were cut broken by the sword edge. Everybody heard the slight cracking noise coming from Gong Gong's body. Gong Gong looked at Ji Hao in confusion. His lower body had been frozen by the extremely negative power, that he couldn't sense it anymore. Therefore, he didn't feel any pain.

"I ruin your plan?" Ji Hao raised his head and looked at Kun Peng, who covered the sky with a half of his body and said, "Funny. So you're not trying to hurt our humankind? Are we born to be killed by you?"

Kun Peng remained silent for a while, laughed out loud abruptly, and said, "But, it wasn't our idea to attack this food transport troop of yours. Your own people invited us to do this. Otherwise, how would we know about this transport troop? Therefore, you can't blame us for what happened this time!"

Ji Hao had fallen into a strange stalemate. At the time, Si Wen Ming had been bringing those flying bear knights from You Chong Clan to crazily slaughter human warriors mixed in the water-kind army. Countless human warriors were torn into pieces by the long spears of those flying bear knights. Their blood surged out and

flew into the water.

It seemed that Si Wen Ming was truly going to kill every last one of them.

Firstly, these people colluded with the water-kind and attacked the food transport troop from Tushan Family. To all human beings in Pu Ban City, these people had committed a crime. These people were flagitious, that only with death could they atone for their crimes.

Secondly, Si Wen Ming couldn't allow those people to go back to Pu Ban City. Human beings were facing a disaster. Under the current situation, the humankind could never split; all human beings had to stay united as one. If Si Wen Ming let these people return to Pu Ban City alive, their clans would be forced to split from the alliance of human clans.

Therefore, these people must die, and they must die miserably. Even their corpses had to be destroyed, so that their identities could be covered for good.

Si Wen Ming was even doing the job himself. With a batch of winged dragon knights under Emperor Shun's command, Si Wen Ming hunted those human warriors. Some Eastern Wasteland archers luckily survived the attacks launched by those flying bear knights, but soon, Si Wen Ming and those winged dragon knights killed every last one of them. The bodies of those human warriors were all torn into pieces and crushed, so that not even a limb of them remained whole.

Human beings were killing each other, and Ji Hao didn't know how to respond to Kun Peng.

Remaining silent for quite a while, Ji Hao said blandly, "There're always a few heartless ones among us. Disloyal ones exist among your water-kind beings as well, don't they? So, that's not an excuse...You let Zhu Rong take back the fire, then I'll let Gong Gong out."

Kun Peng remained silent for a while and asked cautiously, "Disloyal ones exist among us? Hehe, Ji Hao, Don’t try to sow discord. Our Northern Wasteland people are all loyal to Lord Gong Gong..."

Before he finished, Heng Xing squeezed out of the crowd, proudly transformed back into his original shape as an enormous Henggong fish, opened his jaws, and sent a black stream of water up into the sky. He yelled, "Old Kun Peng, I, Heng Xing, am disloyal to you! What can you do? Can you bite off my balls?"

Kun Peng coughed loudly. Within the dense dark cloud, his pair of enormous eyes suddenly shone as he stared at Heng Xing for quite a while.

A while later, Kun Peng abruptly laughed viciously, "You can kill a Gong Gong, that’ s fine. But without this food, Si Wen Ming can’t be in charge of the flood-control mission. Then, how many people in Pu Ban City will starve to death?"

Tushan old man proudly held his head high and thundered, "Kun Peng, how can you possibly know how rich we are? This food can be burned, it doesn’t matter at all. We can send more, the food of our Tushan Family will never run out!"

Kun Peng paused, then sneered and continued, "No matter how rich you are, how long can you feed all those people for? By now, no land in the world can grow crops. Without the sun, no matter how much food you have in store, it will run out eventually! Sooner or later, all human beings will starve to death!"

"The sun?" Ji Hao paused instantly, then turned around and glanced at the food transport troop. Next, he burst into wild laughter.

"Kun Peng, you’re such a nice man! Gong Gong will thank so much... And so will the humankind!" Ji Hao laughed out loud, then raised the Taiji divine sword and chopped Gong Gong’s head off. He then raised the sword and smashed on the Pan Gu bell with all

his strength.

Gong Gong’s head fell off. From the spot between his eyebrows, a purple-golden stream surged out, within which was a purple divine talisman.

The Pan Gu bell rang, and turned everything near it back into Chaos. Gong Gong’s body collapsed into puffs of smoke and dissipated in the air. The purple divine talisman of his was also turned into a purple strand of mist, being swallowed by the bell.

Ji Hao laughed coldly, wielded the Taiji divine sword and pounced on Zhu Rong. Meanwhile, he shouted, "Brothers! Together! Kill these stupid evil things!"

Heng Xing, Tao Sha and the others burst with thunderous roars, then released their powers and rushed towards those fire divine warriors. Tushan old man paused slightly, then gnashed his teeth and waved his hand. Under his order, the Tushan army marched as well.

Zhu Rong gave an evil grin, then pressed his hands down. Instantly, the transport troop was covered by the ocean of fire. All foods were burned into ashes immediately.

Chapter 1066: The Right Person For The Mission

The sky was covered in dark clouds. Kun Peng flapped his pair of wings and created a hurricane that roared across the great defensive magic formation of Pu Ban City. Kun Peng's heartbreaking roars sounded like a poor orphan, who had just lost an entire family, shrill and sad.

Ji Hao found the perfect way to deal with the divine Gods. He approached them with the golden bridge, then trapped them with the Pan Bu bell. After that, no matter how strong the divine God was, he or she could ever escape, just like rats trapped in iron buckets.

What happened next was Ji Hao banging the bell as hard as he could. Those divine Gods might be incredibly powerful, they might have amazing abilities, but eventually, their bodies would be crushed bit by bit by the Chaos power released from the Pan Gu bell. Their flesh and blood would be absorbed by the bell, and at last, their entire bodies would become nourishment for the bell.

After killing Gong Gong, with the power of the golden bridge, Ji Hao swiftly darted behind Hou Tu, who was severely injured already, and trapped them with the Pan Gu bell. Ji Hao sealed Hou Tu's power with the Taiji Universe mirror, then penetrated his head with the Taiji divine sword, and soon turned him into streams of Chaos mist.

Zhu Rong was the next. He successfully burned all the food brought over by Tushan old man, and had been laughing exaltedly. Even Kun Peng didn't manage to tell him to run before Ji Hao swished across the air and showed up right before his face, covering him with the Pan Gu bell.

Within the span of around ten breaths, Zhu Rong was destroyed by Ji Hao, despite the fact that he wasn't injured at all. None of the

thousands of fire divine warriors survived either.

Kun Peng screamed hoarsely and cursed hysterically, but right in front of him, Ji Hao ignited the extremely negative power contained in the bodies of countless water-kind spirit creatures with the power of the Taiji Universe mirror. The extremely negative fire burned all those water-kind spirit creatures and turned them into pure extremely negative power, which was then absorbed by the Taiji Creation cauldron.

Kun Peng wasn't powerful enough to stop Ji Hao from slaughtering those water-kind spirit creatures. He could only order the ones who were still attacking the transport troop to run.

Without saying anything, Ji Hao sent up the Taiji Universe mirror and launched a lethal attack at Kun Peng. Kun Peng howled in fear and hurriedly darted up into the higher sky, fleeing desperately. He ran too fast. Therefore, Ji Hao gave up on chasing them. Instead, Ji Hao took the transport troop from Tushan Family back to Pu Ban City.

Seeing Ji Hao return to Pu Ban City, Kun Peng couldn't restrain the fire of anger in his heart, as he ragingly rushed to Pu Ban City with a giant group of water-kind spirit creatures. He raised strong waves outside the great defensive magic formation of the city while yelling at Ji Hao, "Ji Hao! This won't go for long! Without the food from Tushan Family, I'd like to know how long it will take you to give up!"

Kun Peng opened his mouth and let out tens of enormous black thunderbolts that struck on the great defensive formation, then barked viciously, "I will be guarding in here myself! Tushan Family won't be able to send a single grain into the city! I'll wait for you to kneel under my feet and beg for mercy after the starvation softens you all!"

People in Pu Ban City all heard him. Those ordinary people were instantly thrown into panic. Unlike them, the leaders of those

large human clans hurriedly rushed to the Town Hall in excitement.

Ji Hao followed Si Wen Ming into the Town Hall. He carried a tray with both hands, and placed on the tray, were Hou Tu divine seal, Zhu Rong divine seal and Gong Gong divine seal. Today, he killed the three true Gods. Without a doubt, the three divine seals all fell into his hands.

Ji Hao gently placed the tray in front of Emperor Shun, took a few steps backward, and didn't say a word.

Si Wen Ming explained the whole thing with the simplest language. Traitors among the humankind colluded with the water-kind and sent an army to attack the food transport troop from Tushan Family, in coordination with the water-kind army. Tushan Family warriors fought back effectively, but Gong Gong then sent down divine Gods from the heaven, who burned all the food from Tushan Family.

The hall fell into a deathly silence. Many people had their eyes fixed on Ji Hao in shock.

Not to mention the food, it had only been a few years since Ji Hao became famous in Pu Ban City. But how could he kill divine Gods from the heaven?

The heaven had fallen. Although no one knew where did those divine Gods come from and exactly how powerful they were, they were indeed able to manipulate supreme magic treasures like the Hou Tu divine seal. This proved that even though their identities were suspected, they were true divine Gods without a doubt.

Ji Hao killed three true divine Gods, with what?

Gradually, among the crowd, Yi Di and Yi Ren, and the couple of core princes from a few super clans showed greediness in their eyes. In their eyes, Ji Hao was 'not powerful'. Therefore, they hadn't been taking Ji Hao's individual strength seriously at all. Ji

Hao killed three divine Gods, this meant that he had one or a few terrifyingly powerful supreme treasure, right?

‘If the treasures are mine’...At the moment, thoughts like this popped up in the heads of many people in the hall.

Si Wen Ming had finished stating.

"Where are those people who colluded with the water-kind?" Emperor Shun said harshly in a strong tone, with a badly darkened face.

"All killed, every last one of them." said Si Wen Ming with a deep and calm voice, "Hmm, I handled it quite brutally. Those people were all crushed, not even a corpse was left. Therefore, we failed to identify any of them."

Emperor Shun’s tightened dark face loosened a little bit. He straightened his waist and seriously looked at those human leaders gathered in the hall. The dark faces of a few clan leaders and elders blushed, showing all kinds of complicated microexpressions when looking at Si Wen Ming.

A muffled cough came from the crowd. Gong Sun Sword slowly walked out of the crowd and said, "Tushan Family failed to deliver the food to Pu Ban City, Emperor Shun. The rule you set yesterday...Does it count? Our Gong Sun Family have quite a lot food in store. Si Wen Ming, how much can you give?"

Gong Sun grinned delightfully, "This time, our Gong Sun Family carefully selects our Prince, Gong Sun Xuan to shoulder the flood-control mission. Xuan!"

Gong Sun Sword waved his hands while speaking. Following his voice, a handsome young man walked out from the group of Gong Sun Family elders in an elegant manner. He smilingly bowed to Emperor Shun, then slightly raised his chin and stood beside Si Wen Ming.

Si Wen Ming was just average in appearance. He looked as

ordinary as the earth. Unlike him, Gong Sun Xuan looked like an exquisitely carved piece of jade, every single detail of him being flawless.

Sui Ren Flame didn't want to fall behind. He stepped up as well and said, "Emperor Shun, the opportunity belongs to everyone. Our Suiren Family is also a member of the humankind. We surely should contribute what we have to the humankind. Suiren Ling is a genius among us; he is extraordinary in all spheres. For this flood-control mission, he will be representing our Suiren Family."

Another exquisitely carved piece of jade, ah, no, another tall, strong and handsome man with an elegant manner, who looked like a divine God, walked out of the crowd. He slightly bowed to Emperor Shun, then stood side by side with Si Wen Ming.

Followed behind Suiren Flame, elders from many other clans walked out and introduced those young people selected out from their clans for the flood-control mission. In fact, those people were selected for the competition for the throne.

Within a blink of an eye, including Si Wen Ming, thirty-six people stood in the middle of the hall. These people represented the strongest, most thriving human clans and families, which possessed the noblest bloodlines among all human beings. Behind each of these people, was a powerful super clan or family.

Emperor Shun narrowed his eyes. Tushan old man abruptly began talking, "Emperor Shun, in a day, another installation of food will arrive from Tushan Family. As for the flood-control mission..."

Ji Hao took a big step forward and laughed out loud.

"Emperor Shun, undoubtedly, my Uncle Wen Ming will be in charge of the flood-control mission. The other clans won't be able to provide more food than we are about to, not even by joining hands. Therefore..."

Before he finished, Gong Sun Sword and Suiren Flame had already shouted out in anger.

Chapter 1067: Teach People How To Fish

"You ignorant kid! This is a great matter! But you, you're just Earl Yao, a boy from the small Gold Crow Clan. You're not qualified to talk in here!" shouted Gong Sun Sword harshly. He pressured Ji Hao by mentioning Ji Hao's experiences and the general power of Gold Crow Clan.

Gong Sun Sword had quite a bad attitude. He talked rudely, and while talking, a strong sword power was released from his body, piercing straight towards Ji Hao like countless invisible sharp swords. If Emperor Shun wasn't in here, and if all those human leaders hadn't been looking at him, the sword power released by Gong Sun Sword might have struck on Ji Hao's body already.

"Earl Yao, your Yao Mountain territory is a new territory. It has only been a few years since you built Yao Mountain City. How much food can you possibly store?" Unlike Gong Sun Sword, Suiren Flame gave a mild grin, looking like an eldership from the neighborhood. He criticized Ji Hao based on the short history of his territory, "Even if you take out every grain you have in Yao Mountain territory, do you think you can bring enough for all people in Pu Ban City, even for just today?"

Sighing slightly, Suiren Flame turned around and smiled to the other human leaders in the hall as he said, "Earl Yao is just too young, and lacks patience. If he takes out all he has, his own people would be left to die, wouldn't they?"

Yi Di was selected out by Ten Sun Country for the flood-control mission. Standing behind Si Wen Ming, he sneered and said, "Hard to say. If someone wants to be a social climber and to lick the other people' boots as soon as possible...To this someone, those people are nothing but lowly beings. What's the big deal even if they died? Can those people ever be more important than his own future?"

Yi Di sounded rather mean. He meant that in order to lick Si Wen

Ming’s boots, Ji Hao would rather leave his people to die. Even worse, he also implied that Si Wen Ming would rather leave Ji Hao’s people to die too in order to be in charge of the flood-control mission, because he acquiesced Ji Hao to take out all stored food in his territory!

If all the others believed what Yi Di said, not only Ji Hao, even Si Wen Ming’s reputation would be ruined as well. A leader who would rather give up the lives of his people in order to reach to a higher position would have no future in the alliance of human clans.

Yi Ren was also selected by Ten Sun Country for the flood-control mission. Standing side by side with Yi Di, Yi Ren smiled faintly, threw an unfriendly side glance at Yi Di, and said, "My words might be not pleasant to hear, but I have to say this. Earl Yao Ji Hao, this isn’t right!"

Yi Ren and Yi Di gave each other a threatening glance. Invisible yet especially strong arrow power clashed against each other and made the air buzz in the hall. Both of them quivered slightly, then the tight feather armors worn by them shattered. Feathers flew all over the great hall.

Ji Hao laughed. The other large clans each selected only one person for the flood-control mission because those clans planned to use all resources on that only person to increase the chance of success. However, Ten Sun Country was a great powerful country, and seemed to be the dominator of the entire east. A big half of Eastern Wasteland clans obediently followed the lead of Ten Sun Country. Therefore, Ten Sun Country confidently recommended two young men to join the competition.

From this, it was not hard to tell that the internal disputes of Ten Sun Country were also intense.

Smiling faintly, Ji Hao said slowly, "You two shall solve your own problems before questioning me."

Yi Di and Yi Ren both had their looks changed. Again, they threateningly glanced at each other and showed fierce intents of killing in their eyes. With the great power of Ten Sun Country, if they supported either of them with all available resources of the whole country, it could be fifty percent sure that they would crush all the other competitors and eventually seize power. In the future, with the credit earned through the flood-control mission, this person would definitely become the new human emperor. But now, Ten Sun Country recommended both of them, which meant the available resources had to be split evenly. As a consequence, the chance of success had been reduced by half. At the moment, they saw each other as the biggest enemy ever. Because of each other, their chance of becoming the human emperor was ruined!

Ji Hao's words triggered the anger in their hearts, and they even wanted to kill each other right now.

Suiren Flame smiled faintly, waved his hand, and said, "Eh? Earl Yao, you sound quite confident. Do you have any good idea to solve the food crisis in Pu Ban City? If you truly do, Earl Yao, your contribution to the humankind will be indescribably great."

Ji Hao smiled faintly as well, turned around, and looked at Suiren Fame as he said blandly, "You're right, I do know how to solve the food crisis in Pu Ban City. If it goes well, people living in other areas will be able to get food aid from Pu Ban City...Probably, our people don't have to starve anymore, and we can stay focused on the flood-control!"

Gong Sun Sword, Suiren Flame and the other clan leaders and elders paused on hearing Ji Hao, then shook their heads simultaneously.

What a joke? Pu Ban City giving food aid to other areas? Before the flood, Pu Ban City could reach self-sufficiency. But now, this city was filled with refugees. Even if the other large clans kept sending food over to the city, the demand would still be insatiable!

But Ji Hao said that Pu Ban City would be able to give food aid to the other areas. This was such a joke!

Even Emperor Shun shook his head. Looking at Ji Hao, he silently sighed, but didn’t say anything. In Emperor Shun’s eyes, Ji Hao might be too impatient to help Si Wen Ming, so he spoke without thinking.

Si Wen Ming was the only one who had confidence in Ji Hao. All these years, the way Ji Hao improved himself, and all amazing abilities Ji Hao had shown, shocked Si Wen Ming deeply. This time, Si Wen Ming believed that Ji Hao wasn't just talking nonsense, and he must have figured something out.

"Ji Hao, tell us about it!" Si Wen Ming unsuspectingly looked at Ji Hao and said warmly and mildly, "Tell us how will you solve this big issue. If you can truly find a way to solve it, the greatest credit of this flood-control mission will go to you!"

Ji Hao smiled and said in a deep and calm voice, "Uncle Wen Ming, my plan is simple. Countless refugees have fled to Pu Ban City, but many mountain areas are still empty...With the powers of our human Magi, we can turn those mountain areas into fertile farmlands, and easily grow crops!"

Si Wen Ming paused. He laughed hollowly, and didn’t say a word.

The other human leaders in the hall paused shortly as well, then many of them shouted out.

"How ridiculous!" People said.

Suiren Yan stepped out the first, pointed at Ji Hao, and yelled, "Ji Hao, how have you been managing your Yao Mountain territory? Do you even have any agricultural knowledge? You have the soil, you create the farmlands, you plant the crops, but you need abundant sunlight for the crops to grow!"

Conveniently pointing at the ceiling of the great hall, Suiren Yan continued yelling, "The sky is covered by dark clouds now, with all

those water-kind things messing around out there. The world is dark, and there is no sunlight, no sunlight at all! Grow crops? It’s easy for you to say!" Suiren Yan looked very angry, yet he also had a twisted, faint smile on his face.

Standing aside, Gong Sun Sword taunted blandly, "I assume Earl Yao has never managed these things. He probably doesn’t even know what grain seedlings look like, does he?"

Countless human leaders angrily looked at Ji Hao, all with unfriendly facial expressions. Even those princes, earls and marquises who were friends with Ji Hao, now looked at him with disappointment.

An earl with no basic agricultural knowledge...Ji Hao wasn’t even qualified as an earl.

Emperor Shun shook his head again disappointedly. Grow crops? Anyone can do that. But without the sun, nothing could possibly grow!

Sighed slightly, Emperor Shun prepared to say something. But Ji Hao began talking the first. He said something world-shaking.

"Well, I have a sun. It’s much smaller than the sun in our Pan Gu world, but it will be more than enough to warm the entire Pu Ban City, even the surrounding area!"

Once he said this out, the entire great hall fell into deathly stillness.

Chapter 1068: The Sunlight Shines

Before the Sky Pillar collapsed, Ji Hao had been digesting the Pan Jia sun with the small cauldron in his lower abdomen.

According to the mysterious man, when Ji Hao absorbed the Pan Jia sun entirely, he would grow over a hundred thousand inner spirit stars. Then, Ji Hao would become incredibly powerful; he would reach an unimaginable level.

However, before he could absorb the sun entirely, Sky Pillar collapsed, the sky devils showed up, and a series of intense fights started. Ji Hao even fought with the power of the Pan Jia sun a couple of times. Apart from that, Ji Hao had absorbed a part of the essence of the sun before. By now, around seventy percent of the essence power of the Pan Jia sun still remained.

Pan Jia world was a world of water, rich in water power. But other natural powers in that world barely existed. The Pan Jia sun was dim and weak. However, despite its feebleness, the Pan Jia sun was still a sun. Even though only around seventy percent of the essence power remained in the sun, the core of the sun hadn't been absorbed by Ji Hao, and this sun was still capable of nourishing living creatures, providing all living creatures with warmth and energy.

When rescuing the food transport troop from Tushan Family, Ji Hao already thought of the fact that allowing people to grow crops would be much better than giving them the food, which would eventually run out. No matter how much food Tushan Family had, one day, everything would be eaten up. The only way to solve the food crisis and maintain the food supply was to allow people grow crops in Pu Ban City.

The rain never stopped. Dark clouds covered the sky and blocked the sunshine. The world was overcast, and nothing could grow. Therefore, all farmlands were lying waste. But with the Pan Jia

sun, Ji Hao believed that he could bring Pu Ban City back alive, beyond which, he could even heavily strike at those water-kind spirit creatures.

Ji Hao was pondering over this, but abruptly, the silence in the great hall was broken, as people in the hall began shouting.

Led by Gong Sun Sword and Suiren Flame, many clan leaders and elders stepped out from the crowd and pointed at Ji Hao, censuring Ji Hao loudly.

A sun? How could he have a sun?

Gong Sun Sword pointed at Ji Hao's nose and yelled harshly, "We only have one sun in Pan Gu world. You said you have a sun. Did you seal the sun inside your body with the ninety-nine star-sealing magic formation?"

Suiren Flame popped up his eyes, growling at Ji Hao,almost hysterically, "How many legendary geniuses among human beings, how many powerful beings among us tried to gather the sun power in their bodies and grow internal spirit stars with the sun power. But all of them were burned to ashes by the essence sun fire!"

Suiren Yan even leaped up, cursing in rage, "Are you saying that you're more powerful than countless legendary human beings?!"

Suiren Yan was truly losing his mind. The greatest contribution made by Suiren Family to the humankind was nothing else but teaching human beings to use fire, accelerating the development of human society with the power of fire. Therefore, most of Suiren Family people were mastered in fire magics, including all kinds of pre-world fires, divine fires, and spirit fires. Suiren Family people could manipulate almost all fires in the world.

Nevertheless, none of their family members had ever managed to occupy the power of the sun. When Suiren Yan was young, he daringly attempted to draw the power of the sun into his body and it into his own. However, as a result, all his meridians and Magus

acupoints were nearly burned off. If the powerful ones from his family weren't there to save him, he would have been burned into a puff of smoke long ago.

He was such a genius, but even a genius like him failed to do that. How could Ji Hao possibly accomplish it so easily?

The sun, it was the sun. Once the sun shone in the sky, all stars would hide. The sun was known as the leader of all stars in the world. Except for the king of the sun, who was supposed to be given birth by nature, no one could ever manipulate the power of the sun; no one could ever turn the sun into a spirit star!

Ji Hao said that he had a sun...

"Earl Yao Ji Hao, are you daydreaming?" A Cyan Luan Bird Clan elder pointed at Ji Hao and yelled, "You have a sun? Why don't you say that you're a king of sun from the heaven? Why don't you say that you're Taiyi, the ancient East Emperor?"

"Ji Hao, this is the Town Hall, and we're talking about important things related to the future of the entire humankind. How can you talk nonsense in here?!" Another elder stepped out of the crowd, shouting at Ji Hao, with saliva spouting from his mouth.

More and more people walked out of the crowd and accused Ji Hao for his reckless, irresponsible talking. Ji Hao knew some of these people, and he didn't know the others. But at the moment, all of them had been blaming Ji Hao for his balderdash. These people said that Ji Hao had no concern about the well-being of the humankind at all.

Some people even angrily pointed out that the reason why Ji Hao acted so irresponsibly and unruly was that Si Wen Ming had been shielding him, and conniving him all the time! Under Si Wen Ming's guidance, Ji Hao became such an unreliable man, which meant Si Wen Ming was not qualified to be in charge of the flood-control mission at all!

Within a blink of an eye, tens of human leaders had already suggested Emperor Shun to disqualify Si Wen Ming from the flood-control mission. No matter how much food Tushan old man could give, Si Wen Ming shouldn't be in charge of the mission. Si Wen Ming allowed Ji Hao to talk irresponsibly like that under such a critical situation, which proved the fact that Si Wen Ming couldn't even control his people. Then, how could he ever overcome the flood?

A storm of critique towards Ji Hao suddenly burst in the hall. The atmosphere became so tense that Si Wen Ming and Emperor Shun could barely breathe. Emperor Shun's face turned pale, while Si Wen Ming was slightly shaking. They both wanted to say something for Ji Hao, but facing all these angry human leaders, even the human emperor didn't know what to say.

Ji Hao took a deep breath, letting a clear stream of mist rose from his head. A glowing red sun emerged upon his head.

This sun was transformed from Ji Hao's primordial spirit. The warm red glow illuminated the entire hall. Next, thin streams of fire puffed out from the sun and gathered into a golden-red, shining fiery cloud in the air.

The earth quaked and buzzed. Followed a thunderous sound, a dazzling light emerged upon the fiery light.

That thumb-sized light spot sparkled quickly, then began expanding speedily in towards all directions.

The air around Ji Hao was twisted strangely. Around ten meters in radius around him, the air started shaking intensely. The other people on the scene all saw Ji Hao right before their faces, but they also felt that Ji Hao was actually millions of miles away from them.

"Treasure, up!" Ji Hao gave a resonant growl. He raised both of his harms and carried the red sun and the dazzling golden sun, trod on the fiery cloud, and rose into the sky.

The Pan Jia sun was gloriously radiant. A great heat could be sensed in every corner of the hall. Momentarily, the ceiling of the Town Hall was turned into a strand of smoke.

Ji Hao rose from the Town Hall, rose higher and higher with the Pan Jia sun. At last, he stopped under the defensive magic screen created by the great defensive magic formation of Pu Ban City.

The sun shone in the sky eye-piercingly. The great heat dispelled the moisture in the air. In a couple of breaths, the humid and cold air in Pu Ban City became warm and dry. Countless Pu Ban people screamed in surprise. They raised their heads and popped out their eyes, looking at that great sun dazzling right above their heads.

"Ji Hao!!" Emperor Shun pointed at Ji Hao and shouted. He slapped hard on his own thigh and laughed out wildly. Soon, his tears gushed out of his eye sockets.

"Ji Hao!" Si Wen Ming spread his arms and laughed loud thunderously. His face was also covered in warm tears, and his laughter even vibrated the air.

"Ji Hao! Eh, I have to find a couple of more girls from my family to marry to him!" Tushan old man grinned happily, squeezing out hundreds of wrinkles, but with his pair of eyes sparkling brightly.

"Ji Hao!! Ji Hao!! Ji Hao!!!"

All over the city, countless people shouted his name.

Chapter 1069: The Sun Tower

Si Wen Ming took over the Hou Tu divine seal.

A dense yellow cloud drifted above his head, within which, an enormous winged bear was faintly visible, roaring towards the sky. The Hou Tu divine seal was held in the bear's mouth. A tremendous earth power was released from the sea, which made the earth of Pu Ban City wave like surging water.

Following a muffled humming noise, square-shaped earth rose from Pu Ban City, one after another. Si Wen Ming gathered the power of the earth and extracted the essence earth from the vast wild land around Pu Ban City. The essence earth condensed into thirty-meter-thick, ten-miles squared floating islands that rose into the sky. These floating islands had been naturally releasing magnetic forces, under the effect of which, they steadily floated in the sky.

On these floating islands was the richest soil. The soil was so rich that one could even squeeze oil out of it. Nourished by the power of the Hou Tu divine seal, these floating islands were gifted with a great fertility, and could now provide the best growing environment for plants.

Floating islands floated in the air and layered up. These floating islands were three-hundred-meters away from each other. Every layer of floating islands was five-hundred meters higher than the lower layer. These floating islands shaded each other. Therefore, the spaces between these floating islands were completely dark.

Countless Maguspriests had been carefully casting magics to improve the soil. Bright torches floated around them. The soil that came from deep underground was still cold. These Maguspriests nourished the soil with magics and made it warm and soft.

On the ground, countless human beings who mastered farming techniques had been working. They took out mountain-huge piles

seeds from barns, then carefully and cautiously grew seedlings with ancient skills, which were passed down from their ancestors over generations. Maguspriests had been helping these farmers. These Maguspriests were all masters of green magics. They extracted the green power from the air and gave the power to the seedings, helping the seedlings to grow faster, healthier. The seedlings were given a stronger life-force.

Inside a floating mountain, Kuafu Yan and a large group of strong blacksmiths had been wielding their heavy hammers, clanging glowing-red metal pieces. Muffled clangs sounded like thunders, that could be heard in every corner of the city. Every time a hammer struck down, the floating mountain would quake intensively.

Every time when a piece was roughly shaped, strong and sturdy Jia Clan slaves would growl out and carry the hill-sized piece up, carefully sending to a working table nearby. Many Xiu Clan masters stood by the working table with all kinds of tools in their hands. Once a piece was sent onto the working table, they would begin drawing and carving carefully, adding exquisite and complicated magic formation spell symbols on it.

In the deepest area of this floating mountain, Man Man was sitting in the air, upon a steaming pool, with a quite serious face. Ninety-nine fire dragons hovered around her, while her body was burning ragingly with a divine fire. Two streams of flame roared out of her eyes and reached three-hundred meters away. The Zhu Rong divine seal floated above Man Man’s head, with countless divine spell symbols condensed from purple flame surging out from the seal in streams, flowing into Man Man’s body ceaselessly. The power vibration coming from Man Man’s body had been growing stronger and stronger, deeper and deeper, as if she were a true God who had lived for countless centuries.

Man Man was surrounded by teleporting magic formations. All kinds of materials had been flying out of those teleporting magic

formations, then falling into the pool down bellow.

Under Man Man's command, the ninety-nine fire dragons had been releasing scorching hot flames. All materials that flew out from those teleporting magic formations had a nature of fire. Within the flame, these materials melted speedily. Inside the pool, all impurities were burned away, leaving a transparent, red, crystal liquid, melted from the purest materials.

Taisi stood beside the pool, shaking and swaying, with his pale eyes fixed on that pool of boiling hot liquid, murmuringly incanting a spell. The air around him had been rippling, sending the power of time to the liquid in the pool, wave after wave. Under Taisi's control, the melted materials in the pool went through a magical transformation. Somehow, the sense of the great Dao of time started to spread from the melted material, making the material harder to destroy.

Shaosi sat beside the pool,with her legs crossed. After a while, she would wave her hands, and following her moves, a large sphere of liquid would rise from the pool.

Tens of leather pieces with design drawings floated around Shaosi. From time to time, she would turned around, take a quick glance at those drawing, then wave her hands, twist and compress the air. Controlled by Shaosi, the air was twisted and compressed into molds, roughly shaping the melted materials according to the design drawings.

A swishing noise could be heard without an end. Feng Xing led a large group of nimble Senior Magi, swiftly flying around and dragging those roughly shaped pieces produced by Shaosi quickly to the working table of Kuafu Yan and the other blacksmiths.

Once these not yet solid pieces were placed on the working table, tens of large hammers would strike down thunderously, violently, yet accurately, turning these pieces into desired shapes. The metal pieces gradually solidified and became semifinished products of

the components of a greater piece.

Yu Mu stood by the entry of the floating mountain, with the Gong Gong divine seal floating above his head. Around him, a dense dark mist rolled.

Countless components that were already added with complicated magic formation spell symbols, but were still glowing-red, flew across him. The dark mist would wrap each component up and generate a loud sizzling noise. As clouds of steam puffed into the sky, these components were quenched and cooled down quickly. Thus, the magic formation spell symbols based on these components were shaped up.

Large groups of giants from Kuafu Family and Longbo Country had been dashing around, carrying these tens of meters long components away.

Right in the middle of Pu Ban City, on the square in front of the Town Hall, a great tower was speedily building up. The base of this tower was over ten-miles wide. Ingeniously designed, exquisitely crafted, large components were carried over one after another, piling up.

Following muffled thudding noises, after a component was piled on the tower and the magic formation spell symbols based on it was connected to it, red light streams would immediately coil up. The unfinished tower was already over a thousand meters tall, thickly covered in glowing red patterns, shining with an eye-piercing light in the darkness that illuminated the whole area.

The tower had been growling taller and taller. The high-end strengths of the entire human-kind had been gathered on the constructional work of the power, added with the help providing by Xiu Clan masters. Within merely two days, the tower had reached over a thousand meters tall.

Right above the tower, hundreds of meters higher, Ji Hao sat on a cloud, with the Pan Jia sun floating above his head.

The tower reached to Ji Hao, section by section. Around sixty hours later, the tower finally reached below Ji Hao's feet. Five dragon-claw-light hooks reached up from the tower top. Carefully, Ji Hao placed the Pan Jia sun in between these hooks.

Buzz! The tower quaked intensely. The tremendous power of the Pan Jia sun momentarily flowed across the entire tower through those magic formation spell symbols.

Around the tower, countless enormous magic formation spell symbols began glowing on the ground. The great defensive magic formation of Pu Ban City was instantly strengthened by a colossal power. The defensive magic screen expanded speedily, pushing out for three-thousand miles in a blink of an eye.

"The Sun Tower, done!" Ji Hao applauded, "Uncle Wen Ming, the mirror!"

Chapter 1070: The Sun Terraced Field

Human beings in this era were terrifyingly powerful.

A Senior Magus could carry up a mountain and wave the sea, not to mention those Magus Kings and Divine Magi, who were much more powerful.

Ji Hao designed the tower, while Emperor Shun gave the order. Within a short couple of days, everything was ready. When Ji Hao said ‘the mirror’, tens of thousands of Magus Kings and Maguspriests on the ground burst with a roar simultaneously. Next, torrents of power surged out of their bodies, transformed into a hurricane, and sent round-shaped mirrors into the sky.

The defensive magic formation of the city was over five-hundred-thousand-meters high from the ground. From the ground to the magic screen, every five-hundred-meters, Si Wen Ming set a layer of ten miles squared, thirty-meters thick, floating islands. A whole hundred layers of floating islands perfectly lined in the air, three-hundred meters away from each other, filling the sky of the entire Pu Ban City.

Countless round-shaped mirrors were sent up into the sky. These mirrors were made from crystals, coated with silver, three-hundred meters in radius. Beside every floating island, a large mirror like this floated. If one looked closer, one would see beautiful, flame-shaped spell symbols carved on the edge of each mirror, glowing with a faint fiery light, resonating with the Pan Jia sun in the higher sky. The higher the mirrors rose, the brighter those flame spell symbols glowed.

Ji Hao stood on top of the Sun Tower, carefully controlled the Pan Jia sun, and merged this sun from another world with the entire tower. Controlled by Ji Hao, the Pan Jia sun looked like a five hundred meters wide fireball. But in fact, if he released the twisted space around the Pan Jia sun, the radius of this sun would

immediately reach to a million miles, and the power of this sun could destroy the whole city within a moment.

Ji Hao hung the Taiji Creation Cauldron above the Pan Jia sun, releasing a thin stream of Taiji power, coiling around the sun, maintaining the twisted space around it.

On the Sun tower, the five dragon-claw-like, enormous hooks easily penetrated the twisted space around the sun, drilling straight into the sun.

A tremendous sun power surged into the tower through the five hooks, flowing through the tower into the core of the great defensive magic formation of the city.

The earth of a small half of the city glowed with a dim red light. The temperature of the cold and humid earth began to rise. Faint white steam rose from the soil gradually. More magically, in many areas which were soaking in water, tender sprouts had drilled out of the earth.

Large round mirrors flew up into the sky, being set beside each floating island.

Ji Hao spread his arms, seeming to hold the Pan Jia sun. As he slightly flicked his fingers, a loud buzzing noise could be heard. On the surface of the Sun Tower, tens of thousands of round-shaped spell symbols dazzled suddenly, releasing eye-piercing beams of red light, in all directions.

These red light beams accurately landed on those round mirrors and got reflected by them. Instantly, the whole city was illuminated, and the whole hundred layers of floating islands in the sky of Pu Ban City were showered with the warm sunshine.

Every single floating island, even those in the bottom layer close to the earth, were covered by the sunlight.

The sun, all living things depend on the sun for their growth. With the sunlight, a warm golden edge was added to each floating

island. Maguspriests who had been improving the soil shouted in happiness. They straightened their bodies and excitedly looked at those shining round mirrors, even though their eyes were stinging.

Streams of white mist rose from these floating islands, which were dug out from deep underground by Si Wen Ming a couple of days ago, and still had the coldness and moisture from underground. The black soil sparkled with a beautiful luster, looking like melting oil.

Through the Sun Tower, the warmth and thriving life-force of the Pan Jia sun covered every floating island. Floating islands perfectly lined in the air like a chessboard, rimmed with a warm golden edge.

Emperor Shun and a group of human leaders stood by the gate of the Town Hall. They raised their heads, looking at this splendid, magnificent scene, stunned. Some of them were smiling, some were crying, some were frozen in shock, and some had their faces twitching.

Emperor Shun reached out his hand, looking at the warm sunlight in his hands, chuckled and said, "Ji Hao, that kid truly has a sun! And he can control the sun so perfectly! No wonder he killed the three divine Gods, Gong Gong, Hou Tu and Zhu Rong all by himself!"

The first half of Emperor Shun’s words was a praise to Ji Hao, but the last half was a warning to some people.

Ji Hao had a sun, but only one sun existed in Pan Gu world. This meant that the source of the sun that Ji Hao had was...Thinking about it could numb people’ scalps already. Besides, Ji Hao killed the three true divine Gods. With his current power, he couldn’t possibly do that. But indeed, he killed the three gods. Who would know if Ji Hao had any other power, ability or supreme treasure?

Emperor Shun was warning everyone with unfriendly thoughts, ‘Ji Hao is a tough kid. Don’t go against him, don’t get yourselves

killed. At the moment, human beings need to combine their powers and overcome the difficulties. If you people provoke Ji Hao and end up being chopped by him like watermelons, nothing would be lost but the strength of the humankind!'

Gong Sun Sword, Suiren Yan and a few others had badly darkened faces right now. The faces of Yi Ren and Yi Di were twisted, which made them look like hideous ghosts.

They were so jealous, they were so angry. They cursed the world for their own bad luck.

Such a wonderful thing, why did it happen only to Ji Hao?

He made such a great contribution to the entire humankind, because of which, Si Wen Ming would undoubtedly be in charge of the flood-control mission. Once the mission was successfully accomplished, would any other person ever have a chance to become the new human emperor?

Emperor Shun clenched his fists and said with a bright voice, "Earl Yao has made a great contribution to human society by solving the food crisis. I am now promoting him to Marquis Yao, expanding his Yao Mountain territory by a hundred times. He now has a right to make all important decisions with the other human leaders...As for the flood-control mission, Si Wen Ming, that will be depending on you!"

Si Wen Ming floated in the air, treading on a giant rock as he solemnly cupped his hands towards Emperor Shun and accepted the mission!

Magi shouted in excitement. They raised strong gales and sent people onto those floating islands. These people then quickly planted those new seedlings into the soft and warm soil. Maguspriests cast their magics and helped the seedlings to grow.

Magic crystals with a nature of green were crumbled one after another. Large streams of cyan-colored mist flew along with the

wind. With an abundant sunlight and the rich soil, along with being helped by the green power, the seedlings planted on those floating islands started growing at a visible rate. After a couple of hours, a big half of those floating islands were already covered in six-feet-tall crops. Only with enough green power, the Pu Ban City could be expecting a bumper harvest today.

People cheered in happiness, and danced in joy, waving their hands and hugging each other in excitement.

Dragon-like streams of power of faith flowed to Ji Hao. Around him, faintly purple mist spread out wave after wave, condensing into an invisible purple cloud above his head.

Chapter 1071: Enemies Spying

Above the sky, in the boundless Chaos.

Pan Gu world floated in the Chaos, like a giant egg. Countless Chaos power streams twisted and roared around the screen of the world, stirring up an indescribable, splendid glow.

The screen of the world remained perfectly motionless. Pan Gu world quietly floated in the Chaos, silently following the great Dao of nature of itself. If one could stand in the Chaos and look at Pan Gu world from far away, one might feel that one had ‘eternality’ in their eyes.

Twelve tiny and dim light spots had been sparkling in the Chaos around Pan Gu world, yet far, far away from Pan Gu world. Those were twelve small worlds. Threads of faintly visible light connected Pan Gu world with the twelve light spots. Pulled by an unknown, strong force, the twelve dim light spots had been slowly drifting towards Pan Gu world.

Pan Gu world was following some mysterious natural law, floating in the Chaos, merged with the Chaos. From outside the world, no one could easily discover it. However, because of the acting forces between Pan Gu world and the twelve dim light spots, strong waves of Chaos power vibrations were stirred up, spreading out in all directions.

The strong Chaos power vibration was like a lighthouse. In the Chaos, some unimaginable beings had been wandering without destinations, but because of the Chaos power vibration, those beings quickly locked this area.

The twelve dim light spots scattered around Pan Gu world, and the distances between them and Pan Gu world were about the same. When Chaos power vibrations spread out from all the twelve lights spots simultaneously, some terrifyingly powerful beings in the Chaos directly located Pan Gu world through the Chaos power

vibrations coming from the twelve sources.

In the Chaos, not a single world would reveal its own location without reason; this was a basic self-perpetuating principle in the Chaos. Power vibrations spread out from twelve worlds simultaneously, without a doubt was a message for some mysterious beings, that something special existed in this area.

Yu Yu stood in the Chaos, with the blueprint of his sword formation spread out. Four sharp sword power streams seemed even to reach every corner of the universe.

Po, Gui Ling, Jin Ling, Wu Dang, the famous four disciples of Yu Yu, led over a thousand Yu Yu's disciples, each guarding under a sword power stream. Glowing gates were generated by the sword power. Po and the other disciples sat with crossed legs, fingers locked together, sending out flame-thunderbolts to the sword power streams from time to time.

An enormous, oddly-shaped creature stood outside Yu Yu's sword formation, carefully and vigilantly observing things. The creature was scrawny like a skeleton; its head looked like a beetle, and it was tens of thousands of meters tall. A black streamer was held in the left hand of this creature, and a large sickle in the right. Behind this strange creature, countless different sized beetle men stood in the Chaos, lined up perfectly, forming a square-shaped battle formation. On their dark shells, dark-red sell symbols released a strong power, transforming into an enormous dark-red glowing screen that covered them all. The Chaos power streams struck on the glowing screen from time to time. Every strike made these beetles scream, some even had green liquid gushing out of their mouthparts. Clearly, Chaos power strikes had been causing them great damage.

"Sa...Kaka...Si...!"

The enormous beetle man slowly let out a shrill, high-pitched sound, that was highly unpleasant to hear. That strange sound was

quite rhythmed. Apparently, it was a language.

"Human language!" Yu Yu stood in the middle of the sword formation, holding an ancient-style longsword which was coiled by cyan light. He impatiently picked his left ear with his left pinky finger, grabbed the wine calabash tied around his waist, and poured some wine into his mouth, then yelled, "What the hell did you say? Your Master Yu Yu can’t understand you!"

The strange creature paused slightly. Abruptly, the creature opened Its mouthpart wide and roared in a hissing voice, seeming to be enraged. From its scrawny spine, bones straightened up, and from between those bones, over a thousand dark bone wings reached out. They spread loudly, around twenty-thousand meters wide.

Those bone wings buzzed quickly, and the shrill noise generated dark light streams that tore the Chaos apart, striking towards Yu Yu overwhelmingly. Meanwhile, the creature waved the long streamer in its left hand and sent out a wave of twisted and hideous things, which seemed to be the heads of some weird creatures, and also looked like the shadows of ghosts. Along with ear-piercing screams, these hideous, misty things flew towards the sword formation.

"Weak, evil things!"

Yu Yu didn’t activate the sword formation. Instead, he made the Big Dipper step, and conveniently launched a hack with the longsword held in his right hand. A cyan-colored stream of sword power transformed into countless spinning cyan lotuses, drifting all over the universe, crushing those ugly, ghost-like things. A bright beam of cyan light flashed across the Chaos, and next, the strange creature quivered intensely, because that sharp sword light tore its body apart, from his head to his crotch. Black, stinky and smelly liquid spurted out from his scrawny, skeleton-like body ceaselessly.

Chaos power streams flooded over and swirled away all the black liquid that came out from the creature's body. The strange creature trembled in fear, with its enormous pair of eyes filled with shock. It failed to take even a quick hack launched by Yu Yu, and this was absolutely unexpected.

This was the Chaos. Creatures surviving in this place were all incredibly strong, and the living environment in this place was cruelly poor. Back in Pan Gu world, if a powerful being suffered a sword hack from Yu Yu, as long as it weren't dead, it would have the time to rest and recover. Even in millions of years, it would always have a chance to recover completely.

But in the Chaos, once a powerful pre-world being was wounded, nothing would be expecting it but endless hunting and chasing.

The strange creature screamed. It covered the wound on its chest with both hands, turned around, and fled to deeper Chaos while roaring in fury, leaving a black stream of light behind. The creature seemed to forget all those beetle men standing behind him.

The sword hack launched by Yu Yu didn't cause the creature a severe injury; at least, it could still fight. However, the creature was wounded; it was frightened so badly that it dared not to continue troubling Yu Yu at all. It could do nothing else but run desperately.

"Since you have already come, don't leave!" Yu Yu laughed out loud. He flashed across the Chaos and showed up right behind that strange creature, beheading it with another sword hack.

"Hmm, these two pieces are not bad." Yu Yu grinningly threw the long streamer and the sickle into his bag, then closed his eyes, silently sensing the rising power of natural reward inside his body. He killed a Chaos monster that had been drooling towards Pan Gu world. Therefore, the world awarded him!

All of a sudden, Yu Yu popped out his eyes in both surprise and

shock.

"This, this is...." murmured Yu Yu.

A stream of purple mist swooshed straight up from Yu Yu's head, from within which, the figures of countless kowtowing people were faintly visible. Yu Yu's primordial spirit was already immeasurably powerful, but now, it was even stronger and more sensitive than before. Meanwhile, Yu Yu suddenly gained a deeper understanding towards the great Dao of nature, and the power of Chaos!

Po, Gui Ling and the other disciples all gasped or shouted out in shock. They stood up, one after another; and couldn't believe what had just happened.

Tens of millions of people in Pu Ban City kowtowed to Ji Hao, appreciating him for what he had done. The natural fortune given to Ji Hao by these grateful people raised Yu Yu's power and abilities by around ten percent. Yu Yu was an unspeakably powerful one, but even he was improved by ten percent; the abilities of Po, Gui Ling, Jing Ling and Wu Dang were improved by whole ten times; as for the other disciples, they were improved by tens, hundreds of times!

"The fortune of our sect...Ji Hao, my good disciple, well done!" Yu Yu smilingly took a glance at Pan Gu world.

Deep roars came from the Chaos. A dragon-whale-like creature, wearing a scorpion-shell-like armor, approached slowly from the Chaos. This hundred-thousand miles long creature opened its jaws and swallowed those beetle men.

Yu Yu's look turned serious, as he slowly raised the sword.

Chapter 1072: The Harvest, The Happiness, The Anger

Ji Hao stood on top of the Sun Tower, smilingly looking at those busy people.

He felt that his primordial spirit was especially thriving and energetic, that every single cell of his body was so rich in life-force. Meanwhile, an indescribable magic power had been surging inside his body, under the effect of which, both his primordial spirit and his body had been improving, nearing perfection.

Added with the erect eye between his eyebrows, he widely opened all three eyes of his. He saw nothing with those eyes but spheres of light, streams of light and thin threads of shadows.

Wherever his eyes reached, he saw nothing else but the great Dao of nature!

For the very first time, the Dao of Pan Gu world revealed itself clearly in front of Ji Hao's eyes. By now, he could understand whatever he saw, and for whatever he understood, the essence of Dao contained in it would naturally settle down in his primordial spirit, becoming a part of him.

How many people lived in Pu Ban City now?

Emperor Shun couldn't give a specific number, neither could Si Wen Ming. No one could answer that question.

Every human being knew that Pu Ban City suffered a food crisis; everybody was anxious, was extremely worried. Some people had even fallen into hopeless situations. Children were crying in starvation, and adults were weakened by the hunger.

When people thought that they wouldn't be able to survive this, Ji Hao gave them a hope that was even beyond their imagination!

A sun from another world, an ingeniously designed tower,

countless floating islands with the rich soil, added with Magi from the Magi Palace who combined all their powers... Within a single day, the first batch of crops planted on those floating farmlands was already ripe!

Incalculable amounts of green magic crystals were consumed up. As a result, these crops were now looking amazingly beautiful.

Spikes of rice were as thick and long as human arms; every single grain of rice was as large as a finger. Spikes of wheat were the same as the rice, waving on the floating farmlands along the wind like a stunning golden sea.

Human-head-sized sweet corns, leg-thick sweet potatoes, water-tank-sized cabbages, carrots were even larger than children... All crops were tens of times larger than the regular sizes. Watching these enormous foods, people felt incredibly happy; some people even burped in satisfaction by merely looking at all this food.

They wouldn't be worrying about food anymore. Children in Pu Ban City wouldn't starve to death.

Crops harvested today were enough for all people in Pu Ban City to live for six to seven months!

Next, Magi from the Magi Palace would continue accelerating the ripening with green magic crystals. With the rich soil, abundant sunshine and water, ripening crops was easy with those powerful magics!

People wouldn't be starving anymore; no one would be starving to death, and everybody could eat as much as they wanted to!

Countless human beings were tremendously grateful to Ji Hao. The power of faith from these people flowed ceaselessly into Ji Hao's body; the natural fortune that belonged to the humankind went to Ji Hao as well.

At the moment, Ji Hao was like a huge transfer station of the natural fortune. The natural fortune gathered and compressed

inside his body, then went to Priest Dachi, Priest Qing Wei, Yu Yu and all their disciples. Even Yu Yu was improved by ten percent; the cultivating abilities of Po and the other disciples were strengthened by at least ten times. At the moment, Ji Hao had all the natural fortune gathered in him; he felt like a true, omnipotent God!

Whatever he saw with his three eyes would be understood by him, absorbed by him, and become a part of him.

The great Dao of Pan Gu world was like a boundless ocean, and by now, Ji Hao was absorbing the essence of the sea, strengthening himself.

People were happily working. They laughed loud, reaping the fields with sickles. They bundled the crops up; piles of spikes of rice and wheat were glowing with a golden light, lying on the ocean ground of Pu Ban City, big as a hill.

A refreshing aroma of plants suffused the air. Magi from the Magi Palace were busy at building storehouses. Each time a new storehouse was filled with crops, thunderous cheers and praises for Ji Hao and Si Wen Ming would echo in every corner of Pu Ban City.

The purple mist around Ji Hao's body grew denser and denser. The extremely negative power and extremely positive power of Pan Gu world came to him from far, far away, drilling into his body and improving his powers at an amazing speed. He had 129600 meridians inside his body, and over a million Magus acupoints. At the moment, inside these meridians and acupoints, pure, sparkling inner spirit stars lit up one after another. Above his head, black and white mist had been hovering and coiling, forming a Taiji Diagram.

People had been singing the praises of Ji Hao, along with which, Ji Hao grew stronger and stronger. As both a cultivator and a Magus, he was improving at a scarily high rate.

Ji Hao's heart was covered by the mysterious man with an

unknown magic. At this moment, gray-colored streams of Chaos blood surged out of his heart, replacing his original blood. Nourished by the gray Chaos blood, his muscles, bones, and entire body went through a thorough transformation.

Under the magical effect of the Chaos blood, even the great Dao of Taiji which was given to Ji Hao by Priest Dachi had been changing and improving in a complicated and immeasurable way. However, Ji Hao couldn't sense this improvement and changes at this stage.

The Pan Gu bell floated above Ji Hao's head. From the bell, threads of Chaos power flew into Ji Hao's body, purifying his body in coordination with his Chaos blood, turning his after-world body into a pre-world one.

An inexplainable great joy rose from Ji Hao's heart. Looking at those busy people, he abruptly laughed loud.

Si Wen Ming had been busy all he time, but hearing Ji Hao laugh, Si Wen Ming laughed out loud as well.

Si Wen Ming laughed, so did the large groups of warriors and Maguspriests.

These warriors and Maguspriests laughed, following which, all the others laughed out.

Laughter was infectious, spreading out among human beings wave after wave. Old people laughed, young people laughed, children laughed, and even the ones in their infancy laughed as well.

The happier people laughed, the more grateful they were. Almost all people in Pu Ban City raised their heads together and took a glance at Ji Hao with gratitude.

A nearly tangible power of faith surged to Ji Hao, absorbed by him. Suddenly, his spine began changing magically. This unimaginably strong faith power gushed into his spine and made

the color and structure of his spine change speedily.

Countless prehistorical marks of great Dao slowly appeared on Ji Hao's spine. Meanwhile, an original sense of power emerged from deep inside his spine.

No one noticed this change except for the mysterious man inside Ji Hao's spiritual space. He smiled delightfully, but didn't disturb Ji Hao.

Laughter from Pu Ban City reached to the sky, vibrated the gate of the heaven, and quaked the few palaces on the edge of the heaven intensively. That was the laughter of human beings. People were laughing together, loud enough to shake the heaven and the earth.

Thunders rumbled and lightning flashed above the heaven. Soon, Gong Gong's historical screams resounded through the sky.

Chapter 1073: All Streams to The Final Land

Pu Ban City, the Town Hall.

All human leaders dressed neatly, sitting on the ground in ordered lines.

Emperor Shun sat on the inner side of the great hall, smilingly looking at the others. He seemed to be in a good spirit, which meant he was also in a good mood. Affected by his warm smile, many people in the hall felt more cheerful.

The door of the hall was wide open, letting warm sunlight pour in. Human leaders sitting near the door showered under the sunshine, and were rimmed with a beautiful golden edge.

Thudding noises came from the ceiling without an end. Days ago, when Ji Hao carried the Pan Jia sun up to the sky, the roof of the Town Hall was turned into ashes. Later, people were busy at building the Sun Tower, planting and harvesting. It was only today that some people finally had the time to fix the roof.

The heavy clangs from the roof could have been so annoying, but mixed with the cheers coming from far away, the clangs sounded not so bad.

Ji Hao was promoted from an earl to a marquis. Meanwhile, his territory expanded by a hundred times. At the moment, he sat near Emperor Shun with his eyes narrowed, gently playing with the pair of fire snakes coiled on his knees with his fingers.

The pair of snake excitedly twisted their bodies, releasing thin streams of flame from their tiny bodies.

"Si Wen Ming, come over here!" Emperor Shun smilingly looked at a group of people, then turned around. He took over the Xuanyuan sword from the hands of a hazy silhouette behind him. Holding the faintly glowing sword with both hands, Emperor Shun said to Si Wen Ming.

Si Wen Ming stood up and walked to Emperor Shun in big steps. He kneeled on one knee, bowed and said, "Emperor Shun!"

"You are now in charge of the flood-control mission!" Emperor Shun stood up, carried the sword with both hands, and said solemnly, "This is Xuanyuan sword, passed down from Emperor Xuanyuan. This sword is a symbol of the strength of our humankind. For the flood-control mission, all clans, all people, all resources that belong to the humankind, will be under your command. Anyone who refuses to obey or hinders the flood-control mission, will be executed!"

"Yes!" Si Wen Ming responded with a strong growl. He took over the sword with both hands, slowly stood up, and hung the sword on his belt.

Resting his hands on that thick dragon-skin belt of his, Si Wen Ming said with a deep yet strong voice, "Human beings are struggling in the flood. I shall say no more. Since you trust me on the mission, please, let’s combine our powers and do this together. Don’t do anything to harm our own kind...I, Si Wen Ming, can be merciful, but the Xuanyuan sword doesn’t even know what mercy is."

Most of those people sitting in the great hall had their faces turned serious. They straightened their waists, solemnly looking at Si Wen Ming.

The facial expressions of some other people instantly turned especially strange, such as Gong Sun Sword and Suiren Flame, and those from Ten Sun Country. With sparkling eyes, they stared at the Xuanyuan sword hung on Si Wen Ming’s belt. They seemed about to reach hooks out of their eyes to snatch that sword and make it their own.

That was the Xuanyuan sword, the sword that represented the highest power of the humankind. Since the era of Emperor Xuanyuan, only human emperors could hold the sword.

But today, the sword landed in Si Wen Ming's hands. What did this mean? The transfer of the greatest power?

Yi Re, Yi Di and some other princes, and many people had now been screaming in their heads. Why wasn't the sword in their hands? Why could Si Wen Ming be in charge of the flood-control mission? These people subconsciously glanced at Ji Hao, then turned around and looked at the warm sunshine outside.

Right now, many people had probably been cursing Si Wen Ming for his especially good luck. He brought a barbarian named Ji Hao to Pu Ban City from Southern Wasteland. Nevertheless, Ji Hao had actually become such a powerful person, who now had such a strong natural fortune gathered in him. Where the hell did Ji Hao get a sun?

Ji Hao noticed these people's weird facial expressions. He smilingly raised his head and looked at them right in the eyes, one by one, imprinting their faces and background information in his head.

If these people behaved themselves and did whatever they could to support the flood-control mission, fine... But, if they dared to cause any trouble, Ji Hao would kill them without any hesitation. He wasn't dreadful for a second even when killing true Gods from the heaven, not to mention these mortal beings.

As for those powerful clans and families behind these people, well, in Pan Gu world, who could possibly have stronger backers than Ji Hao?

Dachi...Qing Wei...Yu Yu...And that mysterious powerful being behind them. Supported by these people, Ji Hao could confidently tell these people, 'I have the whole world on my side. Which one of you dares to go against me? That might cost you your life!'

Si Wen Ming locked his fingers together and incanted a spell. From the ground, an enormous magic sandbox rose into the air and floated above people' heads, showing them the mountains,

rivers and earth meridians of the entire Midland. In the east side of Midland, on a vast ocean, a black stream of light had been sparkling.

"This is the plan made by my Abba when he was alive. I changed a bit of it and made this new plan!"

People in the hall began whispering to each other. They looked at that black light, murmuring in low voices.

"Final Land, that's the Final Land, isn't it?"

"Hmm, it's the Final Land. Is Si Wen Ming sending the flood to the Final Land?"

Ji Hao raised his eyebrows and raised his head to look at the sandbox. Earlier, he heard about this great plan from Si Wen Ming, and he was deeply shocked by it. He had been curious about the reactions of the other human leaders when they would get to know about Si Wen Ming's great plan!

"My plan is called 'All Streams to The Final Land'!" said Si Wen Ming with a bland tone, while pointing at the sandbox. "In Midland, we will dredge the sluggish rivers and build the great formation for 'All Streams to The Final Land' to make the flood flow faster, leading it into the Final Land."

Bright light streams emerged from the sandbox one after another, coiling on the ground like enormous dragons.

A magical power spread out from the sandbox, and everyone saw these light streams affected. The velocity of their blood flow increased by tens of times all of a sudden. If these people sitting in here didn't have strong bones, some of them would have exploded and died.

"The great formation will be formed by natural rivers, and the flood will be pushed towards the Final Land. In the meanwhile, these rapidly flowing rivers will bring the water power in the air to the Final Land. The Final Land is a bottomless abyss. No matter

how much moisture will be coming from other worlds, the Final Land can never be filled."

"However, since Gong Gong has started all this to trap our humankind in distress, without a doubt, he won't sit there watching us overcome the flood," continued Si Wen Ming in that bland tone, "Therefore, I need all Midland clans to send out your armies and wipe out those water-kind spirit creatures."

"I need the elite forces of the humankind to gather and organize a defense in the north, guarding the central area against the invasion of of the non-humankind, as they might avail themselves with this opportunity to invade the city."

Si Wen Ming turned around, looked at Ji Hao, pointed at him and said, "Marquis Yao Ji Hao, you lead the army in the north. The Midland will be guarded by you!"

Ji Hao stood up, pushed the pair of fire snakes into his sleeves, and solemnly cupped his hands. He bowed to Si Wen Ming, politely responding with a bright voice.

"Concentrate the elite forces of the humankind and organize a defense in the north." Ji Hao silently sighed in surprise in his head, because Si Wen Ming only explained half of his great plan!

Chapter 1074: Five Lands Back into One

Mr. Crow spread his wings as he floated in the sky. His feathers had turned golden, with dazzling Gold Crow fire swooshing out from ever single feather of his, warming the earth like a smaller sun.

Mr. Crow proudly rolled his beady eyeballs. From time to time, he threw side glances at a few winged dragons lying on the ground, hundreds of meters away. Those blood-red eyes of Mr. Crow were filled with unfriendliness. His Gold Crow bloodline was activated, and the memories that belonged to his ancestors were activated along with the bloodline. Gold Crows never had a good relationship with the dragon-kind.

The few winged dragons smartly raised their heads, turned around, and stared at Mr. Crow, letting out heavy breaths from their nostrils.

If Ji Hao weren't standing on Mr. Crow's head, these few winged dragons would certainly rush up together and teach this Gold Crow a lesson.

Ji Hao coiled his arms before his chest, calmly looking at elite human beings gathering from all directions. You Xiong Family, Lie Mountain Family, Huaxu Family, Suiren Family, Shennong Family, Shaohao Clan, Taihao Clan...

These were all super-scale human clans and families. Each of these families and clans had a human emperor emerged from it. The most elite warriors from these families and clans were wearing glowing armors, holding sharp weapons, mounting on flood dragons or Qilin, or other strong creatures, and gathering towards Ji Hao in formidable arrays.

Even the weakest warriors among them were peak-level Senior Magi. The leaders of hundred-warrior troops were all Magus Kings, and higher level warriors commanders were all powerful

Divine Magi.

These were the strongest forces of these super clans and families, just like those flying bear knights from You Chong Clan. Each one of these warriors was an experienced, top-grade elite.

Ji Hao was the commander of this great elite army. Emperor Shun gave him the greatest power in this army, along with the right to take the life of any warrior, any mount in this army.

The few winged dragons disappointedly snorted...Mr. Crow wasn't scary; the truly scary one was Ji Hao, the man standing on Mr. Crow's head. If they rushed up and assaulted Mr. Crow, it would cost Ji Hao nothing but a word to behead them and grill them as food! These winged dragons were even smarter than ordinary human beings; they would never do such stupid things.

"Marquis Yao!" A Master Maguspriest from Candle Dragon Clan mounted on a deer-like netherworld creature called Ji Hao's name. The creature was entirely wrapped in coiling dark smoke. It walked slowly to Ji Hao, while the Maguspriest continued, "We're ready to go!"

Ji Hao nodded, then waved his hand strongly. He gave a deep yet resonant shout to the north, then growled, "Brothers, let's go!"

Raising his head, Ji Hao looked at the sky and smiled coldly. Mr. Crow flapped his wings, carrying Ji Hao and flying north. The great army began moving, following closely behind Mr. Crow with thunderous footsteps.

This time, the alliance of human clans didn't hold a ceremony to pray to the heaven before the march!

Gong Gong had now been sitting straight on a divine throne in the heaven. He was the one who started this great disaster. And those divine gods emerging from the heaven, they attempted to destroy the humankind as well. For a heaven like this, divine Gods like these, why should human beings pray to them?

Human beings respected the heaven and worshiped divine Gods. Every year, human beings would offer incalculable tributes to the heaven and those divine Gods. They prayed to the heaven for good weather for the crops, for the thrivingness of the humankind.

However, this didn't mean that human beings were going to be servile to divine Gods!

Human beings living in this era had a simple point of view, 'If divine Gods help our humankind to live a peaceful, happy life, we will offer you the best foods and wines we have, offer you the most beautiful things we own. If divine Gods make us destitute and homeless, we will straighten our waists, pick up our weapons, and beat you up!'

Hundreds of winged dragons surpassed Ji Hao, swishing to the north.

Senior Magi from the Magi Palace sat on the backs of these winged dragons. They incanted spells that vibrated the sky slightly. Broad and thick flagstones rose from underground one after another, higher and higher, and gradually topped the flood.

Dazzling spell symbols emerged from those flagstones, releasing a strong force in every direction. The flood was pushed away, and made a straight and broad way, leading to the north.

Countless water-kind spirit creatures raised great waves and roared over through this straight road. Troops of human warriors mounted on flood dragons, rushed up. Following them, were Magus Kings and Divine Magi, treading on clouds and flying up. Thousands of water-kind spirit creatures were crushed, and their blood dyed the water on both sides of the straight road red.

Ji Hao stood on Mr. Crow's head. The Taiji Universe mirror floated above his head, releasing a misty light. Showering under the light, human warriors felt that they had never been so energetic, that no matter how hard they fought, they wouldn't even shed a drop of sweat.

Nevertheless, water-kind spirit creatures touched by the misty light screamed out in pain, because the trace of pre-world extremely negative power contained in their bodies were ignited. Speedily, their bodies began burning with a gray-white negative fire. Along with their shrill screams, these water-kind spirit creatures were all burned into ashes.

Strands of extremely negative power flew to Ji Hao, merging with his body.

"All weak!" Ji Hao sneered and scornfully curved his mouth corners down.

It was true; all these water-kind spirit creatures were weak, and not even a giant one had emerged by now. Gong Gong seemed to be happy to see the humankind send away their forces, because in this way, the defense of Pu Ban City would be weakened.

Only Ji Hao clearly knew about the true purpose of him leading such a strong army to the north. The main purpose was not to prevent the invasion of the non-humankind, who were trapped by the flood as well.

All this was because of Si Wen Ming’s great plan for flood-control.

All Streams to The Final Land... Dredging the rivers in Midland and creating a great magic formation to draw the flood into the Final Land. Not only the moisture in Midland would be drawn into the Final Land, all the unnecessary water power from the four wastelands would be sent there as well.

Si Wen Ming was planning to turn Midland into a giant whirlpool, then pull the four wastelands together with the strong attraction forces of the water power. Eventually, the four wastelands would merge into one with Midland.

Long ago, Si Wen Ming and Ji Hao mentioned about building a united force for the entire humankind. As a foundation for this

great plan, the five main lands of Pan Gu world needed to merge into one. The five lands were separated by vast void, and a round-trip between any two lands would cost years. Therefore, human clans scattered in the five lands could never become a real unity.

This flood was a tremendous disaster to the humankind, but meanwhile, Si Wen Ming discovered an opportunity from it.

Once the goal was accomplished, and the Northern Wasteland merged with Midland, Ji Hao would lead this elite army, march straight into Northern Wasteland, destroy Gong Gong's base and uproot Gong Gong's force!

All Northern Wasteland clans that followed Gong Gong's lead and helped to create this flood had to be wiped out completely. All water-kind spirit creatures living in the North Sea had to go through a great purge.

'The evils we bring on ourselves are the hardest to bear'; with iron and blood, Si Wen Ming and Ji Hao would let those Northern Wasteland people, who chose to betray the humankind, understand this truth. With the blood of those Northern Wasteland traitors, they would awe all the other human clans.

"We need to do a lot!" Ji Hao squared, patted Mr. Crow's head, then said, "But Mr. Crow, we have plenty of time!"

"Controlling the flood, this won't be easy!"

Raising his head, Ji Hao smiled and continued, "Now, we need to find a chicken, then a monkey!"

Chapter 1075: The City On Water

Chi Ban Mountain, the line of defense had collapsed thoroughly.

Strong barracks were broken through by the flood, and caves with grains stored in were drowned by the water. Even the secret Chi Ban Market had closed because of the flood.

The boundless water roared, surging through the mountains rapidly, creating countless whirlpools. Waves flushed across mountains again and again, generating muffled thunderous noises.

Looked around into the distance, countless peaks could be seen standing above the water surface like a chain of islands. On some peaks, human military camps still existed, and even had human warriors stationed in.

Battle drums could be heard in the area. From a distance, water-kind armies came from the north, along with roaring waves. These water-kind spirit creatures were from other worlds.They marched towards Pu Ban City excitedly, in endlessly long arrays.

Fishes, shrimps, turtles, water snakes, sharks, enormous whales... All kinds of water-kind spirit creatures had been shouting and screaming while heading south. Only a small number of water-kind spirit creatures stayed behind, stationed on mountains, facing the last surviving human warriors.

The elite force under Ji Hao’s command split the water and roared over, stirring up a disturbance in the great water-kind army. Many impatient water-kind spirit creatures shouted shrilly and released simply crafted arrows at the human army from tens of miles away.

Those twisted arrows weakly flew for around a hundred meters before being slapped down by the heavy rain. Those larger shaped water-kind spirit creatures roared in anger, raised their whips and lashed those smaller impatient water-kind spirit creatures.

Hundreds of panicked water-kind spirit creatures suffered the lashes and had their skins torn. They lied on the water surface, crying and howling in pain.

The larger ones roared out again, and following their roars, a fierce group of water-kind spirit creatures rushed up and tore those punished ones apart. They chucklingly threw those body pieces into their own mouths and happily chewed and gulped.

A whole thousand winged dragons flapped their enormous wings right upon the water surface and flew over. They lined up in the air and unrestrainedly released the great power that belonged only to the dragon-kind, putting a tremendous pressure on the water-kind army.

From the great water-kind army, thousands of scarily huge boas slowly split the crowd and crawled out. These tens of miles long boas coiled around mountains, fixing their enormous eyes on those winged dragons. Those eyes sparkled with a dim light of fierceness, as these boas didn’t try to hide their desire of drinking the blood and eating the flesh of these winged dragons at all.

These boas were shockingly enormous. It was extremely difficult for them to transform into flood dragons. But, if they could swallow enough amount of dragon meat and drink abundant dragon blood, they would have a chance to become flood dragons. Those winged dragons were pure-blood dragons, the especially strong ones. If a boa could devour an entire winged dragon, it might even become a true dragon.

The power vibrations released from those winged dragons and these boas clashed against each other over the water surface. The point where their power vibrations met, the water began rising slowly. Gradually, a, hundreds of miles thick water wall appeared between the two armies.

"We’re not here to fight a war!" Mr. Crow carried Ji Hao and swiftly flew over. From a great distance, Ji Hao looked at the tens

of enormous water-kind spirit creatures in the water-kind army and said, "We came to rebuild the Chi Ban Mountain defense line, to prevent the invasion of the non-humankind in the north!"

Smiling weirdly, Ji Hao irresponsibly pointed at the south and continued, "If you want to attack Pu Ban City, just go. I won't stop you. Hmm, many people gathered in Pu Ban City now, and we have inexhaustible sources of food in the city now. If you can break the city, a banquet would be expecting you!"

Dark clouds rolled in the sky. Within the dark clouds, Kun Peng's tremendous wings were faintly visible.

High-pitched roars came from the dark clouds, hearing which, the tens of gigantic water-kind spirit creatures roared towards the sky. Each of them cast a threatening glance at Ji Hao, then commanded their warriors and continued heading south.

From the dark clouds in the sky, Kun Peng reached out his head, looking at Ji Hao as he shouted loudly, "Ji Hao, what trick have you been playing? Why did you bring so many people to Chi Ban Mountain? What's the point? The non-humankind? They will never come to attack you through the flood!"

Ji Hao spread his hands and responded blandly, "Who knows? Didn't you collude with the non-humankind? Emperor Shun is still worrying that you might gang up with the non-humankind again and attack us from the north."

Shrugging, Ji Hao started talking nonsense, "Compared with being attacked in Pu Ban City, it's better for me to lead an army to Chi Ban Mountain and station in here. What do you think? In fact, I don't want to be here, to be exposed to the rain all day long!"

Kun Peng frowned and snorted coldly. Then, a dense dark cloud drifted over, gradually covering his body.

Instinctively, Kun Peng felt that it was quite strange for Ji Hao to show up in Chi Ban Mountain with an army. But as Ji Hao said,

except for preventing the invasion of the non-humankind, what else could this army under his command do?

Ji Hao couldn't lead this army to cross the vast boundless void between Midland and the Northern Wasteland and directly attack Gong Gong's base in Northern Wasteland, could he? That would be way too ridiculous!

"Whatever you want. When Gong Gong reaches the extreme level of his power, all your efforts will be in vain." Kun Peng's cold voice came from behind the dark cloud, turned into rumbling thunder, and echoed in the sky.

Tushan old man arrived with ten-thousand starry sky spirit turtles. These enormous turtles gasped deeply and heavily, with thick ropes held in their jaws. Each turtle had been pulling a mountain-huge pile of logs.

Warriors under Ji Hao's command were getting busy.

Three-hundred meters long logs were orderly placed on the water surface. Magi from the Magi Palace incanted a spell loudly. Stimulated by the magic power, the barks of these logs split, and new branches grew out that were hard as iron.

Those new branches wove together, firmly connecting all the logs.

Warriors in logistical support sent over pre-made frames, then began working on those connected logs, generating a long and loud series of metallic clangs. They created rabbets on the logs, then installed those frames sturdily.

A row of houses were quickly built up. Barracks rose from the water surface, with battle flags fluttering in the air. An overwhelming power vibration swept across the entire area.

Three days later, a large-scale city on the water was shaped. Strong ropes reached out from the city and pulled by the ten-thousand starry sky spirit turtles, slowly drifting north.

High up in the air, Kun Peng reached his head out of a dark cloud once again. Looking at this thousand-miles squared city, he popped out his eyes in shock and yelled, "Damn it, unbelievable! Ji Hao, what is he doing? Is he starting a war against the non-humankind? Hehe, that’s suicidal!"

While Kun Peng observed the city, abruptly, countless misty yet especially sharp streams of sword power screamed out from the three-hundred-meter-tall fence wall, of the city on the water, violently striking to the surrounding water-kind army, along with the storm.

Shrill howls could be heard even in the heaven. Those water-kind spirit creatures weren’t prepared for this. Consequently, tens of thousands of them were killed.

Thunders descended from the higher sky. Gong Gong’s raging voice echoed in half of the sky.

"Ji Hao, you are risking your neck!"

Chapter 1076: Ignore It

The human world was filled with sufferers. The flood drowned everything. Only on the mountains, in highlands and central areas of those large families and clans, human beings were still struggling for survival.

In the sky, beyond the strong gales, drifting clouds, and countless natural barriers, the heaven was standing, surrounded by beautiful rosy clouds and splendid glow,.

Before, the heaven was cold, quiet and empty. But now, things were different. Heavily armored elite warriors had been patrolling around. Every important area was heavily fortified. Divine warriors from the Divine Origin Pool mixed with water-kind spirit creatures from the North Sea. Divine powers mixed with the powers of spirit creatures, looking strange, disordered, yet somehow lively.

Magnificent divine halls, which belonged to divine Gods, were occupied by Ms. Green Toad, Fei'lian King and the other Chaos monsters. These powerful Chaos monsters were now wearing luxurious clothes and surrounded by a divine glow, that made them look like true divine Gods.

On those jade pillars, which used to be coiled by divine dragons, colorful boas squirmed their coarse bodies, widely opening their jaws. Sticky and smelly venom flowed down from those crystal jade pillars into the lotus pond down below, turned the blooming lotus pond into a pool of poisonous liquid.

Those golden nests on top of those divine halls used to be the dwellings of divine phoenixes. But now, a group of flying fish and devil batoid proudly stood in those golden nests, waving their feathered wings and letting out shrill screams from time to time.

A strong spirit creature power had suffused the heaven. Broken body corpses scattered all over the ground. Some spirit creatures

still had their old eating habits of eating raw meat and drinking blood. They turned the beautiful divine palaces in the heaven into kitchen. Bones, meat pieces, and stinking internal organs just piled on the ground.

Under this thick stench of blood, some weak spirit creatures, who had no strength and could only serve the others like slaves, had been sneakily walking around. They were picking up rotten meat pieces and throwing them into their mouths, or hiding outside a palace of an ancient divine God, leaving an effluvial puddle of piss.

Gong Gong's raging roars suddenly resounded across the entire heaven. These Spirit creatures paused instantly, simultaneously shut their mouths and stopped moving.

In the central palace that belonged to the central divine emperor, Gong Gong had been glowering at the brightly glowing divine magic mirror in the air with a badly darkened face. He watched Ji Hao activate the great formation based on the city on the water and almost sneakily release the strong sword power that shredded tens of thousands of water-kind creatures instantly. Gong Gong was so angry. But at the same time, he was surprised by Ji Hao's ability.

Through the magic formation he created, he condensed natural powers into sword power and severely harmed his enemies. However, this type of magic formation wasn't created by the Magi Palace. In other words, the humankind never used this type of magic formation before!

Back then, Gong Gong was in a high position in the human society as well. He fought Zhu Rong for years over the position of Great Libation. Therefore, he could tell for sure that human beings didn't create this type of magic formation that could turn natural powers into sword power!

Did Ji Hao create this kind of a magic formation himself? Or did anyone help him? Did those powerful beings who hadn't shown up

in the human world for centuries finally begin making moves in the darkness because they couldn’t tolerate Gong Gong anymore?

In both anger and worry, Gong Gong gave another thunderous roar, then leaped up and cursed out. His voice quickly reached every corner of the heaven through the magic mirror, and also reached to the sky above Chi Ban Mountain. It turned into rumbling thunders and reached the ears of countless people.

In the central palace, a group of beautiful clamshell girls with thin and translucent dresses had been singing and dancing. Gong Gong abruptly burst with a great roar which startled those clamshell girls and made them scream in fear. They threw out all gemstones and jewelry in their hands, then huddled on the ground and shut their shells firmly.

In a corner of the palace, a few musicians shut their mouths and eyes, covered their ears with their hands and dared not to make even the slightest sound, neither dare to hear a word Gong Gong said.

"This bastard, what is he doing? He’s heading north with such a great army, truly for preventing the invasion of the non-humankind? Or, is this a scheme?" Gong Gong anxiously shouted, "A sun has appeared in Pu Ban City! How many more hidden powers does the humankind have? No! I’m leading a troop down! I’m going to destroy this army of Ji Hao myself!

Yemo Tian was lazily lying on a soft cloud, his upper body bared, with two naked spirit water snake girls huddling around him. Hearing Gong Gong, he leaped straight up and yelled in excitement, "Aha! That Earl Yao Ji Hao? Lord Gong Gong, let me go with you! I’m going to crush that b*stard with my destructive weapon!"

"I could have killed him the last time, but a strange person showed up and threw me into the Chaos! I nearly lost in there! I have to wash this shame off myself!" Yemo Tian shouted happily

and even waved his arms.

Gong Gong nodded heavily, then said in a deep voice, "Lord Yemo Tian, It’s the best if you can do it yourself. So..."

Dishi Cha was sitting in a luxurious large armchair, which was carved out of a gemstone, and also surrounded by a large group of beautiful water-kind girls. He helplessly stood up and spread his arms as he sighed carelessly and said, "My dear Lord Gong Gong, dear emperor, why are you so anxious?"

Struggling out of tens of snow-white, smooth arms, Dishi Cha walked to Gong Gong, intimately put a hand on Gong Gong’s arm, and said, "Since the beginning of all this, since we opened the twelve portals, this has become unstoppable!"

"We need to nothing but to wait, quietly, and patiently. Once the law of water from the twelve world intrudes Pan Gu world and the natural system of Pan Gu world loses its balance, the power of water will become the strongest law of this world...Gong Gong, my dear divine emperor, the supreme Black Emperor, you, will be the most powerful being in this world!"

"We only have to wait!"

Dishi Cha put his hands before his chest, clenched his fists, and shouted at Gong Gong, "We only have to wait quietly in this heaven, a safe place. You will grow stronger and stronger, and so will the ones under your command. Your water-kind armies will expand every single day speedily!"

"We don’t need to fight them now! No matter how many plans they have, eventually, the power will control everything!"

Gong Gong remained silent, lost in his thought.

"The heaven is safe!" Dishi Cha looked at Gong Gong and said in a deep voice, "We’re safe in heaven...If you lead troops down yourself, if you push yourself away from the protection of the heaven...Once those powerful beings make a move, the ones who

showed up when Buzhou Mountain collapsed, would you be able to ensure your own safety."

Gong Gong was still hesitating. Ji Hao was bringing such a strong army to the north, and Gong Gong had a very bad feeling about it.

At the moment, a female spirit creature, who was a white wading bird, flew into the palace and yelled thrillingly, "Emperor! Emperor! The queen is pregnant! The queen is pregnant! Octuplet! Octuplet!"

Gong Gong paused for a second, then laughed out wildly.

He waved his hand and responded loudly, "Take me to her, now... Award everyone! Open the treasury in the heaven, award everyone!"

"As for that kid Ji Hao, let him do whatever he wants!"

Chapter 1077: Don't Offend A Woman

Pan Gu world, in the starry void.

Deep in the void was an immeasurable area, filled with sparkling stars. Enormous, bright stars floated in the void, tens of millions of them, slowly moving along complicated orbits, which were undetectable to the humankind.

The powers of all tens of millions of stars were mixed together, suffusing every corner of the whole area. Ordinary people could never approach this area. Even if they could, once they broke in, they would be crushed into nothingness by the pure and heavy star power, immediately.

With a pre-world magic treasure, a man might barely withstand the star power. However, the star formation naturally formed by the tens of millions of stars would make this man lose his way. He would either be lost in the star formation forever, or start vomiting and faint, then be thrown out by the star formation.

In the center of this era, a five-colored crystal palace floated on a dense, colorful cloud.

A group of beautiful, colorful birds had been singing and hovering around the palace. From time to time, a bird would fall from the air, land on the cloud, shake its feathers and then turn into a beautiful girl.

Many pretty girls with flower baskets and mini hoes had been walking in and out of those nursery gardens on the cloud, carefully taking care of all kinds of magical plants.

An extremely strong life-force existed in the air. Contained in this life-force was a mysterious power of creation. Therefore, all magical plants in this place were especially thriving; every single leaf had been glowing with a faint light, showing its strong life-force.

Many pre-world magical herbs were quietly growing in this place; ordinary people in Pan Gu world had never have even heard of these herbs. In many nursery gardens, a single pre-world herb was planted. A fruit on any of those pre-world herbs in these gardens could immediately give an ordinary human being an immortal life or a tremendous power.

To ordinary human being, those were all supreme treasures. But now, these herbs solitarily rooted in their own garden, expecting a glimpse from the owner of this place.

In a pond, which was releasing a dense purple mist, countless lotuses were blooming upon broad green leaves; golden, silvery, purple, green. The lotus pond extended for tens of thousands of miles. In the middle of the pond, a ten-mile-wide, five-colored divine lotus had been glowing splendidly, dimming all the other lotuses in the pond.

Above the divine lotus, a lotus-shaped lamp released a long streak of rainbow, silently hanging above the pond. The lamplight was shaking in the lamp, while releasing a calming and refreshing sense of power.

Beside the pond were boundless purple-golden bamboo woods. These woods were thickly covered in faint golden patterns. Every single bamboo released a strong vibration of spirit power. The misty golden light emitted from the bamboo woods had transformed into a golden cloud, drifting above in the air.

Spirit Wa carried a flower basket with her left hand, and a jade knife with her right hand. She had been leisurely walking in the bamboos woods. From time to time, she would stop and observe few purple-golden divine bamboo. She might cut off some bamboo fungus, dig out a bamboo shoot, or pick up a few fresh mushrooms from the ground.

Ximu held a dragon-head walking stick and walked side by side with Spirit Wa with big steps. Looking at Spirit Wa for a while,

Ximu abruptly laughed out, said, "Spirit Wa, you're living such a free life. Hehe, the human world is a mess now. Are you truly not going to step in?"

Spirit Wa put a snow-white mushroom into her basket, slightly narrowed her stunning pair of eyes, and smiled faintly.

"Step in? How? The injuries I suffered back then haven't recovered yet...The others have all been intriguing against each other, trying whatever they can to snatch things like starving dogs. Each one of them has helpers, but I am alone, and I am a woman. How am I suppose to fight them?"

Xi Mu carried up her walking stick, then stomped heavily on the ground.

Thud! The ground slightly quaked. Ximu looked at Spirit Wa and said in a deep voice, "So you're going to let them do whatever they want? Dachi, Qing Wei, Yu Yu and that bloody dead Shifu of theirs, they went to the Chaos to earn the natural reward. Not to mention them...Priest Hua and Priest Mu have been working quite hard. Aren't you afraid that they might tear the humankind apart?"

Spirit Wa had a cold glimpse of light flash across her eyes, but her tone turned softer and gentler, "What can happen? Those two brothers are completely bound to each other. They were born before the start of time...They want to cause a disturbance in the human world, and some fools are happy to follow their lead... Then let them be!"

While speaking, Spirit Wa abruptly waved her right hand and let out a green beam of light that flashed through the air and shattered all bamboos in the front, five-hundred-meters in radius. Purple-golden spirit power spurted out from the roots of those bamboos. Instantly, a strong, refreshing sense of power suffused the air.

"Some withered leaves, we have to clean them...Some foolish

people, it’s better for them to die." said Spirit Wa coldly, "The dragon-kind, phoenix-kind, and the humankind, these three possessors of the Pan Gu bloodline, none of them is better than the others. When they were newborns, they did strive for excellence. But now, they’re getting weaker and weaker, generation after generation. It’s good for someone to teach them a lesson."

Ximu remained silent for a while, then slightly shook her head and said, "Alright, you’re responsible for the dragon-kind, phoenix-kind and the humankind anyway. You can punish them, you can teach them a lesson, that’s all up to you. But Gong Gong has committed monstrous crimes. Aren’t we going to do anything about it?"

Spirit Wa’s facial expressions turned especially complicated. She smiled faintly, then pointed her finger at those destroyed bamboos. Immediately, all those shattered bamboos grew back out. Within a twinkling of an eye, the destroyed bamboo woods recovered completely, and were even more thriving than before.

"We can’t let him be like this." Spirit Wa gave a cold smile.

Pointing her finger out again, a round-shaped cauldron flew slowly out of a five-colored flame, glowing with a five-colored light. Spirit Wa gently stroked the cauldron and said with a soft voice, "Ximu, you know that I am controlling the great Dao of fertility of all living creatures in the world...Even those divine gods, their fertilities are also under my control!"

"What have you done?" Stunned, Ximu stared at Spirit Wa. Abruptly, a few short hair on Ximu’s forehead stood straight up, one after another.

"Hmm, didn’t Gong Gong’s only son die?" said Spirit Wa blandly, "I gave him eight precious sons. An evil soul, which lived ten lives as evil human beings, once killed his own parents; one cold-blooded soul, which lived ten lives as beasts, once devoured all its brothers; one lascivious soul, lived ten lives as well, and in every

life he lived, he destroyed an entire clan..."

Spirit Wa told Ximu about the ten ‘wonderful’ souls she selected. She erased all previous lives memories of the ten evil souls, but retained the evilness in the deepest areas of those souls, then threw them all to Gong Gong as his sons.

Those were the eight sons Gong Gong was about to have. However, to Gong Gong, these eight sons were actually more like life-takers.

"I went through the entire reincarnation system in this world for those eight evil souls." continued Spirit Wa coldly, "I spent three months to find an opportunity to finally put them into the belly of Gong Gong’s wife."

"Gong Gong is going to drown the whole world, then I’m going to set a fire in his bedroom." said Spirit Wa in that frigid tone, "I don’t show up in the human world and don’t step into human affairs. But this doesn’t mean that...some people are allowed to do whatever they want. Whoever dares to reach the hands to forbidden areas, I will cut off those hands, then kill every last one of his bloodline!"

Crack! An universe-shaking thunder burst in the void, vibrating all buildings in the area.

Chapter 1078: Precious Cauldron Descends From the Sky

The thunder swept across the sky above the heaven, shattered all the clouds in the sky, crushed the few tens of thousands of miles long rainbows, and frightened those boas coiled around the dragon pillars nearly to death. Some lingering thunderbolts and flames fell down from clouds and landed on those poor boas, blasting them into strands of smoke, instantly.

With large steps, Gong Gong had been happily, excitedly walking in an entryway, which was paved by colorful jade. Hundreds of water-kind maids were trotting, followed closely behind Gong Gong, with smiles on their faces.

Madam Ink Cloud was Gong Gong's youngest wife. She and Gong Gong had been married only for tens of years. She was pregnant now, and that too with eight sons!

Eight sons in one pregnancy! Eight sons!

In the recent ten generations, Gong Gong Family had always been thinly populated. Each of the past six generations of Gong Gong family only had one male member. Therefore, to Gong Gong, this was the greatest news ever! Especially at this time, when Gong Gong raised a flood, pushing to humankind into a hopeless situation. To Gong Gong, this was a sign!

"I am going to become the supreme central divine emperor. From now on, Black Emperor is the noblest divine emperor in the whole world!"

"The world has sensed my power. I am blessed. I finally have sons! Eight sons! Eight sons! Haha! Hahaha!"

Gong Gong was thrilled. He waved his arms in excitement, and even twisted his butt, leaping to Madam Ink Cloud's palace. While he was happily rushing on the jade-paved entryway, that thunder

burst from above the sky and resounded across the heaven. Gong Gong was startled by the thunder, that he even screamed out and leaped around a hundred meters high.

Hundreds of beautiful water-kind maids fell to the ground. That great thunder delivered a strong power and laid a terrifying pressure on these maids. Half of these maids were forced to show their original shapes. At the moment, fishes, shrimps, turtles were seen leaping and crawling all over the ground.

Descending along the thunder was a three-thousand-meters wide, round-shaped, five-colored cauldron. The cauldron roared down and heavily smashed on the gate of the heaven. Followed by a thunderous bang, a dazzling, five-colored divine light burst. The gate of the heaven never broke, but just now, the cauldron created a fist-sized crack on it.

The cauldron bounced back and smashed a troop of water-kind warriors in patrol, then spun in the air and flew towards the ground, leaving a five-colored stream of light in the air.

Beyond the sky, from far, far away, a badly insincere voice could be heard, "Ahyaya, it slipped out of my hand and broke the gate of the heaven. What a huge mistake I’ve just made!"

Pausing for a second, this insincere voice laughed, "Ahyaya...It’s doesn’t matter, the heaven has no owner now anyway. Who would know it was us? When the chosen new divine emperor ascends to the throne, he can fix it himself!"

Crack! The broken gate collapsed, stirring up a dense cloud.

Large groups of divine warriors guarding in or outside the gate were all stunned. They looked at the collapsed gate, then glanced at each other. A strong wind blew loudly across them, but none of them could say a word.

The round-shaped cauldron with five colors was falling straight to the northern side of Midland. The cauldron was glowing

splendidly, with countless patterns of thunderbolts and clouds, mountains and rivers, and all kinds of creatures, sparkling and flowing on it.

The cauldron shattered the air and generated an earth-shaking series of thunder. It fell swiftly, compressed the air, and forcibly created a thirty-meters thick layer of strong gale underneath it. The roaring gale was strong and heavy enough to reach to a tangible point. The loud noise created by the gale even cracked the space, leaving countless black cracks in the sky.

Ji Hao stood in the enormous city on the water, holding an arrow in his hand. He had been loudly teaching the over one-hundred-thousand disciples from his Palace of Dao to control a changing large-scale magic formation. Based on the city on the water and molded on Yu Yu's sword formation, Ji Hao created a great-scale sword formation. Activated by his one-hundred-thousand disciples, this sword formation was powerful enough to threaten Divine Magi.

Countless sharp streams of sword power spurted out from the formation, sweeping across the surrounding area like a storm.

Struck by the sword power, all water-kind spirit creatures near the city were crying and screaming, desperately fleeing backward. These water-kind spirit creatures all had roughly crafted armors and weapons. Many of them could only fend themselves with their own scales. None of them was a top-grade one; instead, they were all weak, bottom-level water-kind spirit creatures. Wherever the sword power reached, blood flowed like rivers while corpses piled up like mountains. Countless oddly-shaped water-kind creatures floated on the water surface, with blood spraying out from their bodies.

Kun Peng's raging growls could be heard from the sky without an end. Water-kind spirit creatures near the city hurriedly turned away, took a large detour, and avoided Ji Hao's city on the water, then continued heading to Pu Ban City. No water-kind creature

dared to approach the city ever again.

However, once Kun Peng gave a new wave of roar, that giant cauldron smashed down straight to his head, along with a destructive force. A thunderous boom was generated. Fortunately, Kun Peng dodged nimbly, and the cauldron only landed on his wing. That wing of his was punctured directly.

A three-thousand-meters wide hole appeared on Kun Peng's tremendous body. Blood with flesh pieces mixed in it shed all over the sky.

Shrill howls came from the sky, but soon, Kun Peng yelled in surprise, "A pre-world treasure? Which one?"

The cauldron nearly smashed on his head, but now, Kun Peng greedily spread his claws, reaching to the cauldron.

Buzz! A puff of five-colored thunderbolt dazzled out of the cauldron and struck on Kun Peng's body like a firework.

Countless five-colored electric bolts covered Kun Peng's body, sizzling on his body and cutting him like daggers. Kun Peng screamed hoarsely, while those electric bolts cut his skin open, leaving bone-deep wounds on his body.

Screaming in pain, Kun Peng desperately fled to the higher sky, daring not to take another glance at the cauldron. The rain of blood was still falling from the sky.

The cauldron heavily landed in the east of the water city, less than a hundred miles away from it.

Followed by another thunderous bang, a glowing-red mushroom-shaped cloud rose into the air. At least a million water-kind spirit creatures were crushed by the shocking waves brought down by the cauldron.

Ji Hao watched this world-shaking scene in a daze. All of a sudden, he sensed a strong vibration from his lower belly. That small cauldron wrapped in the five-colored flame started to spin

swiftly in his lower belly, and a strong attraction force was generated.

Along with a humming noise, the enormous five-colored cauldron, which descended from the sky and created a giant hole in Chi Ban Mountain area, shrunk suddenly. The cauldron spun on the ground, while shrinking to the size of a fist, flying speedily to Ji Hao.

Before Ji Hao could react, the cauldron had already drilled into his lower belly, slowly merging with that small translucent cauldron inside his lower belly.

An inexhaustible power of creation surged out from the merged cauldron.

The Pan Gu bell rang rumblingly, then the small cauldron gave a silvery ring. The ring of the bell and the ring of the cauldron echoed each other, while threads of Chaos power rose from both the bell and the cauldron.

"What...What on earth it that?" Ji Hao shouted out in shock.

No one responded. Weirdly, this cauldron descended from the sky and settled down in Ji Hao’s body just like that.

Chapter 1079: A Monkey Jumping Out

On the vast water, troops of water-kind spirit creatures could be seen coming from the north. Meanwhile, Ji Hao's water city was pulled by ten-thousand starry void spirit turtles, slowly moving north.

Those water-kind spirit creatures vigilantly avoided the enormous city, staying at least a hundred miles away from it. They were enemies, but they moved at peace with each other.

The sky was still covered in dark clouds, and the heavy rain never stopped. A thick layer of water mist drifted upon the water surface. The humid mist had been approaching the wooden city wall of the water city, but was dispelled by those enormous sparkling spell symbols on the city wall from miles away.

Human warriors guarded on the city wall, alertly looking around. Their eyes sparkled with bright lights; under their watch, those water-kind spirit creatures couldn't possibly launch attacks from underwater.

The city slowly moved north. The journey was safe and peaceful, and half a month had passed just like this.

Ji Hao sat in the headquarters, organizing the files sent from Pu Ban City and placing them orderly on the table.

Si Wen Ming had already started arranging manpower and material resources to implement his plan for flood-control. However, the plan was now facing a strong resistance. Once those people walked out of the great defensive formation of the city, water-kind armies attacked.

Within half a month, the human army had already fought over a hundred battles against the water-kind.

The number of those water-kind spirit creatures was way too huge, despairingly huge. Human warriors were well equipped; the

individual power of each human warrior was way greater than those weak water-kind creatures. Both sides had suffered damages. Countless water-kind spirit creatures were slaughtered, the corpses piling up like mountains. These water-kind spirit creatures all turned back into their original forms before they died, and their corpses largely enriched the meat reserves of Pu Ban City.

Facing all kinds of difficulties, Si Wen Ming's great plan came into operation.

"I wonder when can all this end." Ji Hao sat with crossed legs, with a clear sphere of mist floating above his head. Upon the mist, a red sun was shining in the air. The warm red light of the sun created changing shadows in the room, giving rise to a magical and mysterious sight.

Ji Hao's spirit power surged towards the small cauldron in his lower belly like tidewater.

Observing for a couple of says, Ji Hao basically concluded that the small cauldron in his lower belly before, the one wrapped in the five-colored flame, was only the spirit of a supreme treasure, and the enormous cauldron that descended from the sky was the real treasure.

By now, the treasure had remerged with its spirit and generated a magical transformation. With Ji Hao's current cultivation and knowledge, he couldn't tell how did the transportation happen.

However, the Pan Gu bell automatically sank to his lower belly from his spiritual space and hung above the small cauldron, ringing slightly. The space was broken by the bell, as it had now been extracting pure, inexhaustible Chaos power directly from the Chaos and sending into the cauldron.

All kinds of fierce powers were contained in the Chaos power, added with countless types of poisonous powers, evil powers and the other negative energies. Therefore, no one in the world was stupid enough to cultivate him or herself directly with the Chaos

power. However, as the Pan Gu bell was sending the raw Chaos power into the small cauldron, the latter glowed brightly with its five-colored light, creating a bottomless swirl that absorbed all the Chaos power. Processed by the small cauldron, slightly turbid yet pure and mellow streams of power were released from the cauldron, merging with Ji Hao's body.

Half a month after the cauldron settled in Ji Hao's body, Ji Hao felt that his bones had turned extremely strong and solid, while a strange and especially great power was flowing through his body. This improvement happened only to Ji Hao's physical body, while his cultivation of Dao wasn't affected at all.

"An interesting treasure." murmured Ji Hao, "I think this treasure was inside my body before I was even born. So...who put it in me?"

In the past few days, Ji Hao had been observing the cauldron with his spirit power. More or less, he discovered some functions of this cauldron. It could possess an immeasurably great creative ability; simply speaking, this cauldron was a fully-automatic production machine.

Armors, weapons, flags, streamers, warships, magic medicines, magic poisons, with enough materials, this cauldron could produce anything without limitations. Additionally, the products of this cauldron were all top-quality pieces. The cauldron was even powerful enough to turn after-world into pre-world.

Ji Hao's Taiji Creation cauldron had the same magical function, but it was made by Qing Wei, Yu Yu and that mysterious powerful being together, and was more of a killing weapon. In terms of production efficiency, the Taiji Creation cauldron was far weaker than the small cauldron inside Ji Hao's body.

Besides, in order to seal the Pan Jia sun, Ji Hao had left the Taiji Creation cauldron on the Sun Tower in Pu Ban City, to restrain is power. Once he left a cauldron in Pu Ban City, an even more

magical cauldron descended from the sky. What a coincidence! Ji Hao felt that this was planned, and the planners seemed to have a bigger goal.

"It’s good for me though!" Ji Hao took a deep breath, and with the creation method with nine turns, he sent the Chaos power releasing from the small cauldron to every corner of his body. From his body, a terrifyingly strong power vibration was released. All of a sudden, a beautiful luster appeared on Ji Hao’s skin.

Puff! The door curtain was abruptly lifted. Man Man angrily walked in and conveniently threw the pair of hammers on the ground.

"Ji Hao, those Ten Sun Country people are so annoying! You have to do something." Man Man pouted her lips, standing in front of Ji Hao with her hands resting on hips as she said, "We haven’t fought any battle yet, but those people said that they didn’t bring enough arrows, and they want us to give each archer ten-thousand arrows! And those arrows have to be top-grade ones with spell symbols! So unreasonable!"

"Eh?" Ji Hao raised his head. All the way, the army under his command had been extra peaceful, and Ji Hao was just wondering why anyone didn’t pop up to cause any trouble. As he thought, it was about time for some people to jump out.

Ji Hao released his spirit power and instantly covered the entire city.

By the entrance of the logistic camp, a few Eastern Wasteland warriors commanders with feather armors, along with hundreds of Eastern Wasteland warriors and the guards of the logistic camp been pushing and shoving each other. At the time, an Eastern Wasteland warrior commander was yelling, "Get out of the way! We need arrows! Without enough arrows, are you expecting our Eastern Wasteland archers to fight with blades and swords?!"

"We need arrows! We need arrows! This is such a great army,

don’t you have arrows in stock? Did you embezzle all the arrows?" Another Eastern Wasteland warrior commander shouted aloud. Ji Hao clearly saw him violently elbow a guard, even denting half of the guard’s chest.

The guard fell to the ground while vomiting blood. The group of Eastern Wasteland archers shouted even louder.

The Eastern Wasteland warrior commander who attacked the guard just now laughed loud and raised his hands high, telling the others that he was innocent. Suddenly, a silhouette flashed across the air and showed up before his face. That was Shaosi, who was responsible for logistical support of the army. She squeezed the commander’s neck and threw him into the sky.

Swish! The neck of that commander was pulled longer for over half a foot while he was sent swishing to the sky like an arrow.

Chapter 1080: Strong Oppression

Shaosi moved as fast as a bolt of lightning. The group of Eastern Wasteland archers failed to react timely. It was only after their commander was thrown into the sky that they finally saw Shaosi, who showed up so suddenly.

The strong air resistance wounded the neck of that warrior commander severely. He was a Magus King; his spirit blood quickly flushed through his injured neck and speedily healed his broken bones and muscles. While he was flying in the sky, this commander lowered his head and growled out towards the ground.

"Enemy attack!"

This alarm of enemy attack started a great disturbance in the entire water city. From all directions, troops of elite warriors rushed out of the barracks, pulled their swords and blades out of the sheathes, leaving resounding metal clangs lingering in the air. Meanwhile, deep dragon roars could be heard echoing to the clouds, as hundreds of enormous winged dragons flapped their wings and rose from the city.

The hundreds of well-trained archers outside the logistic camp swiftly scattered, rushed to high areas in the city, and pulled open their bows, aimed at Shaosi. Exquisitely crafted arrows sparked with an eye-piercing light. Strands of glowing mist coiled around the arrows, weaving into highly lethal magic spell symbols.

All those arrows were top-grade spell symbols arrows secretly crafted by Eastern Wasteland masters with the best materials. These Eastern Wasteland archers were only Senior Magi, but with those powerful arrows, they could launch high-level Magus-King-grade attacks.

Shaosi was locked by hundreds of spell symbol arrows. Visibly, waves of transparent power streams spread out from the arrowheads and pierced through the air, reaching to Shaosi’s body.

These power streams were generated by the spell symbols on those arrows. The transparent power streams seemed to crush Shaosi's body, and made her long shirt flutter in the air, as if a strong gale had been blowing across.

Ji Hao walked out of the headquarters, trod on a cloud, and flew to the logistic camp.

In the air, the Eastern Wasteland warrior commander started to fall. Strong gusts of wind rose from around his body and transformed into a cyan-colored pair of wings that held him up. Proudly and viciously, he dove down from the sky. Clearly, Shaosi was his target.

Ji Hao raised his head, took a glance at that commander, and abruptly burst with a cold growl, "Giving fake alarm, shaking the morale of the army... Kill him!"

Feng Xing walked out from a camp behind and silently pulled his divine bow open, releasing a barely visible, shadow-like arrow. In the air, the face of that warrior commander was instantly occupied by fear. He screamed while twisting his body, attempting to dodge that arrow. However, the arrow flew way too fast. Everyone nearby heard a clear popping noise, when the commander's head was blown up.

A hazy arrow silhouette drilled up for thousands of meters high, then swished across the air, leaving a long, arc-shaped trace in the sky while flying back to Feng Xing. An exquisitely made leather quiver tied around Feng Xing's waist glowed with a faint light, as the arrow accurately flew back into it.

This kind of quiver was a special local product of the Eastern Wasteland; a quiver like this could contain an amazingly great number of arrows, and could automatically retrieve them.

The quiver tied around Feng Xing's waist was not an ordinary piece at all. Instead, it was made by Ji Hao with dragon skin and many other top-grade materials. Based on the Eastern Wasteland

quivers, it was made with the Taiji Creation caldron. The capacity of this quiver was a million arrows, enough for Feng Xing to fight a small-scale battle alone!

Besides, the retrieving magic formation based on Feng Xing's quiver was stronger and more effective than the ordinary ones. Within an area of thousand miles around Feng Xing, all released arrows could automatically fly back, because of the mutual attraction forces released from those retrieving magic spell symbols.

The Eastern Wasteland commander, who took the lead in this, was killed by Feng Xing with a single arrow. Witnessing his death, the hundreds of archers, who had their arrowheads pointing at Shaosi, paused simultaneously. Subconsciously, they loosened their fingers. Following a shrill series of swishing noise, hundreds of arrows flew to Shaosi's vital body parts, along with sharp gusts of wind.

The distances between Shaosi and these archers varied from thirty meters to three hundred meters. Through short distances, those arrows reached to Shaosi almost immediately after they were released from the strings.

A hazy wave of space-ripple appeared in front of Shaosi and sparkled. Next, all arrows tat flew into the ripples, disappeared.

Silently, those arrows disappeared without a trace. Those Eastern Wasteland archers were stunned. They lowered their heads and slapped on their quivers. A round-shaped retrieving magic spell symbol glowed dimly on top of each of those quivers, yet not a single arrow flew back.

"What's happening?" Ji Hao descended from the sky, walked straight to Shaosi and gently patted her shoulder.

Shaosi smiled faintly and took a small step towards Ji Hao, then held her hands behind her body, silently looking at those archers.

Commanders from all clans walked over from different directions. They came pretty fast, and the corpse of that Eastern Wasteland warrior commander finally thudded on the ground, after the main commanders of You Xiong Family, Shennong Family and the other ten super clans and families arrived. Blood sprayed out from the dead commander's neck, splashing all over the ground.

"Ugh!"

Those main commanders each let out a heavy breath, then looked at Ji Hao with different facial expressions.

They followed Ji Hao to Chi Ban Mountain and built a city on the water. After that, no moves were made by Ji Hao and instead, such a strong, united army that gathered the elite forces from almost all strong human clans had been vapidly drifting on the water.

Weren't they supposed to prevent the invasion of the non-humankind, who might take the flood as an opportunity and launch sudden attacks? Where were the armies of the non-humankind?

Not to mention the non-humankind, even those water-kind spirit creatures had been staying away from this city, without showing a sign of attacking!

They came all the way here to do what? Many main commanders were so confused by now. However, they forced themselves to not ask any question. When some other people stepped out and caused trouble, they would have the opportunity to throw out all questions they had.

The first one who jumped out, as Ji Hao thought, was from Ten Sun Country; the entire Ten Sun Country was at odds with Ji Hao.

Nevertheless, they didn't think that Ji Hao would directly order his people to kill.

Yi Di walked out of the crowd with a dark face. Glancing at the

corpse of the dead commander, he said coldly, "Marquis Yao Ji Hao, what do you mean by this? My warriors don’t have enough arrows, which means we can’t fight long-lasting battles. I told them to come for some arrows, so you killed a man for that?"

Ji Hao took two steps forwards. "Don’t play any language game, and don’t play any dirty tricks. If you dare to ruin this mission, I will dare to kill people!" said Ji Hao through gritted face, his face horribly close to Yi Di’s.

Yi Di responded with a harsh tone, "What language game am I playing? What dirty trick am I playing? I’m just..."

Ji Hao violently interrupted him and said, "You want arrows? Fine. You and those under your direct command, if you have the guts to go to Liang Zhu City to find out the current situation of the non-humankind, I will give you as many arrows as you want!"

Yi Di turned his eyes away from Ji Hao to avoid his sharp gaze and said coldly, "I have two-hundred-thousand top-grade elite archers under my command! Each of them needs at least ten...No, fifty-thousand high-quality arrows! Can you do that?!"

Shaosi’s look changed. Yi Di was demanding an exorbitant price!

She clearly knew that this time, although the army had brought great quantities of supply from Pu Ban City, a big half of those supplies were food. As for arrows and other kinds of expendable things, the reserves were actually rather limited.

However, Ji Hao laughed out loud, "Good, two-hundred-thousand archers, fifty-thousand high-quality arrows for each! Give me three days, and I will give you the arrows you need! But if you can’t take your people to Liang Zhu City to get some valuable information, you, and all those people under you lead, I will take your heads."

Before Yi Di could respond, Ji Hao pushed on his chest. A violent force struck on Yi Di’s chest, disabling him from standing steadily

and forcing him back staggeringly. Yi Di bumped into the group of people behind him, and made the tens of high-grade commanders from Ten Sun Country all fall to the ground.

Chapter 1081: The Power of the Cauldron

All the other onlookers gasped loudly, staring at Ji Hao in both shock and confusion.

Yi Di was a valued prince of Ten Sun Country, who was cultivated carefully by the country. Although he wasn't as talented as Yi Shen, undoubtedly, he was an incomparable elite; added with the rich resources possessed by Ten Sun Country, despite his young age, Yi Di was already a peak-level Divine Magus.

Everyone on the scene could tell for sure that just now, Ji Hao didn't case any magic. Instead, he pushed Yi Di back with purely physical strength. Being pushed by Ji Hao, Yi Di staggered back; this was explainable, as Yi Si wasn't prepared for this after all. However, among the tens of high-grade Eastern Wasteland commanders behind Yi Di, three to five were Divine Magus, while all the others were Magus Kings. Yet, they all ended up lying on the ground now.

A sturdy man from Fire Dragon Clan, Southern Wasteland exclaimed out loud, "Earl Yao has such a great strength...Is he already..."

In terms of physical strength, Yi Di was already outstanding among all Divine Magi, added with the other few Divine Magi and Magus Kings, they were supposed to be unshakable. Nevertheless, Ji Hao put all of them to the ground with a slight push. This terrifying strength of his reminded many people of the word 'Supreme Magus'.

No one believed it; no one was willing to believe that Ji Hao was actually breaking into that legendary level. It was impossible. Ji Hao was so young, and he was born in a small clan, called Gold Crow clan, which was a weak, declining, mid-scale clan!

Ji Hao slightly swung his arm and took a quick glance at his palm. Nothing happened to his hand. Ji Hao was too surprised by

himself.

The Pan Gu bell and the small cauldron had been working together in his body. Pure streams of Chaos power were flowing out from the cauldron, merging with every part of Ji Hao's body. Ji Hao's body had been strengthening bit by bit continuously. He didn't need to do anything, yet his body was continuously growing stronger.

The cauldron was merely improving his physical strength, but this improvement happened quite surprisingly fast.

"This is an army, away from home. Anyone who dares to disobey the order and undermines the morale, will end up like this man!" Pointing at the dead Eastern Wasteland commander on the ground, who had his head blown up, Ji Hao shouted. Meanwhile, Ji Hao cast a glance at Yi Di, whose face was extremely sulky at the moment, then continued, "You, our Eastern Wasteland brothers, you want arrows? I will give you arrows...But, if you fail to fulfill the task, don't blame me for being too strict!"

A series of footsteps could be heard, following which, Xie Zhi walked out from behind a large tent slowly. Xie Zhi was a purely black creature, and had been releasing a stern power vibrations from his body. Walking side by side with Xie Zhi was Hao Tao, who had a dark, square face, and hundreds of military officers dressed neatly, with blood-red belts.

Those high-grade commanders from large clans and families weren't willing to follow every word Ji Hao said. Ji Hao was young, and it was hard for him to convince everyone.

But once Hao Tao showed up, things were different. Hao Tao was a senior minister; he had served under Emperor Shun's command for years, and had been responsible for the matters of penalty of the human society. He walked out and took a glance at the group of people with a serious look. Instantly, everyone on the scene was awed, including Yi Di. They cupped their hands to Ji Hao and

silently accepted his words.

In front of the logistic camp, commanders from all clans walked away. The area quieted back down. However, everyone clearly sensed a great force agitating under this quietness.

Within three days, Ji Hao needed to prepare fifty thousand high-grade spell symbol arrows for each archer under Yi Di's command. This led to an astronomical number. Yi Di demanded that on purpose; by doing this, he could gain great benefits. Spell symbol arrows were pricey, because of the high manufacturing process complexity. High-quality spell symbol arrows were definitely strategic resources.

Yi Di required fifty-thousand high-quality arrows for each of his warriors, and Ji Hao had stupidly agreed?!

Many high-grade commanders from those large clans had now been sneering in their heads over Yi Di's recklessness and Ji Hao's stupidity!

Those were high-quality spell symbol arrows. Even for Senior archers from Ten Sun Country, a strong force that was famous for fabulous archery, it would be already extravagant if they each had ten high-quality spell symbol arrows when they went out for a battle.

Even Magus Kings from Ten Sun Country could only unlimitedly use regular arrows without spell symbols; only archers at the level of Divine Magus or above could use spell symbols without limitations. Ten Sun Country was a wealthy country, but they couldn't afford to let their warriors use spell symbol arrows without any limitation.

With the amazing archery of Eastern Wasteland archers, an archer could release at least a hundred arrows within a second, and spell symbol arrows were disposable weapons. Even though Ten Sun Country was rather wealthy, allowing all their archers to use spell symbol arrows unlimitedly could drain their money very

soon!

"Our Marquis Yao does know about the cost of each spell symbol arrow, doesn't he?" At last, those high-grade leaders followed Ji Hao here all had the same thought, "He's young after all, he doesn't know that those things cost money!"

To this, Hao Tao simply stood in front of Ji Hao, seriously looked at him and said, "Marquis Yao, you made the promise, but can you keep it? This army is ruled by the military law. Even though you're the chief commander of the army, you shouldn't give false promises. If you do, don't blame me for punishing you!"

Ji Hao solemnly cupped his hands to Hao Tao and said with a deep voice, "Minister Hao Tao, don't worry, I know what I'm doing!"

Man Man stood aside and tilted her head, gently stroking Xie Zhi's head while grinningly put her mouth to Xie Zhi's ear and said, "See, see, uncle dark face is scaring people! I'm not afraid of the military law. As long as we go back to Southern Wasteland..."

Hao Tao's face turned darker and darker. Shaosi hurriedly covered Man Man's mouth with her hand and smiled to Hao Tao a bit embarrassedly.

"Man Man, don't say that!" Ji Hao patted Man Man's head and said, "Minister Hao Tao is right. You shouldn't say that."

Back at the headquarters, Ji Hao put three faintly glowing spell symbol arrows in front of him. A magical power vibration had been spreading from these arrows.

These were three top-grade spell symbol arrows, one called 'volcano collapse', that could deliver large range explosion, one called 'hurricane', that had the highest flying speed and the longest firing range, and the last one called 'wolf tooth', specially designed to break heavy armors and shields.

The bodies of these three arrows were made from regular alloy,

yet the arrowheads were carved from top-grade jade mixed with magic crystals. Each arrowhead was as large as half a palm, thickly covered in over a thousand tiny spell symbols, and coiled in glowing mist streams.

"Interesting!"

Ji Hao smiled, picked up the three three-meter-long spell symbol arrows, and slapped on his lower belly.

The five colored cauldron buzzed inside his lower belly, then released a dense, colorful mist, wrapping the three arrows in.

Countless tiny five-colored spell symbols flashed across the surface of the cauldron. Within a blink of an eye, the three arrows were disintegrated and turned back into basic raw materials. All spell symbols on the arrowheads became flowing streams of light, drifting inside the cauldron.

In a single second, Ji Hao learned everything about the materials, manufacturing techniques and the spell symbol systems required by the three arrows.

"Hm, along with these spell symbols, here, I only need to add a tiny magic seal."

Ji Hao worked for a while, then abruptly laughed out. Hurriedly, he walked out of the headquarters and flew out of the city along with a glowing cloud, jumping into the water.

Chapter 1082: Make Arrows

Under the water city, a few patrolling flood dragons discovered Ji Hao.

Their water-tank-sized eyes shone brightly in the water. Blandly, they glanced across Ji Hao’s body. A flood dragon dashed up and gently slapped Ji Hao’s arm with its tail, then silently swam away.

Ji Hao opened his erect eye. Wherever his eyes reached, the turbid water turned clear. With a single glance, Ji Hao clearly saw everything within the area tens of thousands of miles in radius.

Underwater, large groups of water-kind creatures had been heading south as well. These water-kind creatures hadn’t cultivated themselves into spirit creatures yet, but they were indeed affected by spirit creatures power, and were all enormous in shape. These scary-looking water-kind creatures silently and quickly moved south along the flood in large groups.

Ji Hao dove deeper. He took out a jade talisman and pointed his finger at it. A dim light flashed across, displaying the map of the entire Chi Ban Mountain area. Chi Ban Mountain range and the broad plain area on the north side of it was the main line of defense of the humankind. In the past countless years, the humankind had gotten a clear picture of this area, including every inch of the earth and those mineral resources buried under it. The humankind knew everything about the slightest load in this area.

Following the map, Ji Hao searched around the mountain range. Soon, he found a magic crystal mine that extended for over a hundred thousand miles.

"Treasure, treasure, you came to me, and your spirit grew up with me. This proves that we’re destined to be together." Ji Hao gently patted his own belly, while softly stroking the cauldron wrapped in the five-colored flame, "Do me a favor. To you, it won’t be hard!"

The cauldron stayed moveless, but its lid suddenly flew up. Followed by a deep buzz, a five-colored, dense glowing mist puffed out and filled every single pore of his. Next, the glowing mist suddenly transformed into a colorful torrent, covering the entire mine.

In that area, the mountains quaked slightly. Thousands of meters tall mountains were instantly turned into thin air streams by the glowing mist, then were swallowed by the mist. Along with thunderous cracking noise, raw magic crystals started shaking in the mine. Within a couple of breaths, tens of billions of different sized raw magic crystals rose from the bottom of the water. The sizes of these crystal pieces varied, from the size of a fist to the size of a hill.

Glowing mist streams tightly wrapped those raw crystal pieces, bringing them to Ji Hao’s body. Through the glowing mist, those raw crystal pieces flew into Ji Hao’s body and quickly fell into the cauldron. Through the opening of the cauldron, Ji Hao saw these raw magic crystals quickly hover inside, before the coarse rock layer on their surface disappeared, and the sparkling crystal was exposed.

Strands of five-colored glowing mist flushed and scoured these magic pieces like water streams. Within a couple of breaths, these magic crystal pieces began shrinking speedily, yet their qualities had been improved to a stunning degree.

Inside the cauldron, every piece of magic crystal had become flawlessly clear. Within the outer crystal surface, thick spirit liquid seemed to drip out at any time. What surprised Ji Hao more was that faintly visible marks of natural law had been emerging from the surfaces of these magic crystals, making these crystals shine splendidly, like gemstones.

"A little too much... But perfect for awing some people!" Ji Hao murmured. Within seven to eight minutes, the entire mine was emptied. Even the mountains on the mine were turned into

nothingness by the colorful glowing mist from the cauldron.

Ji Hao took out the jade map talisman, heading to the next mine, which was a jade mine.

The arrowheads of spell symbol arrows had to be made with both magic crystals and jade; only these two materials could allow the arrow to contain all kinds of powerful spell symbols. For producing the arrowheads, the consumption of jade was ten times greater than that of magic crystals.

Ji Hao spent two whole hours and emptied twelve enormous jade mines, finally attaining enough amount of jade.

Next, iron ore mines, bronze mines, tungsten mines...With the amazing purifying power of the cauldron, Ji Hao emptied over a hundred metal mines in half a day. By now, a giant quantity of alloy was already contained in the cauldron.

No one was disturbed. Ji Hao made himself invisible with the Taiji Universe mirror, then sneakily went back into the headquarters.

Inside the cauldron, the materials he collected had been through a thorough transformation. This cauldron had an unimaginable power of creation, and the power of creation was the most original motivation for all transformations in the world.

Mountain-huge piles of alloy had been melting speedily and splitting up. In the cauldron, an invisible force had been pulling the melted alloy, shaping it, and solidifying it.

Everything happened almost simultaneously. Within a quarter of an hour, ten billion six feet long, thumb-thick alloy arrow shafts were shaped. Ji Hao covered the cauldron entirely with his spiritual power and concentrated on the changes happing inside the cauldron.

Mysterious streams of power had been rolling and surging. However, Ji Hao couldn’t understand the power. He didn’t know

where the power came from; he couldn't tell what, or who had been controlling that power. But indeed, within a quarter of an hour, ten-billion arrow shafts were made.

Those spell symbol arrows he brought from the warehouse in Pu Ban City were all handmade by human blacksmiths. Therefore, more or less, the arrow shafts were slightly different from each other; some might be a bit thicker, and some might be an inch longer. On some arrow shafts, those carved spell symbols had distinct personal styles that belonged to their makers.

If one compared two 'wolf tooth' arrows made by two different blacksmiths with exactly same materials, it would be highly possible that one of them could penetrate a thirty meters thick iron wall, while the other one could only reach three meters and two-foot deep into that wall.

Unlike those handmade arrow shafts, all arrow shafts in the cauldron were exactly the same. They were made with same materials, and had the same length and thickness; every spell symbol on each arrow shaft was exactly the same as well. Ji Hao took out a hundred arrow shafts from the cauldron and carefully compared them by using his spirit power for a whole hour...

He failed to discover any difference; each detail was the same. These arrow shafts were like shadows of each other, that no matter how hard he tried, no matter what magic he used, he couldn't differentiate them.

"Such a...terrifying power!" Ji Hao sighed in shock.

Ji Hao then began producing arrowheads. Among the three types of arrows, 'volcano collapse' arrows had the largest and bluntest arrowheads, 'hurricane' arrows had slim and thin arrowheads, while 'wolf tooth' arrows had triangular, spiral-shaped arrowheads. The shapes of these three types of arrowheads were different. Spell symbols carved on them were not the same either.

However, just like those arrow shafts, arrowheads produced by

the cauldron were flawless. Arrowheads of the same type were exactly the same.

Following a puffing nose, thin streams of golden essence sun fire emerged. According to Ji Hao’s design, the essence sun fire transformed into countless threads of golden light and slowly drilled into the arrow shafts. Right after that, the golden light shone and the arrow shafts and arrowheads connected perfectly into one. A whole ten billion super-quality spell symbols arrows were piled up in the cauldron.

"Yi Di, I’d like to see what other tricks can your Ten Sun Country play."

Ji Hao chuckled and said, "I wish you can all be foolish enough to attack me with these arrows I made, because that would be so damn funny!"

Chapter 1083: Arrows Like Tidewater

Ji Hao promised Yi Di that he would give the arrows in three days. By now, he still had a quarter of an hour. Quietly, high-grade leaders from all large human clans had come near the headquarters with their people.

They didn’t approach the headquarters, neither did they make any noise. They were only silently watching.

The ones close to Ji Hao seemed to be worrying. Yi Di demanded a ridiculously large number of high-quality spell symbols arrow; what he did was no better than looting a burning house. Giving each of his warrior fifty-thousand high-quality spell symbol arrows? This was totally unreasonable. He disregarded the overall situation; he did this for nothing but making difficulty for Ji Hao on purpose.

With the power of the humankind, regular arrows made with whatever materials could be provided without limitations, but spell symbol arrows were different. Making spell symbol arrows not only required large quantities of top-grade materials, it also required large numbers of skillful craftsmen and a lot of time.

If Ji Hao failed to provide all those arrows he promised, the reputation of human leadership would be harmed severely. As a Marquis who made a false promise, no one would follow any order of his ever.

The ones who weren’t so close to Ji Hao were simply curious. They wondered if Ji Hao could truly provide so many spell symbol arrows. They assumed that Ji Hao was only bragging. How could spell symbols be made so easily? Not to mention making so many to fulfill Yi Di’s demand within three short days.

But what if Ji Hao did keep his promise?

"I truly want to see Yi Di’s face!" A few princes from large clans

gathered together, whispering to each other. They were smiling with expectation; they seemed to even be gloating over the misery that Yi Di might suffer.

"If Earl Yao...Ah, if Marquis Yao can truly provide so many spell symbol arrows..." Abruptly, a prince said in a low voice, "Then, we need to reevaluate the powers of Marquis Yao and Minister Si Wen Ming, and...Emperor Shun... all of them!"

The group of princes raised their heads and looked at the headquarters with sparkling eyes.

If Ji Hao could truly provide those arrows in the astronomical number that Yi Di extorted from him, Ji Hao, or Si Wen Ming as his supporter, or even Emperor Shun, as Si Wen Ming's supporter, one of them could be concluded to be possessing an unimaginably great power, that ordinary people might not even be able to imagine.

Such a great power could affect many essential factors; for example, who would become the next human emperor. Even the main growing trend of the entire humankind would be affected as well. As top-grade elites raised by super-grade human clans and families, these people must think about the possible influences that might be changed by this great power, in their own families and clans.

A small number of them saw Ji Hao as an enemy. These people stood in the darkest corners with long faces. They avoided those torches around the headquarters and hid in darkness, quietly waiting for Ji Hao to be embarrassed and humiliated.

"Emperor Shun can't possibly find enough spell symbol arrows, not even by emptying all warehouses in Pu Ban City." In the darkness, someone said with a cold and low voice, "Ji Hao bragged too hard. I'd like to see how will he wrap it up this time."

"As the chief commander, he actually talked like that. Can this be counted as shaking the morale of the army?" said another cold

voice with sarcasm, "This poor kid, he has been lucky these years. He built some small contributions, then he began having too high an opinion of himself. The morale of the army is shaken by him. I think Minister Hao Tao should behead him."

"Ji Hao acts so recklessly. It’s pretty obvious that Minister Si Wen Ming has chosen the wrong person. Is it truly right for Minister Si Wen Ming to be in charge of the flood-control mission?" Someone in the darkness changed the topic. By talking about the bet made by Ji Hao and Yi Di, this person conveniently mentioned Si Wen Ming.

Many people hadn’t given up on the flood-control mission, and had still been thinking about it, about the great, marvelous credit which would be earned another the mission was accomplished. They were also thinking about the fact that great credit would push its owner smoothly onto the throne.

These people would love to witness anything that could be bad for Si Wen Ming, through frustrating Ji Hao. It would be even better if Emperor Shun could be dragged down from that throne, and if the one they chose to support could ascend to the throne...

As long as they had an opportunity, these people would be happy to do those things to Ji Hao, Si Wen Ming and emperor Shun; they would be willing join hands and do it together.

As for the future of the humankind, the wellbeing of all human beings...Did the lives of those lowly beings have anything to do with them? Those lowly beings were already soaked in the flood for so long; they could live like this for three to five more years, without dying!

So many human beings existed in the world anyway, so many lowly beings. It was actually good for some of them to die, because after they died, territories would be empty, and those empty territories could be given to their children, right?

Ordered footsteps could be heard from a distance. Following

them, Yi Di proudly walked over with his head held high. A shining golden feather armor was worn by Yi Di.

A golden pair of wings slowly spread behind Yi Di's body. The wingspan was over fifteen-meters wide. Strong gusts of wind blew out from Yi Di's wings, rustling the surrounding tents.

Two characters were written on this pair of wings: 'thunder' on the left and 'lightning' on the right. Judging from the sense of power released from these wings, this pair was clearly a peak-level Divine-Magus-grade magic treasure. The sense of power from these wings was prehistorical; apparently, this was an inherited magic treasure passed down from Yi Di's ancestors.

A whole ten-thousand archers walked behind Yi Di in perfect lines, with each line having ten archers. They were wearing neat feather armors, with their chins raised slightly, smiling politely and proudly. With big steps, this troop walked straight to the square before the headquarters.

Those archers quickly lined up on the square into a hundred square formations, each formation having a hundred archers.

Yi Di rested his hands on his hips and took a long gasp. Suddenly, he burst with a resonant howl that sounded like a scream of an enormous roc bird. "Lord Ji Hao, Marquis Yao, where are those arrows you promised us? You are sending us to the city of the non-humankind, but without spell symbols arrows, you will be sending us to die, won't you?"

While chuckling, Yi Di shouted loudly, "You can't fool us! You're the chief commander of this army! If you refuse to keep the promise you made in three days ago, don't blame us for asking Minister Hao Tao to bring justice back to us!"

Ji Hao sat in the headquarter. Hearing Yi Di's shouts, he leaped up, lifted the door curtain, and walked out.

Immediately, from under the lights and the darkness, countless

gazed landed on Ji Hao.

Not far away, Man Man and Shaosi stood side by side, both calling Ji Hao’s name with low voices.

Ji Hao glanced at them and calmly nodded, then waved his hand. A clear stream of light was released immediately, from within which, countless brightly sparkling spell symbol arrows swished out, hovering above Ji Hao’s head while causing shrill noises.

Like tidewater, those arrows lined orderly in the air, swiftly hovering in the air and forming an enormous swirl.

Three types of spell symbol arrow shone brightly with different colored light, illuminating the entire city.

Yi Di was stunned. He was frozen in shock, and couldn’t even move.

Ji Hao smilingly looked at Yi Di and slowly walked to him. He gently patted his shoulder and said, "Yi Di, the important mission is assigned to you! I want you to find out every single move of the non-humankind, including what the twelve emperors eat and drink daily, and what they say and do every day. You’re going to find out everything!"

Patting on Yi Di’s neck, Ji Hao continued coldly, "If you are unable to fulfill the mission, according to the military law, you will be executed!"

Chapter 1084: Silent Awe

"It’s impossible!"

Yi Di directly refused Ji Hao’s order.

Ji Hao asked him to find out the current situations of the non-humankind armies. This was dangerous, yet possible. Not to mention anything else, Eastern Wasteland archers were as fast as the wind, which allowed them to be survivors in battlefields. In that aspect, no warriors from any other clans in the rest three wastelands could ever compare with them.

But what did Ji Hao say? To find out what the non-humankind had been doing recently, fine; but the mission was actually so ridiculously specific that he and his warriors had to find out every detail regarding the twelve emperors of the non-humankind. Why didn’t Ji Hao order Yi Di and his warrior to die directly?

"Can’t you do it? Aren’t you willing to do it? Or...you don’t dare?" Ji Hao expressionlessly looked at Yi Di, with both his hands on Yi Di’s shoulder. Ji Hao didn’t seem to put forth his strength, yet Yi Di had already begun shaking intensely. Yi Di couldn’t control his body anymore as his waist was bending slowly, and a loud creaking noise was squeezed out of his spine.

It sounded like a mountain pressing on a fragile bamboo, which could be crushed at any time.

"You asked for spell symbol arrows, I gave you spell symbol arrows. You greedily demanded fifty-thousand high-quality spell symbol arrows for each of your warriors, I gave you each fifty-thousand top-grade spell symbol arrows...But now, are you telling me that you can’t fulfill the mission? Are you despising me? Are you disobeying Emperor Shun’s order? You, do you even care about the humankind?"

Ji Hao laughed abruptly. Looking at Yi Di’s pale face, he

continued, "Good, you do have the courage. You want to die, then I will help you to die!"

Those high-grade commanders in the surrounding were staring at those arrows hovering in the air with complicated looks.

Ji Hao had truly managed to provide so many spell symbol arrows. These arrows were clearly top-grade ones; the power vibration released from these arrows was actually even dreadfully great. Without a doubt, these arrows were terrifyingly powerful weapons. So many arrows, those high-grade commanders didn't believe that Ji Hao could possibly afford these.

It must be Emperor Shun, or could even be those mysterious powerful beings behind Emperor Shun! Otherwise, no human clan could ever find enough high-grade craftsmen to produce so many top-grade spell symbol arrows, no matter how rich that clan was. Thinking about those men with tall hats and blurred faces who showed up suddenly earlier in the Town Hall when the people were arguing, who forcibly suppressed Gong Sun Sword and Suiren Flame with a frightful sense of power...!

Those mysterious beings behind Emperor Shun couldn't be weak. At the moment, everyone on the scene had been silently calculating. Seeing Yi Di getting squeezed by Ji Hao and be unable to even breathe, no one said anything. Even the ones who were close to Yi Di dared not to say anything for him either.

"Marquis Yao, don't act like a bully!" Following a cold and harsh voice, two men swiftly darted out from the formations of Eastern Wasteland archers and reached to Ji Hao from both sides. They put their hands on Ji Hao's arms and shouted out, boosting up their strengths as they attempted to push Ji Hao's arms away from Yi Di's shoulder.

"How dare you!" Standing aside, Man Man burst with a roar. She transformed into a purple-red streak of fire while her pair of hammers turned into two flashing streams of fiery light, roaring at

the two men.

"Man Man, go back!" Ji Hao gave a deep shout, "I am their superior. They offended me, and violated the military law. Today, I am going to teach them a lesson!"

Shaosi moved later than Man Man, yet faster than her. Shaosi flashed across the air and blocked Man Man's way, held her shoulders with both hands and forcibly dragged her back.

The ones who rushed out to help Yi Di were two middle-aged men, who looked around forty to fifty years old, with wrinkled faces. Both of them were peak-level Divine Magi. If one compared Yi Di to a blooming rose raised carefully in a greenhouse, these two were more like strong pines growing on a cliff, which were never afraid of snow and rain. In terms of personal strength, Yi Di and these two men could not be mentioned in the same breath.

Two immense forces struck on both of Ji Hao's arms, intending to push his arms away.

Ji Hao's heart beat strongly, sending waves of gray-colored Chaos blood to every corner of his body. Large streams of Chaos power had been flowing out from the five-colored cauldron. Sixty percent of the Chaos power was absorbed by Ji Hao's heart.

The two Eastern Wasteland Divine Magi quivered intensely. They tried their best, yet Ji Hao remained perfectly motionless, like a mountain. Yi Di showed his teeth as he was struggling to straighten his body back up. Added with Yi Di, three Divine Magi had now been fighting against Ji Hao together.

Ji Hao showed no sign of casting any magic. With pure physical strength, even three Divine Magi, including two peak-level powerful ones, failed to move Ji Hao's arms by even an inch.

"This kid...No, Marquis Yao is so strong. This, this, is he..." Those high-grade commanders who had been watching this were all stunned already. None of them could say a thing!

With different spirit stars, the physical strengths of Divine Magi were slightly different, when they reached to an extreme level of cultivation. For example, Divine Magi with earth spirit stars would be slightly stronger than the others, but not without limitations. If one took Si Xi as an example, back when he was still a Divine Magus, his physical strength was greater than same-level Divine Magi with other types of powers by fifty percent.

But What about Ji Hao? The three Divine Magi had all tried their best, yet they failed to even move Ji Hao's arm. Besides, by now, the faces of all the three Divine Magi had already gone twisted. Their bones were even bent, and they had all been shaking intensely. Clearly, they had strained every nerve of theirs.

But Ji Hao stayed unmoved, with the same calm and expressionless face; not even a single blood vein had bulged on the backs of his hands!

This proved that Ji Hao wasn't using all of his strength, far from it!

What a scary strength! How could he be so strong? Had Ji Hao stepped into that mysterious level of Supreme Magus already?

What a joke! How ridiculous! How old was he? It had only been a few years since Si Wen Ming brought him out from Southern Wasteland. When Ji Hao came to Pu Ban City for the first time, he was only a twelve years old little boy!

The facial expressions of those top-grade commanders were so complicated at the moment, as they looked at Ji Hao in shock, 'Even Emperor Xuanyuan wasn't as strong as Ji Hao at this age, was he?...But how can we compare our dear Emperor Xuanyuan with this freak, Ji Hao?'

Without a sign, all those high-grade commanders were somehow convinced by Ji Hao. They narrowed their eyes and carefully looked at Ji Hao. Emperor Shun and Si Wen Ming chose Ji Hao to lead this elite army, which seemed to be quite a good choice!

Ji Hao sensed the changes of the gazes coming to him from those commanders, and the respect delivered through the gazes, then nodded.

He wasn’t aiming at Yi Di on purpose, but Yi Di jumped out himself. Therefore, Ji Hao decided to awe the others by crushing Yi Di, and that would be more than enough.

So many spell symbol arrows would lead many ‘smart people’ to some very complicated thoughts. Meanwhile, Ji Hao’s personal strength would let some ‘naughty ones’ know that, in this army, Ji Hao was the only chief commander.

"Do you know that you were wrong?" Ji Hao looked at Yi Di coldly.

"I..." Yi Di quickly glanced at Ji Hao. Ji Hao’s eyes were frigidly cold, and no human emotion could be discovered from those eyes. Di Yi quivered intensely, then subconsciously murmured, "I...I was wrong! I shouldn’t, shouldn’t do this! I shouldn’t violate the military law, shouldn’t offend Marquis Earl!"

"Then, correct the mistake... You can still be a good boy!" Ji Hao smiled.

Chapter 1085: Try the Arrows

"I like those who are willing to correct their mistakes. At least, this proves that your brain is not damaged completely." Ji Hao delightfully patted on Yi Di's head, with a warm smile on his face. Ji Hao looked much younger than Yi Di, but he was stroking Yi Di's head. Added with the embarrassed smile on Yi Di's face, an extremely weird atmosphere was created.

Among those onlookers, commanders from Eastern Wasteland clans, especially Ten Sun Country, had their faces turned darker.

Ji Hao was stroking Yi Di's head, just like a man stroking the head of his dog. This was like heavy slaps landing on the faces of those Eastern Wasteland commanders. They even sensed a fierce pain from their faces now.

Yi Ren, who had been competing against Yi Di the whole time, was too enraged at first, but soon, he was thrilled with joy.

Yi Di had lost his face; he had lost the faces of all Eastern Wasteland clans. Facing Ji Hao's silent threat, he was softened, he was frightened like a girl!

Yi Ren even wanted to growl out towards the sky, 'All elders of Ten Sun Country, all powerful people with the future of Ten Sun Country held in your hands, you shall come over and take a look now! This is Yi Di! He has humiliated all our ancestors! How can such a soft man be the leader of all Eastern Wasteland clans?'

"I like obedient kids, and obedient kids get sugar!"

Ji Hao didn't stop stroking Yi Di's head as he continued, "Come, try these arrows I made for you!"

Conveniently clenching his fingers towards those hovering arrows in the air, Ji Hao grasped a few arrows from each type, then put them heavily in Yi Di's hands.

Yi Di and the two commanders who rushed out to help him were

immediately attracted by the few arrows.

"This…This…so beautiful…it’s…"

They were masters of archery. Even before they could walk, they had already started shooting things with specially crafted arrows. They clearly knew what high-quality bows and arrows looked like. At first glance, they knew that these arrows Ji Hao provided were extraordinary.

The arrowheads were thickly covered in spell symbols, and each spell symbol was too beautiful. Every single spell symbol had been sparkling brightly. Thin strands of glow had been drifting up, coiling, and flowing between spell symbols, connecting these tiny spell symbols and raising a glowing mist. It made these arrowheads look especially mysterious.

These arrowheads were perfectly crafted to an unimaginable degree. Every detail was flawless, literally flawless. What was even more surprising was that those spell symbols carved on the arrowheads were smooth and natural. Besides, spell symbols on different arrowheads were exactly the same, and no difference could be found in any detail.

Looking closer, in these three types of arrows with three types of arrowheads, every single detail of the same type of arrow was just the same; every line, every angle, without even the slightest difference.

The arrow shafts were slim and straight.

The quality of an arrow didn’t only reflect in the arrowhead. The quality of the arrowhead decided the power of the arrow, but to a great extent, the quality of the arrow shaft decided if the arrow could have a long range and be accurate and strong.

"It’s impossible!"

Yi Di picked up the few arrows and slowly stroked his finger from the arrowheads to the arrow tails. Wherever his finger reached, he

sensed nothing but a smooth surface, without any roughness, nor any bumpiness; all these arrows were perfectly straight!

No craftsman could ever make a perfectly straight arrow! Even the most skillful master craftsman from the Magi Palace couldn't make a perfectly straight, flawless arrow. An arrow shaft could never be flawless; a tiny roughness, a thin scratch, or a slight bump would be caused during the casting process. A craftsman could never, ever avoid all these.

Nevertheless, right before Yi Di's eyes, these arrows were indeed perfectly straight, with exactly the same size and same spell symbols. Every detail of these arrows was the same. These arrow shafts were carved with feather-shaped patterns, which formed a perfect accelerating magic formation that could largely improve the arrow's shot range, flying speed and penetrating power.

The feather patterns on each arrow shaft were the same; the thickness, length of each line of each pattern, were all the same.

These arrows looked like the works of an inconceivable magic. It was like a perfect arrow was made with magic, then duplicated billions of times by a mysterious power of creation.

"I'm gonna try these arrows!" Yi Di's mouth corners twitched intensely. Confusedly, passionately, he stared at Ji Hao and yelled, "I'm gonna try these arrows. How can arrows be so perfect? How can such perfect arrows exist in the world?"

"Try them!" Ji Hao slapped on Yi Di's shoulder, put his mouth near Yi Di's ear, and chuckled with a deep voice, "Think about it. If I can provide you with this kind of arrows unlimitedly, will you be able to become the king of the Eastern Wasteland?"

As easily as that, Ji Hao planted a seed in Yi Di's heart, straightly, and violently.

If Ji Hao could provide these kinds of arrows unlimitedly...Yi Di's heart started beating furiously. Not to mention becoming the king

of the Eastern Wasteland, he could even unite all Eastern Wasteland clans and seize the greatest power of Ten Sun Country, becoming the true dominator of the east!

"I, I, I'm gonna try them!" Yi Di had almost lost his mind. He grasped a 'hurricane' and flew into the sky.

Pulling open his longbow, Yi Di had a cold glimpse of light flash across his eye. Momentarily, he aimed at an enormous spirit octopus, who had been waving its tentacles on the water surface and heading south. Yi Di loosened his fingers. Swish! Gusts of cyan-colored wind spurted out from the shaft of the 'hurricane' arrow, wrapped it up, and disappeared.

Three miles away, the head of the enormous spirit octopus was suddenly blown up.

"The speed is three times higher than regular top-grade 'hurricanes'. The shot range...at least twice longer!"

Yi Di was shaking in shock. How could this be? He had a whole hundred 'hurricanes' with him right now. Those 'hurricanes' were made by the top-ranked Eastern Wasteland arrow crafters, but Ji Hao's arrows were way greater than these masterpieces. The flying speed of Ji Hao's arrows was three times higher than these masterpieces, and the shot range was at least twice longer.

Yi Di abruptly raised his head and stared at those arrows hovering above Ji Hao's head in the sky.

If these arrows all had such a high quality...Yi Di would even dare to challenge all archers from a half of Ten Sun Country with the two-hundred-thousand archers under his direct command!

"This is impossible!" Yi Di growled out. He then carefully took out a 'volcano collapse', and with a thunderous roar, he released the arrow with all his strength!

Bang! A golden-red sphere of fire burst in the air, momentarily instantly burning all water-kind spirit creatures within a ten miles

wide area into strands of smoke!

The attack range of Ji Hao's 'volcano collapse' was five-times greater than regular ones! And the fire released from Ji Hao's arrow was stronger than the regular ones by more than ten times!

Yi Shen stood in the midair, stunned, looking at Yi Hao with a complicated facial expression.

"Try 'wolf tooth'!" Ji Hao grinningly looked at Yi Di and said, "Try 'wolf tooth'! See if it can penetrate a super strong steel shield!"

Chapter 1086: Wolf Tooth

Hao Tao directed a logistical support group himself, and built a metal wall with specially crafted tower shields.

These tower shields were inspired by those heavy shields used by Jia Clan warriors. Each shield was a foot and two inches thick, three meters long, and six-feet thick, crafted by Masters from the Magi Palace and strengthened by all kinds of spell symbols. The defensive effect provided by every tower shield was as great as a three meters thick alloy wall.

Twenty tower shields were overlapped. The strengthening spell symbols on these shields were activated, emitting a faint yellow glow.

Yi Di held his longbow with the left hand and a ‘wold tooth’ with the right hand, quite worryingly standing three thousand meters away from the shield wall.

The effects of the last two arrows he tried had gone far beyond his imagination. Those arrows were many times greater than masterpieces crafted by top-ranked Eastern Wasteland crafters.

However, in battlefields, ‘hurricanes’ were used for suppressing enemies from long distances and chasing fleeing enemies, while ‘volcano collapse’ arrows were used for delivering mass destruction to relatively weaker enemies.

Only ‘wolf tooth’ served as main arrows in battles between strong archers and powerful enemies, because a ‘wolf tooth’ could deliver a highly concentrated force, and a strong penetrating power. If Ji Hao’s ‘wolf tooth’ arrows were also many times greater than those masterpieces produced in Eastern Wasteland...

Yi Di had been shaking slightly. His heart was twitching, and he couldn’t imagine that scene. Strong enemies with heavy shields and armors getting penetrated one after another, and their heads

punctured accurately and detonated by ‘wolf tooth’ arrows; countless powerful commanders of the enemy falling on the battlefields one after another, leaving those weak, low-grade warriors, waiting for death!

Raising his head, Di Yi looked at those hovering arrows. Gradually, his look turned especially strange and complicated.

If Ji Hao’s ‘wolf tooth’ was truly much greater than the regular ones he had, if all those ‘wolf tooth’ hovering in the sky had the same high quality, and if Ji Hao could truly provide this kind of arrow without a limitation...

"I’d even be willing to..." A terrifying thought flashed across Yi Di’s brain. His face turned faintly blue. Hurriedly, he cast that especially tempting thought out of his head, because he was afraid that this thought might turn into a fire of ambition, burning in his heart, eventually devouring his soul and his entire body.

He put the perfect ‘wolf tooth’ on the bowstring and slowly pulled open the bow.

Streams of light emerged around the longbow. The bowstring transformed into a dazzling beam of light, on which, ant-head-sized spell symbols shone brightly, while circling swiftly around the string.

Countless people fixed their eyes on Yi Di, subconsciously holding their breaths.

All Eastern Wasteland archers on the scene, including Yi Ren, who never had a good relationship with Yi Di, and those elders from Eastern Wasteland Clan and Ten Sun Country, had their faces turned red, glowing red. The blood even seemed to ooze out of their skins.

Just now, these people witnessed the effects delivered by the ‘hurricane’ and ‘volcano collapse’. The arrows provided by Ji Hao were so powerful that it even made the hearts of these Eastern

Wasteland people shake.

Ninety percent of the power of an Eastern Wasteland archer reflected on his bow and arrows. Without bows and the arrows, Eastern Wasteland archers would be like lambs waiting to be slaughtered. But with a strong bow and enough arrows, an archer could become the most terrifying killing machine in a battle.

These hovering arrows in the sky, if all of them were as great as the two shot out by Yi Di just now…If all these arrows landed in Yi Di's hands…How powerful would he become?

Countless elite Eastern Wasteland archers would passionately join Yi Di's army for nothing else but these arrows, at all costs!

To Eastern Wasteland archers, powerful spell symbols arrows were even more attractive than money and beautiful girls. For better arrows, they would give whatever they had!

"Break!" Yi Di roared out and released the arrow.

The arrow tore apart the air and started an ear-piercing swishing noise. Following that, the yellow glow emitted from the twenty tower shields in the front was dimmed. Bang! A fist-sized hole was blasted open in the middle of each shield simultaneously.

A dazzling beam of light penetrated the twenty shields, screaming forward to ten miles, and struck on the fence wall of a building. Large twisted spell symbols sparkled on the wooden fence wall, immediately creating a three-foot-thick protective magic screen. The arrow light pierced into the magic screen and left a hole in the fence wall.

Furious beast roars rose straight into the sky, along with which, a winged bear flew out from behind the wall. The dimly glowing 'wolf tooth' arrow was stuck in the bear's chubby butt, sinking into the bear's skin five feet deep. A blood stream spurted out along the arrow shaft.

Fortunately, flying bears from You Chong Clan were strong and

enormous, and their skins and fur were even stronger than armors. If the one shot by the ‘wolf tooth’ was an ordinary human warrior, his body would be punctured already.

The bear suffered an arrow shot for no reason; without a doubt, it was infuriated. With red eyes, the bear pounced on Yi Di, flapped its giant wings and started a violent hurricane.

Xie Zhi abruptly took a step forward from beside Hao Tao and let out a clear and resonant roar. Hearing his roar, the bear quivered instantly, then the redness faded away from the bear’s eyes. With lingering anger, the bear landed on the ground, roaring with a deep, rumbling voice while still having its eyes fixed on Yi Di.

A few flying bear knights hurriedly rushed over and gently patted the bear’s head, comforting it, while sending a large scoop of honey into the bear’s mouth. The bear chewed the honey, hummed and obediently lied on the ground.

"Twenty tower shields...and the magic screen...The magic screen equals to thirty tower shields..."

Yi Di stared at the holes on those shields in front of him in a soul-deep shock.

He didn’t use any magic power, and the great penetrating power came from the arrow itself. If added with magic powers, the penetrating power of the arrow would be raised by ten, even a hundred times, that could even kill a heavily armored Divine Magus with a single shot!

A ‘wolf tooth’ made by the most powerful arrow crafter in Eastern Wasteland could penetrate fifteen tower shields at most before it disintegrated. But the arrow provided by Ji Hao managed to break twenty tower shields and a defensive magic formation, which equaled to thirty tower shields. After that, the sword pierced into the body of a flying bear for five feet, who was famous for theirits armor-like skin and fur!

Even after all this, the arrow didn't disintegrate, even though the glow of the shaft was dimmed a bit.

Obviously, the 'wolf tooth' sword Ji Hao provided didn't only have an amazingly strong penetrating power, its quality was also incredibly high!

Yi Di had still been shaking slightly, in both shock and excitement. He started to imagine his two-hundred-thousand elite archers all with Ji Hao's arrows...When 'wolf tooth' arrows covered the sky, roaring like a heavy rain, not even a million Magus Kings could ever approach his sword formation.

Slowly swallowing his saliva, Yi Di turned around and looked at Ji Hao, stunned.

In the distance, the looks of those Eastern Wasteland clan elders and Ten Sun Country high-grade commanders changed suddenly, as they all turned to Ji Hao passionately.

Chapter 1087: Life-giving Spring Breeze and Rain

Ji Hao didn't want to pay any attention to those commanders from Ten Sun Country and the other Eastern Wasteland clans.

The Taiji Universe mirror released a clear mist, wrapped up all arrows hovering in the sky and sent them back into the mirror. Ji Hao then crooked his finger towards Yi Di and said 'follow me' with a low voice.

In the headquarters, a white tiger skin was paved on the ground. That was a white horned tiger. Ji Hao sat on the tiger skin with his legs crossed, and loudly flicked the dark golden horn on the tiger head.

Along with the loud silvery clang, Ji Hao looked at Yi Di from head to toe. Standing in front of Ji Hao, Yi Di had never been so quiet and humble. His hands dropped on both sides of his body, eyes fixed on the horn of the tiger head, as if that horn were a great treasure. It was because he dared not to look directly at Ji Hao.

Ji Hao had shown his power.

He simply put his hands on Yi Di's shoulder, but Yi Di and the two peak-level Divine Magi failed to even move his arms. Clearly, Ji Hao's individual strength had already broken some kind of a limit.

Ji Hao was a young man who came from a mid-scale Southern Wasteland clan. He couldn't possibly have too many rare resources for him to use in the early stage of his cultivation, neither could he be guided too much by real powerful people. However, he possessed such a terrifying strength at this young age. This proved that Ji Hao's real background was immeasurably strong.

The one standing behind him was probably a Supreme Magus, who would know?

Besides, Yi Di tried to extort fifty-thousand spell symbol arrows for each of his two-hundred-thousand warriors, and Ji Hao truly prepared the arrows for him. Furthermore, those arrows were extraordinarily powerful, even much greater than the masterpieces produced by the greatest arrow crafters in Eastern Wasteland.

As Marquis Yao, Ji Hao was an upcoming human leader in the alliance of human clans, but could any young man who built his independent territory less than ten years ago possibly afford so many spell symbol arrows? Not to mention Ji Hao, even Emperor Shun wouldn't be able to provide so many spell symbol arrows with an amazingly high quality, would he?

Apart from all the above, all those arrows were perfectly crafted, and were seriously flawless. Could craftsmen ever do that?

In Yi Di's eyes, Ji Hao was now covered in a dense dark cloud, that had been pressing down on him, disabling him from seeing the latter's true face. What a terrifying man! He had been hiding his powers so well!

No wonder Yi Shen and Yi Tian, who had bright futures yet were against Ji Hao, both died because of him.

"You should thank me!" Ji Hao took out two magic pills which those were coiled in blood-red mist, and threw to the pair of fire snakes coiled on his shoulders. Ji Hao burned countless water-kind spirit creatures with the Taiji Creation caldron, then made these pills with their spirit blood.

The two snakes swallowed the pills, excitedly shaking their heads. Every single scale of the two snakes stood straight up, with thin strands of fire power puffing out from under them.

"I do!" Yi Di pondered carefully, then politely nodded to Ji Hao, agreeing with what he said.

"Yi Shen and Yi Tian, if they didn't die, you and Yi Ren wouldn't

have a chance to take over the greatest power of Eastern Wasteland." said Ji Hao while seriously looking at Yi Di. "Therefore, you should thank me, instead of being stupid enough to see me as your enemy, to hate me and want to build your throne with my head, just like those elders of yours who probably had their brains damaged."

Scornfully smiling, Ji Hao continued in a cold voice, "To be honest, first, you can't kill me; second, if you Eastern Wasteland people truly get me killed at all cost, all Eastern Wasteland clans would be facing a destructive disaster...Believe it or not!"

Yi Di's heart twitched. Looking at Ji Hao's confident face and thinking about all the unbelievable things he had done and the extraordinary powers he had shown in these years, Yi Di grinned embarrassedly and said, "Our elders might have been taking things too easy."

"They are foolish!" Ji Hao crossed his legs and pinched the tails of the two fire snakes, making a bowknot with their tails.

The two snakes gasped loudly, staring at Ji Hao and showing the whites of their eyes.

Mr. Crow squatted on Ji Hao's head, looking down at the two snakes. He was quacking like a duck, laughing at the two poor little things which had been trying to unlock their tails yet failed over and over again.

Yi Di remained silent for quite a while. He narrowed his eyes and carefully reviewed all conflicts that happened between Ji Hao and Ten Sun Country, and the causes of those conflicts. Finally, he slowly nodded and said, "Together, Eastern Wasteland clans are extremely powerful; Ten Sun Country is the dominator of the east. The Eastern Wasteland has one voice, one will...Gong Gong from the Northern Wasteland and Zhu Rong from the Southern Wasteland, they're sworn enemies of each other. They have been suppressing each other and consuming each other's power, but

Eastern Wasteland has no enemy."

Taking a long gasp, Yi Di continued in a deep vice, "Eastern Wasteland has no enemy; it has one voice, one will. Therefore, Eastern Wasteland is strong. All human emperors respected Eastern Wasteland, and because of this, Ten Sun Country acted all these years overbearingly."

Before Ji Hao said anything, Yi Di went on, "And, because of Yi Feng, because he took away the supreme divine bow of Ten Sun Country, even though he's chosen by the divine bow itself as its owner..."

Yi Di didn't finish this, but his point was clear.

Yi Feng was Feng Xing's old name. He was an ordinary kid born to an ordinary family in Ten Sun Country. Nevertheless, he was chosen by the supreme divine bow as his owner. Without a doubt, this proved Feng Xing's extraordinary talents and potential. But how could those noble beings in Ten Sun Country tolerate this? How could those people let him live?

They destroyed his home and slaughtered his families. From their point of view, that was reasonable.

Yi Shen and his people found out that Feng Xing and Ji Hao had become friends, brothers, who fought side by side. Therefore, they put Ji Hao's name on their killing list as well...As a result, Yi Shen and Yi Tian both died, while Ji Hao and Feng Xing we still alive and thriving.

This was the reason why those Ten Sun Country leaders hated Ji Hao so much, that Yi Di, Yi Ren and the other their princes had to kill Ji Hao for an opportunity to ascend to the throne of Ten Sun Country!

Whoever killed Ji Hao would become the next dominator of Ten Sun Country.

"This is stupid." At last, Yi Di gave his conclusion. He agreed with

Ji Hao regarding what he said about those Ten Sun Country leaders.

He witnessed Ji Hao’s great power and sensed his immeasurably strong background. After that, he suddenly wanted to laugh. Those Ten Sun Country leaders, those noble people, did they really know about the man they had been offending? Didn’t they know how the word ‘death’ was spelled?

Ji Hao clearly saw the change of Yi Di’s attitude, and he was quite pleased with it.

"Good, now you think those people are stupid, and agree with me. So, follow my lead!"

Ji Hao said straightforwardly, "I can provide you with the best bows, the best arrows; I can turn your warriors into a strong army. I can even..."

Remaining silent for a while, Ji Hao laughed, looked at Yi Di, and said, "I can even take a disciple for my Shifu, to turn you into a brother of mine! From now on, we’re families. I will help you become the king of Ten Sun Country...And you, will give nothing but friendship and loyalty!"

Ji Hao stood up and reached his right hand to Yi Di.

Yi Di didn’t respond for a while, but then, he reached out both hands and tightly held Ji Hao’s.

Their hands held together, tight, very tight...

Chapter 1088: Take A Disciple For His Shifu

Outside the headquarters, Ji Tian, Ji Di, Ji Xuan, Ji Huang and a group of disciples from Ji Hao's Palace of Dao had long streamers holding in their hands. The streamers glowed with starlight, which had been transforming into sharp sword light beams, dazzling across the sky, covering the entire headquarters.

Yi Di's warriors nervously stood outside the headquarters, with their eyes fixed on the extra large tent of the headquarters. If Yi Di didn't bring twelve trusted Divine Magi warrior commanders into the tent with him, these warriors of Yi Di might have already risen up and marched into the tent.

Ji Hao ordered his guards to seal the headquarters with a magic formation. Inside the tent, were Ji Hao, Yi Di and a few others. From any angle, this looked like a trap, and Yi Di's warriors were surely nervous about it.

Inside the tent, a jade incense burner table was placed in the middle. A nine meters long, three meters wide jade board floated above the table. On the thin jade board, Yu Yu's full-length portrait was carved with smooth lines.

Ji Hao made this portrait of Yu Yu himself, for his disciples to worship.

On the jade board, Yu Yu was wearing a red robe and treading on a cloud, with the blueprint of his sword formation drifting above his head, and the four swords hovering around him. He carried a vividly red wine calabash with his left hand, and his right hand raised. The forefinger and middle finger were straightened, pointing at the sky. A faint smile was showing on his handsome face, looking extremely otherworldly.

On the right side of the jade board was a line of thumb-sized ancient characters — Master Shifu Yu Yu. Those characters were inlaid with powdered gold mixed with cinnabar, and were glowing

rather brightly.

A small jade incense burner was placed in the middle of the table. Ji Hao lit three handmade ambergris incense sticks, held them in his hands, and silently stood in front of the jade board. He prayed for a while, and next, put the incense sticks into the burner.

Yi Di did exactly what Ji Hao did. Unaccustomedly, he lit three incense sticks and put them into the burner. Then, following Ji Hao, he kowtowed for three times towards Yu Yu's portrait, then remained kneeling, without making any other move.

Ji Hao stood up and picked up a long jade ruler, heavily whipping on Yi Di's shoulder.

"Yi Di, our sect follows clear and strict rules, yet, every rule is reasonable. You shall slowly get used to the other rules, but I am now asking you one question... Respect our Shifu and never betray, can you do that?"

Yi Di kneeled on the ground, hands rested on his lap as he responded with a bright voice, "I can."

Ji Hao whipped again on his shoulder with that ruler and continued asking, "Be friendly to your brothers and sisters, care and protect younger generations of the sect member, can you do that?"

Yi Di seriously nodded. Led by Ji Hao, he had already sunken in an indescribable solemn and sacred atmosphere.

Except for all kinds of scared offering ceremonies, the alliance of human clans didn't have much of rules or complicated etiquettes to follow. Even in the entrance ceremony for apprentices of the Magi Palace, a few kowtows would be the whole process.

Ji Hao lit the incense so solemnly; he kneeled, kowtowed, and seriously performed a whole series of rituals. By doing this, he instantly pulled Yi Di into a strange, totally novel state. Yi Di didn't know who Yu Yu was, but all these formalities Ji Hao did

clearly told him that Priest Yu Yu was a big deal. His sect was a big deal, and all his disciples were amazing!

Added with Ji Hao's individual strength and all those shocking spell symbol arrows he provided, Yi Di had already started to admire Yu Yu and his sect, even before he formally became a disciple of Yu Yu.

"I can!" Yi Di responded to Ji Hao's question decisively.

Ji Hao continued asking questions, while Yi Di continued answering. After around ten questions, Ji Hao knocked Yi Di's head with the ruler and told him to kowtow to Yu Yu's portrait a few more times. Afterward, Ji Hao silently turned around and kneeled in front of the jade board, praying silently. In his head, he told Yu Yu everything about how he met Yi Di and why he brought Yi Di into the sect. In addition to that, he sincerely requested Yu Yu to understand him and accept Yi Di as a new disciple.

"Shifu, if you don't mind, Yi Di, this little brother of mine, will formally become one of us!" Ji Hao grinningly looked at Yu Yu's portrait while he lazily murmured,

On the jade board, Yu Yu's portrait shone brightly. A faint silhouette emerged from the jade board and glanced down at Ji Hao and Yi Di.

"Good, this boy is fairly good."

The faint silhouette raised his hand and released a flowing stream of light. The light quickly transformed into a hazy silhouette of an eight feet and one-inch long bow. Gradually, the bow silhouette turned clearer and clearer, and soon, an ancient styled, mottled bow descended into Yi Di's hands. The bow was coiled in sizzling electric bolts, as if it were condensed from thunderbolts.

"Yi Di, my disciple, you shall assist your brother, Ji Hao. Follow his guidance, listen to his command, and you will benefit from it.

This ‘thunder running bow’ I found in the Chaos is extraordinary. Take it as a gift."

The silhouette pointed his finger down and sent out another stream of light, flowing into Yi Di’s forehead. Yi Di trembled, as he sensed countless magical archery arts surge into his head like tidewater. All those unimaginable archery arts were much more advanced than those he learned back in Eastern Wasteland.

The archery art in Eastern Wasteland were only skills, but what Yu Yu gave him was the Dao!

"I teach my disciples in accordance with their aptitudes; the contents of courses cover all kinds of weapons and martial arts. This ‘Twenty-four Solar Terms Archery’ I created has just been waiting for its owner, and now, it’s your duty to carry it forward... Back then, I once met the ancestor of your Ten Sun Country, the ancient god Great Yi. His archery art was universe-shaking, yet, I, your Shifu, am no worse than him. Probably, one day, you will be mentioned in the same breath as Great Yi because of your achievements!" said the silhouette with a low voice. Then, the silhouette merged back into the jade board.

Yi Di tremblingly held the thunder running bow and loudly kowtowed to the jade board for over a hundred times.

Behind him, the twelve warrior commanders were completely stunned already. A handy-looking young man shouted directly out in surprise, "Thunder running bow...Twenty-four Solar Terms Archery? Back then, a strange man once forced ancestor Great Yi to drop his bow and admit defeat with only three arrow shots. Great Yi had also lost ten-thousand vats of best wine to that man!"

Hearing this, Ji Hao quivered in shock and nearly fell straight to the ground.

Did Yu Yu do something like that? Forcing Great Yi to drop his bow and admit defeat with three arrow shots? But Great Yi was a powerful divine God, and was famous for his great archery. Yu Yu

did that for nothing else but ten-thousand vats of wine?! However...That sounded truly like something that Yu Yu would do!

Yi Di raised his head, and couldn’t even believe his own ears. "Is my Shifu that strange man? The one who defeated Great Yi? Is this truly the thunder running bow? One of the famous ten ancient divine bows?" asked Yi Di to the warrior commander. "My ancestors' souls, Marquis Ear...No, Brother Ji Hao, who is our Shifu? Is he a divine God?" Yi Di turned to Ji Hao and asked.

Ji Hao could only give a bitter smile. He pulled Yi Di up from the ground and responded with a deep voice, "That is a long story, very long...Hmm, let’s go out first and finish what should be finished!"

In the boundless Chaos, Dachi, Qing Wei, and Yu Yu quivered simultaneously.

"The fortune of our sect is rising all of a sudden...Ji Hao, well done!" laughed all three of them.

Chapter 1089: Make Another Armor

Yi Di took off his tight feather armor.

Flakes of light flew out from his feather armor, as those beautiful feathers turned around one after another. Tiny natural patterns sparkled faintly on each feather, forming countless complicated spell symbols.

This feather armor released a strong yet flexible power vibration, and was entirely glowing with a beautiful light; each detail of it was so natural and beautiful.

This feather armor had a name, ‘swan’. It was a peak-level Divine-Magus-grade magic treasure that originated from Eastern Wasteland and was passed down through generations.

According to the legend, this feather armor originated from the feathers of a powerful swan which lived for countless centuries. Every single feather of the swan contained immeasurable power and thriving life-force. An ancestor of Ten Sun Country people made the move, killed the swan, and took its feathers. A lingering trace of the swan’s soul merged with those feathers, naturally turning the feathers into this swan armor.

Even a wild boar could run as fast as wind with this feather armor. No matter how large and clumsy the boar was, wearing this feather armor, it could run swiftly and quietly, without making any noise.

This feather armor also had an amazing defensive power. Ten high-level Divine Magi could join hands and launch full-power attacks at the feather armor, and the attack could last for three to five minutes, but not even a feather on this armor would be harmed. The feather could naturally create a ‘hurricane forcefield’, which meant the feathers could raise a fierce whirlwind three-hundred meters around its user. Within this range, any average-level attack would be shred by the whirlwind.

This was an incredibly precious magic armor. Ten Sun Country was a wealthy country; during the past countless years, many people tried to copy this feather armor, but all failed, wasting many materials for nothing.

This was also an armor stained with blood. As no one managed to copy it, many powerful archers from Ten Sun Country went deep into jungles and forests, hunting all kinds of powerful birds and looking for a similar armor. Those people killed countless beautiful birds, yet attained nothing.

Yi Di was a direct descendant of that powerful archer who killed that strong swan back then. Among all descendants of that archer, Yi Di had the purest bloodline. He was quite talented, reaching an extraordinary level at a young age. That is why the elders of his family gifted the swan armor to him.

"Brother, it won't work!" said Yi Di straightforwardly to Ji Hao, "This treasure is naturally crafted and can't be copied. My ancestors wasted countless materials, but they didn't even manage to shape a thing like it."

Handing the swan armor to Ji Hao with both hands, Yi Di continued generously, "Brother, if you like it, just take it!"

Ji Hao took over the armor, then conveniently flicked Yi Di's forehead and said, "What do I need your treasure for? I just want to study it. Your warriors are indeed strong, and with my arrows, they can be terrifyingly strong. However, their defensive powers needs to be improved...Strong power and strong defense, that's what a real elite force should be like."

Ji Hao ordered the twelve warrior commanders to take off their feather armors as well, then sent them out of the headquarters, along with Yi Di.

Sitting in the tent with crossed legs, Ji Hao threw the thirteen feather armors into the five-colored cauldron, while classifying all strange materials he had collected. Soon, Ji Hao piled each type of

material up into a small hill around him.

Outside the headquarter tent, seeing Yi Di and those warrior commanders wak out, those Ten Sun Country warriors simultaneously let out a sigh of relief, as they were getting more and more nervous. Those warriors walked up hurriedly. A few higher-grade commanders surrounded Yi Di and began asking all kinds of questions.

"Lord, Marquis Yao kept you in there for such a long while. Did he play any trick?"

"Lord, you must be careful. Marquis Yao is brutal. Countless Eastern Wasteland heroes have fallen in his hands. Don’t let him fool you!"

"Lord, you have to remember what our elders said, whoever brings back Marquis Yao’s head will become the next owner of Ten Sun Country!"

Yi Di remained silent with a dark face. He reached out his hand and gave each of these commanders a heavy slap right on the heads. He didn’t do it gently. Instead, he slapped loudly and made those commanders shout in pain.

"What are you talking about? Marquis Yao invited me in with kindness!" Yi Di puffed out his chest, proudly took out the thunder running bow, and said, "Look at this treasure. This is the thunder running bow, one of the ten ancient divine bows in the world! This is the thunder running bow, only slightly weaker than the greatest supreme divine bow of our country! And this, is a gift from Marquis Yao!"

Snorting coldly, Yi Di threw a threatening side glance at Yi Ren, who had been staring at him from a distance away. Intentionally raising his voice, Yi Di continued, "Marquis Yao Ji Hao is our friend from now on. No one is allowed to speak ill of him in front of me! No one should sneakily speak ill of him either!"

"All in all, Marquis Yao is our family now. From this day on, you all have to listen to Marquis Yao's demand and follow his lead!"

With a bright grin, Yi Di took out a few space bracelets with large capacities and handed to the few commanders around him. Contained in these bracelets were nothing else but those spell symbol arrows Ji Hao made with the five-colored cauldron.

The few trusted commanders held their breaths, then distributed these arrows to those warriors under their commands carefully yet excitedly. The two-hundred-thousand elite warriors under Yi Di's direct command each attained fifty-thousand spell symbol arrows. With such a large quantity of powerful spell symbol arrows, the battle efficiency of these warriors was raised by a couple of times.

Within a couple of hours, the barrack Yi Di lived in became as boisterous as a market.

Many Eastern Wasteland high-grade commanders came to see him, all with complicated, secretive facial expressions. Some of these people came in small groups while some came alone, sneakily. They visited Yi Di in an endless stream for those spell symbol arrows Ji Hao made...Smarter ones also asked Yi Di obliquely what he promised Ji Hao to get such a massive batch of super-grade spell symbols arrows.

Yi Di wasn't silly. On the contrary, he was rather smart and capable. After all, he stood out from the brutal competition in Ten Sun Country and became one of the few competitive candidates for the throne of Ten Sun Country. He used those spell symbol arrows as a bait. He tempted some people with great profits and threatened some with the military force held in his hands, while playing the friendship card with the others. In a couple of hours, Yi Di gathered a considerable number of Eastern Wasteland forces.

Meanwhile, Ji Hao sat in the headquarters tent, delightfully looking at the thirteen tight feather armors floating around him.

"You...What kind of treasure are you? Is there anything you can't

do?" Among the thirteen feather armors, one was the swan armor which served as the original piece, while the other twelve were copies made by the five-colored cauldron. The twelve copies were based on the twelve feather armors that belonged to those trusted commanders, added with a large number of precious materials.

These twelve copies were not too powerful, only around ninety percent as powerful as the swan armor.

Chapter 1090: All-round Upgrade

A feather armor ninety percent as powerful as the swan armor, could allow its owner to move twice as faster as the other same-level archers, and three times nimbler. Besides, it could also improve the overall battle efficiency of this archer by at least ten times!

A feather armor like this could shield its owner against fierce attacks launched by peak-level Divine Magi. If the one wearing this armor was a Divine Magus, added with his or her strong body, no Divine-Magus-level enemy could ever harm even a hair of his or her. Even if the one wearing this armor was only a Senior Magus, with the defense provided by this feather armor, this Senior Magus could survive full-power attacks launched by high-level Divine Magi for a couple of times. Magus-King-level and Senior-level enemies couldn’t possibly cause any threat to this Senior Magus.

If all warriors in an army were wearing feather armors like these, as long as the Divine-Magus-level commanders in this army could pin down all Divine-Magus-level enemies during a battle, this army would never be defeated. It would become a terrifying, invincible iron army.

"Great, truly great. But what kind of treasure are you?" Ji Hao was slightly shocked and confused. He wrapped up the five-colored cauldron with his spirit power and carefully observed those complicated patterns on it.

But soon, Ji Hao gave up on digging the background of the cauldron. Whatever it really was, and wherever it came from, it had only been benefiting Ji Hao for now. Therefore, Ji Hao should get the most out of it.

"Yi Di! Yi Di!"

Ji Hao shouted. Following his voice, Yi Di and the few trusted commanders rushed into he tent.

Conveniently throwing the swan armor back to Yi Di, Ji Hao showed the twelve remolded feathers armors. The twelve feather armors were wrapping in a faint glow that had been flowing and glistening like water, shaking slightly and stirring up waves of ripples.

"Eh?" Yi Di and those commanders instantly had their eyes fixed on the twelve armors. Suddenly, their pupils shrunk to the size of a needlepoint.

"This is my cloud roc armor!" A commander dragged over an armor and flicked in his hands. Swoosh! A strong gust of wind winded up, even whirling many small things in the tent up into the air.

On the cloud roc armor, feathers straightened up and released thin yet sharp air streams, hovering around the armor. Small and complicated patterns emerged on the feathers. These natural patterns formed countless airstream-shaped spell symbols, under the effect of which, the armor vibrated intensively, and the commander could barely hold it.

"This is a Divine-level magic treasure handed down by my ancestors through thirteen generations. An ancestor of mine killed a cyan-eyed cloud roc, took its feather...He bribed a Xiu Clan master with a huge sum of money in Pu Ban City, who made this armor for him with incalculable precious materials." In surprise, this commander looked at the armor held in his hands and said, "But now, it’s at least ten times stronger! Ten times!"

Ji Hao took out a leather scroll and threw to Yi Di.

Written in the scroll was a list of hundreds of rare materials. All these rare materials were required for remolding regular feather armors with the five-colored cauldron. The remolding process would upgrade those regular feather armors to the level of the swan armor.

"Collect these materials as quickly as possible." said Ji Hao with a

bland tone, "Then bring all feather armors of your trusted warriors...I will build an ‘unkillable’ absolute elite army for you!"

Yi Di shook in amazement. Glancing at Ji Hao in shock, Yi Di abruptly turned around and stared at the cloud roc armor, which was surrounded by fierce airstreams.

Without saying a word, he pulled out the two feet long short sword tied around his waist and launched a heavy hack towards the armor. Activated by the power of a peak-level Divine Magus, a three feet long beam of sword light dazzled out from the sword tip and hacked on the armor.

Following a sizzling noise, rapidly flowing air streams swirled up from the armor and transformed into countless small whirlwinds, shielding the armor behind. Yi Di used sixty percent of his strength to launch this hack, yet the sword light he sent out didn’t manage to even touch the cloud roc armor before it was dispelled.

"This feather armor is eighty to ninety percent as powerful as the swan armor!" Yi Di’s face blushed with excitement, as if the blood would soon ooze out from every pore of his.

"Brother Ji Hao...Are you saying that each of my two-hundred-thousand warriors can have a feather amor like this?" Yi Di and those trusted commanders clenched their fists tight, staring straight at Ji Hao, even showing madness on their faces.

They couldn’t believe what they had just heard. However, their minds told them that they had to believe what Ji Hao said.

They hesitated, they struggled, and they were in pain. They wanted so badly to believe in Ji Hao’s words, but they were also afraid. They were worried that Ji Hao was only messing around with them, and they would be so disappointed after they find out the truth.

In Eastern Wasteland, in Ten Sun Country, the swan armor was known as a top-grade magic treasure; it could even be the greatest

treasure of any large human clan. Any armor eighty to ninety percent as powerful as the swan armor could be counted as a true supreme magic treasure, and could be seen as the greatest treasure of a regular large clan or family.

If each one of Yi Di's two-hundred-thousand warriors could have an armor like that, as Ji Hao said, they would truly be unkillable on the battlefield. This army under Yi Di's command would be strong enough to defeat millions, even tens of millions of enemies. Added with those spell symbol arrows Ji Hao provided, even powerful Divine Magi would fall under their storm-like attacks.

Perfect attack, perfect defense... Could such an army truly exist?

"Go, collect the materials!" Ji Hao flicked Yi Di's forehead and said seriously, "Nothing but two-hundred-thousand feather armors...Just small stuff. When you meet our Shifu in person, you will know how powerful our sect truly is... And that is something you can not even dream about."

Yi Di and his trusted commanders were immediately filled with deep esteem. What Ji Hao tried to say was that these armors and all those arrows were actually made by Yu Yu, right?

Yu Yu gave one of the ten famous ancient divine bows to Yi Di as a gift so generously. Therefore, Yi Di and those commanders were fully convinced by Ji Hao.

In the next few days, Yi Di and his trusted commanders acted like greedy wild dogs. By hook or by crook, they made hundreds of vows and promises, and even gave out countless pretty girls from their families, set incalculable engagements, and finally got all materials Ji Hao required.

The five-colored cauldron was inexplicably magical. Those materials were sent to Ji Hao, and were swallowed by it. As the inexhaustible power of creation wrapped up those materials, there came the musical. Within a quarter of an hour, two-hundred-thousand feather armors were remolded, each ninety-percent as

powerful as the swan armor.

Deep inside each remolded feather armor was an extra magic formation, which had completely merged with the armor.

A trace of essence sun fire hid in each of the extra magic formation. If Yi Di and his warriors betrayed Ji Hao, Ji Hao could trigger the essence sun fire with a single thought and burn all of them into ashes.

After those feather armors were remolded, Ji Hao called Yi Di and redistributed these armors to his warriors.

With these remolded feather armors, the powers of the two-hundred-thousand elite warriors under Yi Di's command were instantly and largely improved.

Before all warriors changed to the new armor, a resonant voice suddenly echoed across the entire water city.

"Yi Di, you betrayer, show your face, and die!"

Chapter 1091: A Vow of A Broken Arrow

On the vast water, beside the water city which was being pulled to the north by starry void spirit turtles, Yi Ren stood on a drifting deadwood, holding the ‘cicada-falling bow’ which was the inherited magic treasure of his family. He was the one who had been shouting loudly with a bland face.

However, his heart was filled with anxiety.

In the recent couple of days, in all Eastern Wasteland clans, especially in the army of Ten Sun Country, undercurrents had been growing up. Within a short span of time, Yi Ren and his trusted warrior commanders discovered this bad trend.

Because of those super powerful spell symbols arrows Ji Hao provided, Yi Di suddenly gained an amazing attraction. High-grade commanders from all Eastern Wasteland clans and Ten Sun Country all went to Yi Di, just like a group of flies which had sensed the smell of blood. Even some neutral clans, which had never been involved in the power struggles of Ten Sun Country, now swung to Yi Di.

Spell symbols arrows, everyone wanted spell symbols arrows from Yi Di. Everyone wanted those spell symbols arrows provided by Ji Hao, which were many times greater than the ones made by the most powerful master arrow crafters in Eastern Wasteland.

To an Eastern Wasteland man, a top-grade, powerful spell symbol arrow could serve as an inherited magic treasure of his family. For a top-grade spell symbol arrow, an Eastern Wasteland man would be willing to give all he had.

To warriors from Southern Wasteland, West Wasteland and Northern Wasteland, a small spell symbol arrow might not be attractive at all. However, in the eyes of an Eastern Wasteland man, that could be as important as his life.

Yi Ren clearly sensed that in the past few days, those Eastern Wasteland clan elders and commanders who used to be close to him had changed. When talking to Yi Di, those people started to avoid giving direct answers, neither were they willing to make direct eye-contact with him anymore. Moreover, warriors under those people's commands had now been running into Yi Di's barrack every single day, mingling with his warriors and calling them brothers.

Even those warriors under Yi Ren's direct command, who shared the same bloodline with him and were related to him, started to have different thoughts. These warriors now gathered in small groups, whispering to each other. Everything they said was about those spell symbol arrows.

Before, in this water city, Yi Di and Yi Ren each had fifty percent of all Eastern Wasteland people as supporters. But in merely two to three days after Ji Hao threw out those spell symbols arrows, around seventy percent of all Eastern Wasteland people chose to support Yi Di, while around thirty percent were left as Yi Ren's supporters.

Afterward, Yi Di made his move again. He made all kinds of promises; he even promised someone his unborn daughter. In return, he gained a giant amount of rare materials from those Eastern Wasteland clan elders and high-grade commanders. Soon, Yi Ren discovered in a great shock that as Yi Di made a series of ridiculous promises, united by mirages and various kinds of interests, Yi Di's approval rating had suddenly raised to over eighty percent.

Only less than ten percent of all Eastern Wasteland people in the water city remained to be Yi Ren's unwavering supporters, while the others seemed to be neutral. But, they were actually hesitating, as their warriors had also been heading to Yi Di's barracks all the time.

This situation was extremely bad. Eastern Wasteland in this city

were all top-grade elites from all Eastern Wasteland clans and Ten Sun Country, who were used to station in Pu Ban City. These elites were rather influential in their own clans, which meant their attitudes could represent a big half of their clansmen. If one let these elites' attitudes affect the standpoints of their clans, Yi Di would be able to defeat Yi Ren and become the future owner of Ten Sun Country quite easily.

Yi Ren was too anxious; he couldn't let this terrible situation continue.

When he saw Yi Di walk into the headquarters once again, seeming to be planning something with Ji Hao, he couldn't help but fly out of the water city. He trod on the water while shouting out loud.

Yi Di was wearing the splendidly glowing swan cloak, and holding the thunder running bow, which was coiled with sizzling thunderbolts. A handful of spell symbols arrows were slantingly held in the quiver tied around his waist. Visible and twisted gusts of winds swished around his body, which allowed him to fly across barracks, tents, then airily land on the water surface, three-thousand meters away from Yi Ren.

A withered leaf was shaking intensely on the water surface. Treading on the leaf, Yi Di's body began shaking along with it.

Ji Hao walked out of the headquarters and flew up into a watchtower. Crossing his arms over his chest, he narrowed his eyes while looking at Yi Di and Yi Ren, who were facing each other.

"Feng Xing, Yi Di, and his families have nothing to do with what happened to you back then. Now that he's one of us, you go help him." Yi Hao spread out his spirit power and soon found Feng Xing on another watch tower, that was a short distance away. Ji Hao hurriedly sent his voice to Feng Xing's ears by using his spirit power.

Feng Xing narrowed his eyes, took a glance at Yi Di and Yi Ren,

then slowly nodded, "My enemies are Yi Shen and his families, not Yi Di. Since Yi Di's one of us now...I know what to do."

Ji Hao waved his hand to Feng Xing, then turned to Yi Di and Yi Ren again.

Two-hundred-thousand elite archers under Yi Di's direct command were now mounting on iron feather eagles. Yi Ren's family was slightly stronger than Yi Di's family. He also had two-hundred-thousand elite archers under his direct command, mounted on blood-eyed vultures. Blood-eyed vultures were faster than iron feather eagles, and were more flexible on battlefields.

In terms of general strength, archers under Yi Ren's direct command were slightly stronger than those under Yi Di's direct command. But things were different now, and Ji Hao couldn't help but smile. Those archers under Yi Di's command now had new equipment, and were powerful enough to crush Yi Ren's troop.

"Why are you yelling?" Yi Di landed on the water. He was two years older than Yi Ren. Therefore, he put on an elder-brother-like face and shouted harshly, "Do you know that we're governed by military discipline? You shouldn't be yelling nonsense in here. If the morale of the army is shaken by you, you would be suffering Minister Hao Tao's lashes...Do you actually want to be punished?"

Yi Ren's face blushed slightly. He glared at Yi Di and shouted, "Yi Di, you know clearly what you have done!"

Yi Di spread his hands, showed an honest face, and said, "What have I done? Did I do any nasty thing? Say it out, what have I done that made you shout so loud at me?"

Yi Shen popped up his eyes and yelled loudly, "You colluded with Ji Hao..."

Yi Di laughed out loud, interrupted Yi Ren, and said, "How ridiculous! Marquis Yao Ji Hao is the chief commander of this great army. I am reporting to him, and this is perfectly reasonable!

Did you say that I ‘colluded’ with Marquis Yao? What do you mean by that?"

Yi Di suddenly raised his voice and growled, "You used the word ‘colluded’...Are you seeing Marquis Yao as an enemy? Yi Ren, you’re with bad intentions! You are perfidious! Are you with Gong Gong? Are you betraying your own kind?!"

A huge blame landed on Yi Ren’s head, instantly throwing him into a panic.

He looked at Yi Di in shock. Suddenly, Yi Ren pulled out an arrow, cracked it, and threw the broken arrow heavily towards Yi Di.

"Yi Di, I am vowing with this broken arrow, I want to make a bet with you! I’ll bet with my life!"

Chapter 1092: His Life

Bows and arrows were sacred to Eastern Wasteland people. The vow of a broken arrow was the most sacred vow in all Eastern Wasteland clans.

When an Eastern Wasteland archer broke an arrow and threw it to another warrior, this represented the start of a decisive battle!

Even those master Maguspriests from all Eastern Wasteland clans, who possessed the highest status, or the king of Ten Sun Country, didn't have the right to stop a battle started by a vow of a broken sword.

Yi Ren was enraged, but the rage didn't burn his mind. At the moment, Ji Hao was the chief commander of this united army. Therefore, Yi Ren could never let Yi Di finish his speech and reveal Yi Ren's disloyalty to Ji Hao.

Ten Sun Country leaders had made the call; whoever killed Ji Hao would be the next king of Ten Sun Country. Nevertheless, this could only be kept in mind, instead of speaking out, not to mention shouting it out loud in front of the entire army.

Hao Tao was in here, maintaining the order of the entire army. If Yi Di exposed Yi Ren's ill intent, Yi Ren believed that Hao Tao would definitely execute him right on the spot, before everyone's face. Therefore, he broke an arrow and threw it to Yi Di, boosting up his power as he burst with a resonant growl to challenge Yi Di, "Yi Di, if you still remember that you're an Eastern Wasteland man, if you still remember that you are a possessor of the noble Ten Sun Country bloodline, fight me!"

Letting out a long breath, Yi Ren gave a frigid smile and continued, "This time, let's bet with all we have!"

Yi Di's look turned colder and colder. Staring at Yi Ren, he responded coldly, "Bet with all we have?"

Yi Ren seriously nodded and said, "Our warrior, our properties, our territories in Ten Sun Country, including our fiancées, our lives, our honors... all that we have... all!"

Thunderous wing-flapping noises could be heard. Iron feather eagles and blood-eyed vultures rose from the city and screamed shrilly, swished straight into the sky. These enormous fierce birds hovered in the air for a while, then slowly lined up behind Yi Ren and Yi Di.

Nearly a hundred elders and high-grade commanders from Ten Sun Country and other Eastern Wasteland warriors flew up into the sky. Strong gusts of wind roared behind their bodies and condensed into gigantic wings, holding them up in midair. They silently floated in the air, blandly looking at Yi Ren and Yi Di.

The battle started by a vow of a broken arrow was sacred. Not a single Eastern Wasteland person would stop the sacred battle.

Yi Ren turned around and growled at the two-hundred-thousand archers mounting on blood-eyed vultures, floating behind him, "I broke an arrow to make a vow. Under the witness of my ancestors' souls and the Gods of the world, if I die in the battle, you shall follow Yi Di's lead, be loyal to him, and obey every word he says!"

All warriors mounting on blood-eyed vultures roared out in response. They each pulled out an arrow from the quiver, cracked it, then threw it down.

Yi Di turned around as well and seriously ordered his warriors, who were mounting on iron feather eagles, "A vow of a broken arrow... Under the witness of my ancestors' souls and the Gods of the world, if I die in the battle, you shall follow Yi Ren's lead, fight for him, and obey every word he says!"

Warriors mounting on iron feather eagles also pulled out arrows from their quivers, with their faces slightly twitched and teeth gnashed. They cracked the arrows, then tremblingly threw those broken arrows down.

The arrows broken by Yi Ren's warriors were regular arrows. Therefore, those warriors felt nothing when cracking those arrows. However, Yi Di had just distributed a large number of spell symbol arrows to his warriors. By now, contained in those warriors' quivers were all super-grade spell symbol arrows provided by Ji Hao, without even one regular arrow. The vow of a broken arrow cost each of those warriors such a precious spell symbol arrow, because of which, those warriors even had their internal organs twitching in pain.

"Yi Di, you first!" Yi Ren raised his bow and slightly shook his body, then slid backward for over ten miles with his tiptoes dipped in the water.

"Yi Ren, after you!" Yi Di raised the thunder running bow. All of a sudden, a hurricane started around his body. A roaring gale rolled him straight up into the sky.

Behind Ji Hao's body, a silhouette swiftly flashed across. With a dark face, Hao Tao stood on the watchtower as he said, "Starting a fight in the army, this is a grave crime!"

Ji Hao didn't even take a glance backward as he responded quickly, "We should respect the tradition of Eastern Wasteland. They want to fight to death, so let them do it."

Pausing slightly, Ji Hao lowered his voice and said, "Only one leader is needed for the troops from Eastern Wasteland. I was just wondering how we should send Yi Ren back to Pu Ban City...He jumped out, seeking death... Then, let him die."

Hao Tao's face twitched intensely.

What Ji Hao said didn't meet Hao Tao's principles at all. Nevertheless, this plan of Ji Hao would serve the interest of the entire humankind under the current situation, and was pretty perfect for the series of plans made by Si Wen Ming and Emperor Shun for the future. Hao Tao struggled a while in his head, but at last, he sighed silently.

"The tradition of Eastern Wasteland...Alright!" A long while later, Hao Tao murmured.

Iron feather eagles and blood-eyed vultures had been screaming. They rose to the higher sky, hovering like two dark torrents. They screamed and challenged each other; they vibrated their wings, breaking the air, and letting feathers drift down from the sky.

The feathers fell down like snowflakes. All of a sudden, Yi Ren gave a deep shout, "Autumn breeze blows off the cicadas". Saying this, he pulled the bowstring in his hand. A dim light flashed across the cicada-falling bow of his, and in the following moment, three-thousand arrows were released, flying silently to Yi Di, glowing with a faint cyan-golden light and looking like a golden wind in late autumn.

The wind was dry and cold, withering all living creatures, and delivering a fierce aura of killing.

Yi Ren launched the first shot. When the arrows were still tens of miles away from Yi Di, the strong aura of killing had spread out. From the water treading under Yi Ren’s feet, a giant number of dead fishes floated up, showing their white bellies.

"Eastern Wasteland archery, indeed impressive!" Hao Tao’s dark face twitched again as he praised sincerely.

"‘Autumn breeze blows off the cicadas’, nothing more than this!" Ji Hao smiled coldly. This shot seemed to be extraordinary, yet it only contained a slight race of the great Dao of autumn withering, and was still far, far away from the true great Dao.

Ji Hao had reached a certain stage on the study of great Dao, which allowed him to despise this shot launched by Yi Ren.

"Insects Awaken!" High up in the air, Yi Di suddenly burst with a great roar. ‘Insects Awaken’ was a move of the Twenty-four Solar Terms Art of Sword gifted by Yu Yu. Yi Di launched the move and created an earth-shaking thunder, roaring down along with a cyan

bolt of lightning.

A tremendously strong life-force descended straight to Yi Ren's head. This life-force was completely against Yi Ren's 'Autumn breeze blows off the cicadas'. Stimulated by the move of 'Insects Awaken' was the life-force that belonged to all living creatures in the world. After that thunder, the life-force of the world was boosted up, and all living creatures were seemingly awakened. That overwhelming force immediately tore Yi Ren's intent apart, and blew the three-thousand arrows up.

Yi Ren howled out with a high-pitched voice. He lost his balance, as his head swung backwards. A brightly shining 'wolf tooth' arrow sank deep into the spot between his eyebrows. Cyan-colored bolts of lightning had been sizzling around the arrow. Yi Ren's body wasn't damaged too badly, but his soul was already crushed by the intent delivered by the move of 'Insects Awaken'.

Facing the divine bow, the powerful arrow and the amazing archery art of Yi Di, Yi Ren's challenge was like a bubble on the water surface, shattering with a slight touch.

"A vow of a broken arrow!" Yi Di raised his thunder running bow high.

The two-hundred-thousand blood-eyed vultures stopped hovering. In the air, a giant number of Yi Ren's warriors kneeled on one knee, loudly calling Yi Di 'master'.

Among Yi Ren's two-hundred-thousand warriors, around six-thousand didn't kneel. Instead, they pulled out their swords and neatly beheaded themselves.

Blood splashed out, while those warriors fell from the sky, into the water.

Their mounts screamed in sadness, dove straight down from the sky, and cracked their neck bones on the water surface.

Chapter 1093: A Visitor Late At Night

Such brave, staunch men actually existed among Yi Ren's warriors.

The six-thousand warriors beheaded themselves and shed their blood into the water. Their blood was scorching hot, even boiling the water, and attracted countless greedy water-kind creatures who were thrilled to devour that fresh blood.

Looking at the dead bodies of these brave warriors floating on the water, Ji Hao couldn't help but raise his head and sigh towards the sky. How come these brave and loyal warriors followed Yi Ren, such a reckless and incapable man, as their leader?

"Such a shame! They're worthy of respect, and it's regrettable." Ji Hao gave a resonant roar towards the sky, then waved his right arm, releasing countless beams of golden light that immediately burned out all those water-kind creatures on the water surface which had been fighting each other for the blood of those warriors.

Ji Hao ordered his warriors to bury these dead warriors well. Then, he returned to the headquarters, and grabbed Hao Tao to drink together.

Yi Di had become Ji Hao's brother in the sect. As for the so-called mission of detecting the current situation of the non-humankind, even including finding out the colors of the daily underwear of the twelve non-humankind emperors, was naturally forgotten, fading along the wind.

Except for the six-thousand warriors who beheaded themselves, all of Yi Ren's warriors followed Yi Di's lead. Ji Hao treated these warriors equally, and provided them with super-grade spell symbol arrows, also upgrading their feather cloaks.

Yi Di now had nearly four-hundred-thousand warriors under his command. Among these warriors, even the weakest ones were

peak-level Senior Magi, with strong defensive cloaks, which were ninety percent as powerful as the swan cloak, and tens of thousands of super-grade spell symbol arrows. Every day, Yi Di would lead this elite force and rise into the sky, hovering in the air like a dark cloud to practice the battle formations. Gradually, Yi Di could manipulate this great force as freely as using his own arms.

Time flew by. The enormous city on the water continued moving northward slowly. During the journey, some daring and silly water-kind beings peeked at the city from a distance, but all ended up being shot into sifters by Eastern Wasteland archers. Other than this, nothing special had happened.

Guided by Yi Di, Eastern Wasteland clan elders visited Ji Hao one after another. Usually, after a friendly conversation, these elders would all kneel, pledge their allegiances to Ji Hao. They promised that they would do whatever they could to help Yi Di attain the throne of Ten Sun Country.

In return of this, Ji Hao paid nothing but spending some of his spirit power to produce a batch of spell symbol arrows for each of these Eastern Wasteland clans, and upgrading the feather cloaks of their warriors...As for the required materials, those were provided by these Eastern Wasteland clans themselves.

The sky was still covered by dark clouds, while the heavy rain had been roaring down constantly. Because of the dark clouds and the rain, the world seemed dark.

A bronze water hourglass stood in the middle of the water city, with water drops dripping down, one after another. The water hourglass was marked with time scales. Although the daylight had been absent for long, patrolling warriors in the city only need to take a glance at the water hourglass to find out that it was midnight.

Beside the water city, an area abruptly rose from the water surface. The clear water flew slowly, soon forming a human shape.

Pushed by the waves, this man-shaped water drifted towards the water city, getting closer and closer. Torches on the city wall shone brightly on the man-shaped water, yet weirdly, it didn’t reflect any light.

"A giant wooden city, Ji Hao, this kid is indeed capable." A hoarse voice came from the man-shaped water, "But why is he bringing such an elite force to the north? Preventing the invasion of the non-humankind?...Hehe, who would believe that?"

"He can’t attack Northern Wasteland directly, can he? Which army would march so slowly? Such a giant army, heading to Northern Wasteland at such a low speed, without mountain-huge piles of food. They would all be starved to death on the journey!"

"So confusing, I don’t get it, I don’t get it!"

The man-shaped water nimbly rolled, then reached to under the city wall in a moment. It shook slightly, then transformed into a hazy stream of watery mist, and drifted into the wooden city wall. A strong protective magic screen was set on the city wall, but clearly, this ‘man’ was more powerful than whoever set the magic screen. No reaction was made by the magic screen based on the wall, and the hazy silhouette formed from watery mist had gotten into the city through the wall already.

Without making any sound, the silhouette airily drifted across a few patrolling squads as he unhurriedly approached the headquarters tent.

On a watchtower beside the headquarters, Taisi lied on the roof, his eyes popped widely out, fixed in the distance. In his confused eyes, large troops of water-kind spirit creatures had been heading south, hundreds of miles away.

His unfocused eyes landed on a chubby spirit eel hundreds of miles away. This large eel was over three-hundred meters long, with glistening silver scales. Every time it twisted its body, the tender flesh under its silver sparkling scales would shake.

"What a fleshy eel...Let Feng Xing slice it and Yu Mu cook it into soup, added with the venom of the red-heart three-tailed scorpion they caught yesterday...Spicy, fresh, so delicious... I'm drooling already!" murmured Taisi.

As his belly rumbled, Taisi slowly reached out his hands towards that giant eel hundreds of miles away.

He reached his hand out for half a foot, then a thick wave of air ripples was stirred up from around his palm strangely. He breathed deeply as his hand merged with the air slowly, reaching to the eel in an indescribable, magical way.

Suddenly, a pale beam of light flashed across his confused eyes. Almost instinctively, he turned around and stared at that hazy, watery mist silhouette. That pair of eyes of his was sparkling with a dim, weird light.

"An invasion...Enemies! Where's Shaosi?"Taisi raised his head, subconsciously attempting to call Shaosi's name to tell her to deal with the intruders.

"Eh? Feng Xing told me that I am the big brother, and I can't let my little sister do everything, because that is too shameful as a man!"Taisi lowered his voice and mumbled, "I am a big brother, and I can't let my little sister handle everything!"

Leaning his head, Taisi remained silent and pondered for a while, then raised up his hand, waved his finger, and took out the Nailhead Seven Arrow Book.

A breeze blew from behind, while an enormous silhouette appeared behind him. This silhouette seemed to exist for real, but also seemed to be an illusion. It was like a shadow behind the whole world. In the pale, hollowed eye sockets of this silhouette, a misty divine light locked on the watery mist silhouette, along with a strong aura of death.

"Kill!" Taisi didn't plan to ask any question. He didn't even have a

clue about catching an enemy alive for a confession.

He discovered an intruder, and in his eyes, this intruder was an enemy undoubtedly. Therefore, he used his most powerful weapon for the very first move, and cast the most lethal magic curse.

The hazy watery mist silhouette suddenly burst with a scream, while the faint watery mist turned blood-red.

Puffing noises came from the watery mist without an end; blood sprayed out from it like a rain.

"Bastard! Who dared to sneak attack your great master?!" The voice of that silhouette turned weak and powerless, sounding even dying.

"Your Master Taisi sneak attacked you!" Taisi stood up, tremblingly pointed at that silhouette, and shouted out.

Chapter 1094: Fight Wuzhi Qi

It was a stormy night, with a frigid wind blowing.

The scrawny Taisi was wearing a long white shirt, standing on the watchtower. The wind blew across and rustled his shirt. He looked like a skinny ghost that showed up in the human world, along with the bone-piercing coldness.

The wind was way too cold. Taisi stood up with great courage, pointed at that silhouette and burst with a great growl. But blown by the wind, he quivered, and his tiger-like vigor instantly turned like a meowing cat.

With his teeth striking against each other, Taisi squatted on the watchtower and curled his body, complaining about this cold night.

Ji Hao was sitting in the headquarters tent, with a black and a white airstream hovering and coiling in front of him, as he had been trying to gain a deeper understanding of the Dao of Taiji. Suddenly, he opened his eyes, flashed across the air and broke the space, showing directly up beside Taisi.

Seeing Taisi quivering in coldness, Ji Hao couldn’t help but exclaim, "You’ve taken a Candle Dragon peal, and you should be extraordinarily strong. How did you end up so weak?"

Taisi laughed hollowly, showed the whites of his eyes, then raised the Nailhead Seven Arrow Book and said, "Activated it too fast, the counterforce is strong!"

Ji Hao took a complicated glance at the book, then gave a loud shout and sent the Taiji Universe mirror up from his head, releasing a bright light that lit up the entire area. The bright light swept across the moving water-kind army hundreds of miles away.

Silently, all those water-kind spirit creatures began burning. The gray-white extremely negative fire burned them into strands of

smoke. Countless streams of extremely negative power roared back to Ji Hao. Ji Hao spread his arms and absorbed all extremely negative power. His Chaos blood digested the negative power, turned the negative power into purely positive life-force, which surged through his arms.

Ji Hao slapped on Taisi's shoulder, letting the purely positive power flood into his body.

The atrophic meridians in Taisi's body expanded instantly. A strong warmth surged inside his body, and made large drops of sweat ooze out of his skin. He straightened his body. Even his scrawny body began swelling, that made him look like a muscular man.

"Good brother-in-law, not bad!" Taisi held his hands behind his body, proudly nodded at Ji Hao and said, "Slap me like this every day! I like it, I like it a lot. It feels even thousands of times better than stuffing my stomach!"

Ji Hao gave a fake grin and remained silent. Could he feel not good? All of the spirit blood that belonged to tens of thousands of senior-level water-kind spirit creatures had been transformed into this small amount of life-force and injected into his scrawny body. With this slap, Ji Hao could even turn an ordinary human being into a high-level Magus King, but for Taisi, he did it only to replenish his energy, which was over-consumed due to activating the magic curse. Could Taisi not feel good?

The watery mist silhouette had been fading, and only a faint stream of mist remained drifting in the air by now. Seeing Ji Hao and Taiji giggling to each other as if nothing had happened at all, a twisted, angry voice came from the thin stream of mist.

"Marquis Yao Ji Hao, I came to visit you with the special intention of saving your lives, yet you sneak attacked me with a bloody curse? For what happened today, you have to give me an explanation. Otherwise, don't blame me for having no mercy!"

On a watchtower in tens of miles away, a strong gust of wind blew across. Silently, Feng Xing's slim figure showed up, holding the longbow with three spell symbols arrows set on the string. Hearing the stream of water mist talking, Feng Xing released all three arrows without saying a word.

Three dazzling beams of light flashed across, and the faint watery mist was dispelled.

A shrill scream could then be heard. Meanwhile, a faintly sensible spirit power speedily reaching out of the water city.

Ji Hao opened his erect eye which shone a clear light on the entire city. He clearly saw the moving track of an extremely weak spirit power. Laughing coldly, he said, "You came without an invitation, now you're going without saying goodbye... What do you think this place is?"

The golden bridge transformed into a clear stream of light and rose into the sky. Ji Hao merged with the light and flashed swiftly across the sky, catching up with that trace of spirit power. He reached out his hand, seeming to grasp that fading stream of spirit power.

A red, white and blue light suddenly burst from that weak spirit power. The three-colored light spun around this spirit power like a windmill. Ji Hao pressed his hand on the light and felt like pressing a large balloon. He put forth his strength through his five fingers, however, the light was highly elastic and strong. He failed to grasp the spirit power, and on the contrary, he was bounced back for tens of miles.

The tiny strand of spirit power sank down. Protected by the three-colored light, it swiftly sank deep into the water.

Ji Hao activated the golden bridge again, then followed closely into the water. On diving down for nearly a thousand meters, a giant dragon whale showed up in front of Ji Hao.

The nearly three-thousand-meter long dragon whale had already turned as withered as a zombie. Its blood was drained by an unknown force. Looking at this dragon whale, which lied weakly on the bottom of the water, Ji Hao suddenly thought of the blood all over the ground, back in the water city.

Clearly, Taisi harmed the intruding watery mist silhouette with a powerful magic curse. Because of the connection between the weak spirit power and this dragon whale, this dragon whale suffered severe damage as well. The power of the magic curse drained its blood and caused it a lethal harm.

The weak spirit power reached the dragon whale's head. A faint silhouette flew out from the dragon whale's head and merged with the spirit power.

Ji Hao immediately scanned across that faint silhouette with his own spirit power. Pausing for a second, he smiled coldly and said, "This is also a spirit clone! Impressive, my friend, you're indeed powerful. With nothing but a spirit clone, you can actually control such a giant, Divine-Magus-level spirit creature!"

Followed by a series of clattering noise, the water behind Ji Hao suddenly split up. From it, a man wearing a cyan-colored long shirt, and holding a red, white and blue lamp, walked out in big steps. Without greeting, this man swiftly thrust out his hand and grabbed Ji Hao's neck as he attempted to throw him into the mud in the bottom of the water.

Ji Hao twisted his body. The man coming from behind didn't cast any magic. Instead, he tried to beat Ji Hao with pure physical strength. Therefore, Ji Hao turned around neatly and evilly launched a heavy kick to the vital crotch area of this man. Meanwhile, he crooked the five fingers of his right hand like a sharp claw and fiercely swung towards the man's hand.

The hands of Ji Hao and that man locked together, and next, they both put forth their strengths.

Following a buzzing noise, two immense physical forces clashed against each other. Underwater, a wave of ripple was sent out to tens of miles away. After a thunderous noise, two palms bumped, and pushed away the surrounding water, creating a vacuum zone inside the vast water.

"Arr!!!"

The man who sneakily attacked Ji Hao from behind roared out in rage.

He didn’t think that Ji Hao would kick him in such an evil way. He forcibly moved sideway for half an inch, dodged Ji Hao’s destructive kick and saved his vital body parts. But still, Ji Hao’s tiptoe still brushed against his lower body, heavily landing on the root of his thigh.

A loud thud was created, as the cyan-shirt man was kicked flying away for over ten miles.

Ji Hao looked at that man, laughed coldly out, and said, "Wuzhi Qi, you old b*stard!"

Chapter 1095: Neck And Neck

"You're so young, but how can you fight so shamelessly?!"

Sent flying away by Ji Hao, Wuzhi Qi furiously leaped back up after fell, pointing at Ji Hao as he cursed out.

"Shameless? I can be even more shameless. Wanna try?" Ji Hao chuckled while conveniently pointing his right forefinger out, silently activating the power of the Mantra Dan with Nine Secret Words. Behind Wuzhi Qi, the mud suddenly changed its form and turned into an extremely sharp thorn, slantingly piercing towards Wuzhi Qi's butt.

Wuzhi Qi sensed a fierce coldness coming from behind. Again, he instinctively stepped sideway for a foot.

The sharp thorn was thickly covered in barbs. It brushed against Wuzhi Qi's thigh and dragged off a large piece of cloth from his pants. Looking at that thorn sparkling with a dim, cold light, Wuzhi Qi had cold sweat flowing down from his forehead in streams.

"Marquis Hao Ji Hao, you Southern Wasteland men are the bravest, most straightforward warriors. But you, you evil, unscrupulous freak, how can you be one of them?"

Wuzhi Qi stared straight at Ji Hao. He could swear with his life that he had lived for so many years, met countless brave warriors from Southern Wasteland, but not a single one of them was as shameless and evil as Ji Hao!

"You haven't lived long enough!" Ji Hao dropped his hands, approached Wuzhi Qi with big steps, and said with a faint smile, "Live for thousands of more years, and I guarantee that you will meet numerous young people exactly like me. Wanna bet?"

Wuzhi Qi showed the whites of his eyes, put the three-colored lamp on his head, and freed his hands, swinging them hard.

Gritting his teeth, he glared at Ji Hao, sneered and said, "I came to visit you for some serious business, but since you have acted so unfriendly, I shall defeat you before we head to the business!"

Ji Hao slightly paused. Wuzhi Qi sneakily sent his spirit clone into the water city, did he truly do it for a serious business? Was he talking nonsense, or did he really have something serious to talk to Ji Hao?

Before Ji Hao figured this out, Wuzhi Qi had already roared out, pouncing on Ji Hao along with a fierce gale. Still, he didn't cast any magic, and instead, rushed up with pure physical strength, then threw a heavy punch towards Ji Hao's head.

Wuzhi Qi was a powerful water ape, one of the first batch of creatures in this world. He was as fast as a bolt of lightning, and even Ji Hao didn't manage to see his movement clearly. Ji Hao saw nothing but a beam of light flash across his eyes, before that heavy punch came to his face.

Bang!

The Taiji cloak released water-like waves of clear light, spreading out and surrounding Ji Hao like a giant lotus. Wuzhi Qi's fist punched on the light. The violent force delivered by his fist was weakened by the layers of clear light bit by bit. In the end, this fierce punch became completely ineffective when Wuzhi Qi's fist was still three-inch away from Ji Hao's face.

Wuzhi Qi took a few steps backward in shock. With every step, he traveled seven to eight miles backward, and within a blink of an eye, he moved away for tens of miles.

Angrily, he looked at Ji Hao's glowing Taiji cloak and yelled, "Ji Hao, are you even a man? You fend yourself with a crappy cloak... Can't you fight me decently like a real man?"

Looking at Wuzhi Qi jumping in rage, Ji Hao sensed the strong intention of fighting from him.

What surprised Ji Hao was that what he sensed from Wuzhi Qi was a pure intention of fighting, without any aura of killing.

Remaining silent for a while, Ji Hao waved his hands, and sent the Taiji Cloak into his body. Without being activated by Ji Hao's spirit power, the cloak wouldn't show up again, unless Ji Hao suffered a lethal attack.

Wearing nothing else but a tight, dragon-skin sleeveless jacket and a pair of pants, Ji Hao twisted his body, moved his joints, then crooked his finger towards Wuzhi Qi and said, "Come on, old monkey, let me kick you're a*s! Hehe, do you remember how I beat you up back then in the Town Hall?"

Wuzhi Qi's face suddenly turned especially dark. He opened his jaws and roared out thunderously. A few enormous tusks reached out from his mouth. Pointing at Ji Hao, he laughed in fury and growled, "The one you beat back then was only a clone of mine! He wasn't even one percent as powerful as me! Are you so proud of that?"

Roaring madly, Wuzhi Qi reached straight to Ji Hao with a single step. His arms tore apart the space, smashing towards Ji Hao along with an earth-shaking series of dreadful popping noises.

Ji Hao laughed out wildly and popped out his eyes. Without casting any magic, without even making the moves of sky-opening, earth-splitting, everything-grow, and everything-perish, which were taught by the mysterious man, he launched his violent counter attack with pure physical strength. Same as Wuzhi Qi, he fought with pure violence, without any skill.

Fists bumped against each other, generating mountain-crushing booms.

Fists and faces thudded, as both the muscles and bones cracked loud.

Fists struck on chests, causing muffled drums. From the chests of

both Ji Hao and Wuzhi Qi, bone cracking noise could be heard. Their internal organs had been shaking intensely; they both gritted their teeth and kept their mouths shut tight. Otherwise, they would vomit blood.

Within a single second, over ten-thousand heavy punches had been launched. The faces of both Ji Hao and Wuzhi Qi had swollen; their heads looked like broken watermelons, which had suffered thousands of violent strikes, looking completely out of shape. However, both of them possessed a strong spirit blood. As the thriving life-force surged inside their bodies, all their injuries recovered within a twinkling of an eye. Their faces turned back to normal, but in the following second, they were beaten into broken watermelons once again.

All of a sudden, Ji Hao leaped up into the sky and launched another swift kick to Wuzhi Qi's crotch area, even starting a whirlwind in the process.

Wuzhi Qi rose as well and kicked back fiercely, raising a strong gale.

A long-lasting series of popping noises were caused as the legs bumped in an unstoppable way. Within a blink of an eye, thousands of destructive strikes were exchanged. Their leg bones broke and recovered, over and over again.

Wuzhi Qi smirked abruptly. His pair of arm turned strangely soft, and dodged a massive wave of punch launched by Ji Hao like two nimble snakes, then easily coiled around Ji Hao's neck and dragged hard.

Ji Hao heard his own neck bone cracking. He couldn't see anymore. Instinctively, he wielded his arms like blades and left two beautiful arcs in the air, with the move of sky-opening. His hands were like a pair of sharp blades, swiftly hacking on Wuzhi Qi's chest. As easy as cutting a piece of tofu, Ji Hao's hands cut Wuzhi Qi's chest broken, and came out from Wuzhi Qi's back.

While vomiting blood, Ji Hao stepped backward quickly. He buried his head in his arms, hurriedly straightening his broken neck bone.

Wuizhi Qi was also vomiting blood, and drawing back fast. In a hurry, he took out a few beautifully glowing leaves and threw them into his mouth, then chewed and swallowed them. After that, the wound on his chest began healing slowly.

With pure physical strength, Ji Hao and Wuzhi Qi fought this battle to a draw.

Chapter 1096: Fight With Magic Powers

"Good boy, truly good boy!" Wuzhi Qi gritted his shining white, sharp teeth so tight that it even made his teeth creak. Pointing at Ji Hao, he yelled, "I, your Master Wuzhi Qi, have met countless human heroes. Many of them could fight old spirit creatures like us after tens of years of cultivation!"

Stomping his foot loudly against the ground, Wuzhi Qi detonated the surrounding water. Followed by a thunderous bang, all water-kind creatures within the area a thousand-mile in radius were blown into ashes; even the tiniest aquatic plant had been shattered. Wuzhi Qi opened his mouth. The blood of those killed water-kind creatures flowed into his mouth in streams. Absorbing the blood, the wound on his chest healed speedily.

"Human beings are indeed the owner of the natural fortune of this world." After the injury recovered completely, Wuzhi Qi dropped his arms and looked at Ji Hao coldly.

"I don’t want to say this, but I have to. You’re the owners of this world, without a doubt. No matter how, you have countless more possibilities and opportunities than spirit creatures like us." Wuzhi Qi continued through gritted teeth, while fire sparkles flew out from between his teeth, "However, the ones who could rival us with tens of years of cultivation were emperors and legendary powerful ones among you, such as Fuxi, Shennong, Suiren, Xuanyuan, Shaohao, Zhuanxu..."

Staring at Ji Hao, Wuzhi Qi yelled in anger, "You! Do you have the potential to become a human emperor as well?"

Ji Hao smilingly shook his head. Remaining silent for a while, he said with a low voice, "I can’t be a human emperor, and this is decided by my personality. Fighting wars is what I am best at. Things like strategic planning, we shall leave them to real capable ones."

Ji Hao shook his neck while talking. Nourished by his thriving life-force, his broken neck bones had recovered. Looking at Wuzhi Qi, Ji Hao continued coldly, "Now seriously, you came to visit at midnight, for what? What do you want, old monkey?"

Wuzhi Qi's face twisted immediately. He was indeed a water ape born back in the prehistorical era, but 'old monkey', these two words were like a pair of sharp daggers that stabbed right in his heart. Ji Hao expressed no respect at all through his tone. Instead, it was filled with scorn.

"Good boy, you're physical strength is getting as great as mine. Then, let's try your magic power!" Wuzhi Qi curved up his lip corners while his body gradually transformed into a water stream, merging with the surrounding water.

"Magic power?" Looking at Wuzhi Qi disappearing, Ji Hao chuckled.

He silently incanted the spell of Mantra Dan with nine secret words. Instead of those great magics of Dao he learned from Yu Yu, Qing Wei and Dachi, Ji Hao cast the secret magic he created himself back in his previous life. Mantra Dan with nine secret words was created in Ji Hao's previous life, but he had combined it with what he learned about the great Dao in this life. Therefore, it was now much more powerful than before, and could deliver incalculable possibilities.

With a clear mind, Ji Hao merged himself with the mysterious universal power. He crossed his hands and pushed forward. Immediately, the water within the area hundred-mile-radius around him suddenly turned blue and sticky, becoming half-frozen.

A white silhouette abruptly appeared on the blue water. Wuzhi Qi laughed and attempted to cast another magic to hide in this half-frozen blue water. But Ji Hao waved his hands and gave a deep growl, then incanted a spell.

Buzz! The space around Wuzhi Qi quaked intensively, then collapsed, turning into countless tiny space pieces, swishing to Wuzhi Qi like thousands of sharp tusks.

Wuzhi Qi let out a muffled hum in pain. Quickly, he transformed back into his original shape as a water ape. Tens of bloody wounds were left on his long silver-white fur. Through his beautiful long fur, blood flowing out in ceaseless streams. He suddenly reached his neck out for hundreds of meters long as his eyes shone with a dazzling golden light, stabilizing the collapsing space.

"Kid, impressive!" Wuzhi Qi cursed while showing his teeth in rage, "But, it’s not a Magi Palace magic, neither is something created by those Qi cultivators...It’s like, like a...Like a bit of everything?"

The collapsed space fixed itself in no time. Wuzhi Qi clapped his hands and forcibly turned the surrounding half-frozen blue water into waving dark water, crushing towards Ji Hao along with a thunderous sound of wave. Controlled by Wuzhi Qi’s magic, tens of enormous water dragons emerged from the dark flood, widely opened their jaws while spouting rapid waves of frigid torrents at Ji Hao.

Ji Hao sneered. His Mantra Dan with nine secrets words was created based on all Daoist scriptures he read in his previous life, added with countless secret scriptures regarding human cultivations. It was started by the nine secret words from Buddhism, with the cultivation method of primordial spirit from the Taoist culture as the main body, then polished by all kinds of secret cultivation methods from other genres.

In Ji Hao’s previous life, the Mantra Dan with nine secret words was incomparably powerful. In his current life, it could be counted as special. Ji Hao combined it with what he learned about the great Dao of nature from Yu Yu and his brothers, upgraded it, and allowed it to hold even greater possibilities. Not to mention the effects, in mere terms of flexibility, the Mantra Dan of nine secret

words was definitely a top-grade piece.

Seeing Wuzhi Qi raise dark waves and send out dark water dragons coming down at him, Ji Hao smiled, then suddenly transformed into a white tornado. At first, the tornado was only around fifteen meters tall, but soon, it reached nearly a thousand miles tall, with the diameter of over a mile.

The white tornado roared over, as the bone-piercing cold power spread out swiftly. Visibly, ice-cold white airstreams were flowing and twisting in the air like snakes. The dark wave Wuzhi Qi raised was frozen immediately into an iceberg the second it touched the white tornado, then was shredded into ice crystals.

A cracking noise could be heard without an end. Tens of enormous water dragons were frozen by the frigid tornado, then shredded into pieces by it. Wuzhi Qi widely popped out his eyes in shock, pointing at the tornado transformed from Ji Hao, without being able to say anything for a long while. Wuzhi Qi was a powerful spirit creature, born in the prehistorical era, and was one of the first generation of living creatures in this world. He was a master of water magics; he had reached to an extreme level of all kinds of water-related magic, and with a small step forward, he could be close to the great Dao and achieve a supreme result.

He gathered the essence water power and created those dark water dragons. The cold power released by those water dragons was terrifying, that even metal could be frozen into powder by it.

But what was that white tornado transformed from Ji Hao? Those white airstreams released from the tornado were tens, even hundreds of times scarier than the cold power released by Wuzhi Qi?

"Pre-world extremely negative power?" He was a powerful and knowledgeable prehistorical spirit creature after all. Back in the prehistorical era, Wuzhi Qi had seen tons of strange things. Finally, he figured out the source of Ji Hao’s power.

He was shocked even more badly as he figured out the truth. He stared at Ji Hao as if the latter was a true ghost, then said, "Ji Hao, you're a Southern Wasteland man! You should play with fire! With fire! Didn't Zhu Rong say that men should play with fire, because flooding enemies with the water is something women will do?"

Wuzhi Qi was shocked beyond his wits, that he didn't even know what he was talking about, "You, you, why didn't you listen to Zhu Rong? You're a Southern Wasteland barbarian, why are you using the extremely negative power?"

Ji Hao gave no response, but a cold smile, before he sent out a white beam light and struck heavily on Wuzhi Qi's body.

Crack! Wuzhi Qi was sealed in a three-hundred-meter-radius block of ice which was generated by the extremely negative power.

Chapter 1097: A Chance to Live

An ice block floated on the water. Silently, Ji Hao looked at Wuzhi Qi sealed in the ice.

Inside the three-colored lamp on Wuzi Qi's head, a bean-sized three-colored fire began burning. The fire quickly expanded to the size of a fist, while the strange white, red and blue light reached tens of meters away. A warm and pure positive power spread out, speedily melting the ice.

A couple of breaths later, the ice, which was created by the extremely negative power, dispersed. Wuzhi Qi walked out of the dense watery mist, with his long silver fir soaked.

Treading on the water, he approached Ji Hao step by step. Shaking his body, Wuzhi Qi got rid of the water on his fur, then those pretty long fur turned dry and smooth again. His cyan-colored long shirt had been frozen into pieces already. Taking out a large piece of hide from an unknown source, Wuzhi Qi casually wrapped his body up.

"Nice lamp!" Ji Hao pointed at the lamp on Wuzhi Qi's head and said, without showing any intention of fighting again.

"It's indeed a nice piece!" Wuzhi Qi pointed his finger at the lamp, then raised a dense watery mist from the water surface, which surrounded Ji Hao and himself. In the mist, tiny sparkling spell symbols were visible. This mist was created by a spirit creature magic, and ordinary cultivators couldn't look through it.

"In the past thousands of years, I have reached a considerable level on the cultivation of my spirit creature power. The natural evil contained in my bloodline has been activated, growing stronger and stronger. Many times, I was a breath away from becoming a devil." Wuzhi Qi created an ice piece for himself to sit on. With a frank look, he sat on the ice and continued, "If this three suns heart light hadn't been protecting my soul, I would

have become an evil creature by now."

Ji Hao took a glance at this weirdly shaped lamp. The round-shaped lamp panel was surrounded by three bronze statues of goat heads. Ji Hao slowly nodded and said, "Interesting, indeed a nice piece...What did you come to me for? A fight?"

Wuzhi Qi let out a heavy sigh. His face was covered in long silver-white fur, but from that face, a clear sense of Dao has been released. At this moment, he looked not like the spirit creature God of Huai Water who had done all kinds of evil, but a Qi cultivator.

Naughtily, the watery mist hovered around Wuzhi Qi, rising and falling, transforming into ice crystals and drifting down. Once the ice crystals touched the water surface, they bounced back up immediately, flying up for nearly a hundred meters, then falling back down with a dim glisten.

Millions of tiny ice crystals rose and fell in the air, over and over again. Wuzi Qi sat on the small ice island with crossed legs. Surrounded by these drifting ice crystals, the sense of power he released was special and abstruse, as if he were an ancient God from before the start of time.

"What happened before, let’s forget it, shall we?" Looking at Ji Hao, Wuzhi Qi said in a deep voice, "Conflicts happened between us many times. That was me indeed, yet that wasn’t exactly me. Those clones of mine were generated by the evil part of my soul. If I have ever offended you, please forgive and understand."

Ji Hao frowned. Thinking of all those troubles Wuzhi Qi had caused him in the past few years, he couldn’t help but laugh out coldly, "You wanna wipe out everything by simply saying something like this? Wuzhi Qi, aren’t you too shameless?"

Wuzhi Qi licked his lips and showed his four tusks, then helplessly spread his hands as he said, "Well, someone once mentioned something about ‘causes and effects’ to me. Back then, I

thought he was talking nonsense, but now, I see it’s reasonable."

Wuzhi Qi rolled up the long fur on his left arm slightly reluctantly, and exposed a blue bangle worn tightly on his wrist. The bangle seemed to be made from top-grade sapphire. Streams of watery light had been flowing around inside the bangle, along with countless beams of silver light hovering inside. Cooling airstreams were released from the bangle from time to time.

Wuzhi Qi clenched his fingers towards the bangle. A strong red light stream was dragged out, from within which, a sphere of flame with a three-foot-long chariot, which was embossed with nine dragons, gradually flew out.

The nine dragons chariot glowed brightly with a warm red light. Nine fire dragons emerged, pulling the chariot, with patterns of flame sparkling on the chariot being faintly visible. A fiery cloud surrounded the chariot, and upon the cloud was a fist-sized fireball placed in the middle.

The fireball was burning dimly, with a few cracks on it. However, the moment Ji Hao saw this fireball, he realized that this was a sun!

In his spiritual space, the mysterious man suddenly showed up. The blue light shone from his eyes lit up the entire spiritual space. Through Ji Hao’s eyes, he stared straight at the fireball and the chariot without even blinking.

"Little guy, whatever this Wuzhi Qi wants, as long as it’s not too difficult, just say yes... for the sake of this chariot and the East Emperor divine seal!"

Ji Hao quivered slightly. The chariot and the fireball even attracted the mysterious man. Clearly, they were indeed special. What did he say? East Emperor divine seal? East Emperor? Ever since the beginning of the world, only one divine God was known was East Emperor!

East Emperor Taiyi, the God of sun, who served in the ancient heaven. He was also the East Divine Emperor, who once ruled all living creatures in the east!

The emperorships of the five divine emperors in the heaven had alternated for many times, during which, all kinds of stories happened, more than enough to be written into a great novel with billions of words. But East Emperor Taiyi was the most famous one among all who had been on the throne of the East Divine Emperor. He once made the whole world submit to him with his decisiveness.

Before Wuzhi Qi said anything, Ji Hao and already grasped the nine dragons chariot in his hand.

A terrifying hot power surged out from the chariot. The essence sun fire burned ragingly, spreading to Ji Hao’s entire body through his arm.

From inside Ji Hao’s body, the same golden essence sun fire spurted out, immediately merging with the fire from the chariot. A purely positive warmth flowed into Ji Hao’s body, thrilling every single cell of his with joy.

The nine dragon chariot let out a slight cheer, then transformed into a golden light beam, and flew into Ji Hao’s forehead along with that divine seal.

Between Ji Hao’s eyebrows, the erect eye shone with a strange light. Inside the pupil of this erect eye, a circle of golden light was partly hidden and partly visible. Inside the golden circle, a sun was blazing thrivingly. The nine dragons chariots floated within, as eye-catching as a sunspot.

"As I thought, this treasure is meant to be yours! I saw you fight several times, and many of my children were burned into ashes by you. You are indeed a master of essence sun fire!" Wuzhi Qi glared at Ji Hao and said through gritted teeth, "Now that you’ve taken my treasure, in return, you should promise me one thing...Gong

Gong, if that idiot fails this time, no matter if your humankind will clean the entire Northern Wasteland...spare my life, and among those children of mine, at least save ten percent of them!"

Ji Hao looked at Wuzhi Qi in shock and asked, "You came to me at midnight, gave me a treasure that belonged to the ancient divine God, Taiyi, for nothing else but this?"

Wuzhi Qi crossed his legs and sat in silence, as if he was far away from all kinds of worldly affairs.

He raised his head and looked at the sky. A long while later, he said with a slight confusion, "I promised that old Gong Gong that I will serve Gong Gong Family generation after generation. Therefore, even though I have to kill for it, even though my hands are all stained with blood, I, your master Wuzh Qi, am a faithful one. I do what I said!"

"However, I've done too many wrongs, and now, consequences are coming!"

Wuzhi Qi narrowed his eyes and looked at Ji Hao as he continued word by word, "I came to you for nothing but a chance to live."

Sensing the scorching hot golden light between his eyebrows, Ji Hao remained silent for a short while, then reached out his right hand.

"Deal then!"

Chapter 1098: Boil the Rain and Talk at Night

The rain had been falling heavily. The rainwater originated from twelve different worlds, and surely had different natures.

Some of the rainwater was highly toxic, some was even more corrosive than strong acids, while some was awfully stinky. But of source, the water from Pan Jia world also existed in the rain, extremely pure.

Ji Hao pointed his finger out. Hundreds of fist-sized rain drops flew over to him and fell loudly into a purple-clay teapot. In his previous life, it was rather hard to find a good purple-clay teapot, but fortunately, a large purple-clay mine was found in Yao Mountain territory. Ji Hao dug out tens of thousands of kilograms of top-grade purple-clay from that mine and crafted a set of teaware himself.

The fire was burning strongly in the small red-clay burner, while a refreshing aroma of tea spread out.

The water was the purest water from Pan Jia world, and the tea was also the top-grade kind from the tallest peak of Yao Mountain, nourished by the dense fog all year round, and raised by the natural life-force.

Ji Hao's tea-making skill wasn't good. Actually, it was a disaster. But with a nice teapot, the best water and the best tea, added with the fire controlled perfectly by him, the tea he made was still impressively good. The beautiful green tea was poured into fist-sized teacups. By merely seeing that warm green tea, one would feel so relaxed an happy, that even the primordial spirit would turn clearer.

Wuzhi Qi watched Ji Hao making the tea without even blinking his eyes. His fingers had been moving slightly. Clearly, he was

learning how to make tea.

His long silver fur had disappeared. Instead, he had turned himself into a handsome man, wearing a new cyan-colored long shirt and a pair of buckskin boot. If he had a hand fan held in his hand, he would truly look like an elegant scholar.

Ji Hao handed him a cup of tea. Wuzhi Qi took over the cup, slightly bowed to Ji Hao to thank him, then raised the cup and poured the tea into his mouth, without minding the heat of the tea at all.

Once the tea reached his stomach, he sensed a refreshing warmth spreading through his internal organs. Slight traces of spirit power affected every corner of his body. Wuzhi Qi was capable of accurately controlling every single cell of his body, which allowed him to maximumly sense the refreshing taste of the tea. "Great." He praised sincerely.

He couldn’t tell exactly how good the was tea, but Wuzhi Qi clearly felt that the tea was just amazing, far more delicious than the soup-like teas made by those Magi Palace Magi. Those Magi Palace Magi were crazy, one would never know how many centipedes or scorpions they put in one’s tea. Their teas were indeed nourishing, but that horrible taste was easily imaginable.

"It’s indeed a nice tea!" Ji Hao proudly praised himself. Pouring another cup for Wuzhi Qi, Ji Hao emptied his own cup as well.

The rain was strong. Turbid waves never rested. Deep underwater, glowing aquatic creatures moved across swiftly. Sitting on an ice island, Ji Hao and Wuzhi Qi boiled the rain, and made tea. The red-clay small burner warmed the surrounding air, making this quite enjoyable.

"You human beings always have strange thoughts!" Wuzhi Qi looked at Ji Hao and said honestly, "Back in the prehistorical era, ever since I started to know things, I’ve been spending time with human beings...The longer I have lived, the scarier I found you

folks to be."

Ji Hao held the teacup without saying anything, only quietly listening Wuzhi Qi talking to himself.

"You human beings are so weak. You don't have sharp teeth and claws, don't have furs and scales to cover your bodies. Your newborns are frail, and even your adults are as fragile as rabbits... No, some ancient rabbits were much stronger than you."

"I betted with many Chaos monsters that your humankind wouldn't last for a thousand years."

"But one-thousand years, two-thousand years, one-hundred-thousand years...Countless years had passed, the thrones of divine emperors in the heaven had changed their owners many times... But you human beings survived. You are happier and happier, your territories turned greater and greater, your population grows larger and larger. More and more powerful ones emerged among you, and even a few divine Gods were human beings, who used to serve as your emperors."

Ji Hao raised his teacup and slightly nodded at Wuzhi Qi.

They drank the tea in their cups, then each poured themselves another cup.

"Especially that, when old spirit creatures like us reach a certain level of cultivation, free ourselves from our original forms, and eventually turned to be exactly like human beings...Some of us chose the wrong path. They believed that they were meant to feed on human beings to strengthen themselves."

"But how smart am I? How can I be as silly as those things? I did not kill a human being. Instead, I became friends with human beings. In Huai Water area, I helped people to develop farmlands, protected them from wild beasts, helped them with irrigation construction, gave them rainfalls..."

"Therefore, almost all old spirit creatures like me ended up being

wiped out by powerful ones among human beings, while I, Wuzhi Qi, became the God of Huai Water, entitled by a human divine emperor!"

Ji Hao raised his eyebrows and gave a glance at Wuzhi Qi's face, that had been showing a sagacious look.

This old monkey indeed knew when to yield and avoid disasters.

"As I was quite close with human beings, some leaders of elders of human clans introduced their daughters to me!" Proudly, Wuzhi Qi pointed at his own face and said, "I am not ugly. In fact, I'm quite handsome, much more handsome than some men who had nothing but muscles in their heads. Therefore, those girls willingly married me. I had children with them. The children I had with human girls are much smarter and more capable than those I had with other spirit creatures. They could cultivate themselves more effectively than the others. By now, the best ones among my children all have human bloodlines."

Wuzhi Qi seriously looked at Ji Hao and continued, "So, I understood that, human beings are protected by nature, and going against the humankind will not end well!"

Helplessly pointing at the sky, Wuzhi Qi smiled bitterly and said, "However, that year, I suffered something serious, and almost died. Old Gong Gong saved me...I promised him that I will serve Gong Gong Family forever and ever. For this reason, I had to make mistakes along with them! I knew this will come to no good end, but I owe them. I, Wuzhi Qi, am a spirit water ape, and I am faithful."

"I don't want to die, neither do I want my children to be completely wiped out." Seriously looking at Ji Hao, Wuzhi Qi continued, "So, Marquis Yao, you promise me that you'll spare my life, and by the way...save my children, the ones with human bloodlines. As for the ones I had with the other spirit creatures, they're all as dumb as stones. If you want to kill them, just kill

them!"

Ji Hao looked at Wuzhi Qi’s face, nodded seriously, and responded, "I will."

Wuzhi Qi grinned. He stood up, swirled away Ji Hao’s teapot, teacups and that small red-clay burner, then satisfyingly laughed, "Then, let me tell you one last thing...The nine ‘water eyes’ in Huai Water, Fei Water, Hui Water and Yi Water. The ones trusted by Gong Gong Family have been strictly guarding the nine areas, and even I am not allowed to set foot in. Something might be in those places. I think you should be careful!"

Laughing loudly, Wuzhi Qi transformed into watery mist and drifted away.

Chapter 1099: The Transformation Between Yin and Yang

Returning to the headquarters tent, Ji Hao took a few circles in the tent, then sent someone to invite Hao Tao to the headquarters.

Ji Hao told Hao Tao everything that happened just now between Wuzhi Qi and himself, hearing which, the latter was lost in his thoughts.

"The four water veins are the most important strongpoints of Gong Gong in Midland. Nine secret areas, what would be in those places? Hao Tao's dark face turned wrinkled as he knitted his eyebrows and looked at Ji Hao.

They stared at each other for a while, without knowing what to do. At last, they wrote a secret letter together. Hao Tao gave the letter to a trusted underling to send back to Pu Ban City. Wuzhi Qi seemed to be wanting to say something more specific, yet he didn't. This attitude of Wuzhi Qi made Ji Hao and Hao Tao feel that this whole thing was much more complicated than they thought. Therefore, Ji Hao and Hao Tao decided to report this to Emperor Shun and Si Wen Ming, and let them make the important decisions.

After Hao Tao left, Ji Hao took a few quick circles in the tent, then called Shaosi in a hurry, leaving her some words. After that, Ji Hao left the city alone and jumped into the vast water.

Over ten-thousand miles away from the city on the water, ten-thousand meters deep underwater, Ji Hao sat on a small hill, his arms held in front of his lower belly as he took a deep breath.

Bang! The water thousands of miles around Ji Hao quaked intensely. Within this area, all the water disappeared all of a sudden, while a dim five-colored light sparkled faintly on Ji Hao's lower belly. The five-colored round cauldron hiding in his lower

belly swallowed all the water. The bright light released from the small cauldron spun ceaselessly, speedily turning the after-world water into pre-world, then extracting a thin trace of extremely negative power from it.

Ji Hao narrowed his eyes. Priest Dachi taught him something about the great Dao of Taiji, based on which, Ji Hao began slowly absorbing and purifying that extremely negative power.

Thin strands of extremely negative power were quickly purifying, slowly turning into glistening gray-white air streams, flowing inside Ji Hao's body. From Ji Hao's head, a fiery cloud appeared, and from the cloud, a glowing-red sun rose, shining on the entire area with a warm light.

Those gray-white airstreams were absorbed by the sun, making Ji Hao quiver a bit. He generated this red sun with the power of the Dao of Taiji, and now, this sun started its very first real transformation, between the extremely negative and extremely positive, also known as Yin and Yang.

This red sun looked like the real sun in the world, which represented the pure positive power, which was the Yang. Yet, its real body was created by the extremely negative power, as the Yin. Yang on the outside, with Yin in the inside, transforming like the circle of life, remaining unbroken...

The extremely negative power merged with the black-hole-like core of the red sun. With difficulty, Ji Hao pushed the red sun out. Yin could generate Yang at an extreme point. Strands of pure positive power surged out of the core of the sun, flowing on the surface of the sun. Gradually, the purely positive power turned strong and potent, eventually turning into the power of sun, warming the entire area.

From all directions, the water roared over, flushing Ji Hao's body, then being swallowed by the five-colored cauldron. Turbid waves rolled around Ji Hao. The white foaming waves slapped

against each other, causing thunderous noises, while strong gales were blowing crazily. Ji Hao's body suffered heavy strikes, that made his bones clang like metal.

A giant amount of water was swallowed by the five-colored cauldron. The after-world water had been transformed into pre-world extremely negative power. Then, the extremely negative power was purified by Ji Hao using the power of the great Dao of Taiji, and sent into the red sun above his head at last, generating the pure positive power.

Within a short while, a thriving, extremely positive power culminated in Ji Hao's body. Sharp light beams dazzled out from every pore of his, making his body shine brightly. His body was even merging with the splendid light.

Inside his erect eye, the nine dragons chariot was affected by the extremely positive power inside Ji Hao's body, and started releasing streams of red light.

Buzz! From the chariot, the East Emperor divine seal gradually flew up, slowly to the red sun above Ji Hao's head. Ji Hao carefully released his spirit power and wrapped the divine seal up, allowing it to merge with the red sun, which was his primordial spirit.

This so-called East Emperor divine seal was actually transformed from the soul of Taiyi, the ancient East Divine Emperor in the heaven, in combination with the great Dao of sun. This divine seal represented Taiyi's divine position.

East Emperor Taiyi's entire life was recorded in this fist-sized red fireball, along with all his understanding of the great Dao of sun. Anyone powerful enough to merge with this divine seal and absorb all his understanding of the great Dao of sun would immediately attain all the power possessed by East Emperor. Also, East Emperor Taiyi was known as one of the most powerful few among all divine emperors.

The Pan Gu bell activated itself and released streams of Chaos

power that surrounded the red sun.

Silently, the East Emperor divine seal merged with the red sun, which was Ji Hao's primordial spirit. An overwhelming wave of information burst from the divine seal. Countless golden spell symbols transformed into golden dragons and phoenixes, hovering around Ji Hao, adding a dazzling golden shine to the red sun.

"My cultivation is based on the great Dao of Taiji now...But you want to lead me back to the pure Dao of sun...? Then, the sever cultivation I did in these days would be in vain, wouldn't it? The Dao of sun is an extreme Dao, but only the Dao of Taiji is the true supreme Dao!"

Ji Hao gritted his teeth, withstanding the torrent of information released from the divine seal, while trying his best to maintain the soundness of the red sun.

The core of the red sun was the extremely negative power, while its surface was the extremely positive power. Yin and Yang had been transforming into each other ceaselessly, and this was the right method of cultivation to Ji Hao.

The East Emperor divine seal was domineering. It attempted to forcibly lead Ji Hao back to the pure Dao of sun and make him give up on the great Dao of Taiji, which was more inclusive and perfect. But how could Ji Hao let it?

The Pan Gu bell rang slightly. Next, the divine seal exploded all of a sudden. The dazzling golden light burst from the seal speedily merged with the red sun. Ji Hao felt that his primordial spirit turned heavier and heavier, more and more solid. Inside the red sun, a faint, light-golden silhouette emerged.

Torrents of information regarding the mysteriousness of the great Dao of sun surged out from the divine seal. That light-golden silhouette smiled, absorbing all the information.

East Emperor Taiyi, he was generated by the spirit of sun back in

the prehistorical time. His understanding of the great Dao of sun had reached the peak of perfection. He was a breath away from merging completely with the sun, and attaining immortality with the great Dao of sun.

As long as the sun remained existing, East Emperor would not die!

By now, all of East Emperor's understanding abut the great Dao of sun belonged to Ji Hao. A scorching hot torrent flooded out of the red sun, thousands of times hotter than lava, flushing Ji Hao's body, over and over again. Inside Ji Hao's accupoints, inner spirit stars were lit up one after another. Within a blink of an eye, his acupoints and meridians were all filled with sparkling light spots.

The power of sun was going beyond Ji Hao's control, breaking the limit of Ji Hao's Dao of Taiji and forcibly turning all Ji Hao's power into sun power. But abruptly, the five-colored cauldron buzzed slightly in his lower belly. Unexpectedly, all sun power contained inside Ji Hao's body was swallowed by the cauldron, then thin streams of extremely negative power were released without an end.

"Yin and Yang, the unity of opposites!"

Just now, Ji Hao attained the supreme great Dao of sun from the East Emperor divine seal, and right now, with the help of the small cauldron, he luckily started to develop the great Dao of Yin.

In the red sun above his head, an extremely dim silhouette emerged silently. This new silhouette was hundreds of times dimmer than the light-golden silhouette.

The two silhouettes had different shades of color, yet they had exactly the same height and shape. They both silently standing in the red sun, without making any move.

Chapter 1100: Force Stop

The watery mist was dense. Even the heavy rain roaring from the sky failed to shorten this thousands of meters tall wall of mist by half an inch. On the contrary, the mist turned denser and denser, sticker and sticker, as annoying as a spider net.

Eyesights were weakened badly by the mist. In the mist, A Senior Magus couldn’t even see things three-hundred meters away.

On the city wall of the water city, sentries were all Magus-King-level archers under Yi Di’s command. Eastern Wasteland archers cultivated their eyes since they were little kids with special secret methods. Therefore, an Eastern Wasteland Magus King could hazily see things ten miles away, even in a dense mist like this.

The over a thousand miles long wooden city slowly drifted across the water surface. The strong waves slapped the wooden city wall, shattering themselves along with thunderous booms.

No edges of the three-hundred-meters tall wooden city wall could be seen, neither in the left, nor in the right. The dark defensive magic formation based on the city wall was sparkling with a faint light, lighting the area three to four miles around the city, together with the torches hanging on the watchtowers on the wall.

Ten thousand starry void spirit turtles held thick ropes in their mouths, moving forward in ordered lines as they dragged the enormous city forward, very slowly.

Elite forces were stationed in those small-scale forts built on the backs of those spirit turtles as well. On watchtowers in those small forts, elite archers had also been vigilantly looking around.

"Yo...Yoyoyo..."

From the front, high up in the air, blood-eyed vultures' screams came. The sound of this kind of a bird was not quite pleasant to hear. Thousands of meters high in the sky, a blood-eyed vulture

with the wingspan of over thirty meters had been hovering, along with a strange track at an acute angle.

This meant that enemies had shown up. Blood-eyed vultures making sharp acute angles in the air was a common alarming signal used by archers from all Eastern Wasteland clans.

On the backs of the frontal line of spirit turtle, in those watchtowers, Magi Palace Magi raised their wooden staffs and incanted spells with deep voices. Human-head-sized fireballs swooshed out from their wooden staffs and roared up into the sky, then exploded intensely.

A massive fire was started by each of these tiny fireballs through the explosion. The fire covered the area with a radius of over three hundred miles. Hundreds of fireballs exploded one after another, and instantly after that, even the sky was burned red.

From the front, a blood-red light dazzled across all of a sudden. The blood-eyed vulture hovering in the sky burst with a shrill scream, while its giant body quickly slanted, diving down swiftly while intensely flapping its wings.

A blood-red beam flight flashed across the vulture's wing. The highly corrosive blood-red light crushed a half of the bird's wing and made the vulture's enormous body slantingly fall into the water.

Ten Eastern Wasteland archers with feather cloaks roared towards the sky. Nine of them flew straight up, swiftly moving to where the blood-red light came from, while the last one held up the wounded vulture and dashed to the city while cursing loudly.

On the water surface, a whole hundred metal warships slowly moved across. On those three-thousand-mile-long warships, thousands of sails fluttered in the air. Those blood-red, gigantic sails were swollen by the strong wind, letting out rumbling, swooshing noises.

A thirty-meter-tall divine tower stood on the head of every warship. On top of each divine tower, an erect blood-red eye had been spinning slowly. Just now, one of these divine towers released a blood-red beam and severely wounded that vulture.

These warships were from the Blood Moon. When the nine Eastern Wasteland archers swished over, all these metal warships were filled with non-humankind warriors with blood-red armors. When they saw no one else but nine Eastern Wasteland archers rush over, these non-humankind warriors with exquisite and luxurious armors couldn’t help but laugh out loud together.

A Yu Clan young man in an extravagant long robe, with a blood-red staff held in his hand, laughed aloud, "Ah, I thought this would be a lame and boring patrolling mission, but I didn’t think that something so funny would happen! Nine brave warriors! How scary! There’re nine of them!"

"Hehe, haha, hahaha!"

Countless non-humankind warriors laughed out wildly, even burying their bellies in their hands.

They came with a whole hundred warships, and on each warship were a hundred Yu Clan nobles, a thousand Jia Clan warriors and three-thousand dark-kind warriors, with a large number of non-humankind slaves for them to command.

But nine Eastern Wasteland archers rushed over, even ready to launch an attack against such a great non-humankind army. How ridiculous!

"Kill them!"The Yu Clan young man scornfully waved his hand and ordered his people, "Cut their heads off, get their skulls, and I will make those skulls into beautiful wine containers myself...So that in my dear father’s birthday party, I will be able to proudly..."

One of the nine archers was a low-level Divine Magus, who had just grown his first inner spirit star, while the rest eight were all

Magus Kings. Before the Yu Clan young man finished, the nine archers pulled open their longbows together. Put on their bowstrings were ‘wolf tooth’ arrows, those produced by Ji Hao!

They had already reached less than ten miles away from the warship. This was the perfect distance for ‘wolf tooth’ sword to deliver the greatest effect.

Seeing them pulling open the bows, two Jia Clan warriors growled out and raised heavy tower shields. Each of them took a sideway step and shielded the Yu Clan young man, who was talking before. The three-foot-thick tower shields looked like two doors, perfectly protecting this young man.

A foot-thick layer of light shone on each of the two tower shields, as the two Jia Clan warriors activated the defensive magic formations based on the tower shields.

"Break!" The Eastern Wasteland Divine Magus gave a resonant growl, then injected a stream of power into his longbow. A dazzling beam of light flashed across the head of his ‘wolf tooth’ arrow, before the arrow tore apart the air and darted out.

Dong! The two Jia Clan warriors holding tower shields roared out loud, with their eyes fixed on the fist-sized hole where the two shields connected. They were enraged, and also shocked. The ‘wolf tooth’ sword penetrated their shields. The edge of the hole on their shields was as smooth as a mirror, without any roughness at all. The half-body armor worn by the Yu Clan young man shielded by the two Jia Clan warriors released a dim light, but before the defensive power of this armor was completely triggered, the arrow had already pierced straight into the spot between his eyebrows.

Pop! The head of this young man was blown up, then his tall and slim body thudded loudly on the deck!

"Dishi Mo!" Tens of Yu Clan commanders around the young man shouted and screamed in shock. Their eyes were even popping out from their sockets.

Dishi Mo wasn’t talented, neither was he capable, but he had a great family background — He was given birth by Dishi Yanluo’s youngest brother, and a lover of that brother. In other words, he was Dishi Yanluo’s nephew, and Dishi Yanluo was the current Emperor in power of the Blood Moon!

This patrolling mission was a good one for Dishi Mo to build his military exploits. However, he ended up being killed with an arrow. Even his soul was wiped out!

The rest eight Eastern Wasteland archers burst with a thunderous roar while eight ‘wolf tooth’ arrows swished out simultaneously. Following a series of booms, over twenty Yu Clan commanders around Dishi Mo fell to the ground. Many of them had their bodies strung together by one arrow.

"Kill them all!"

A Jia Clan warrior with a sharp power vibration pulled out his weapon and roared in fury, pointing heavily at the nine archers.

Table of Contents

- The Magus Era
  - Synopsis
  - Copyright
  - Chapter 1001: Arrow Fight
  - Chapter 1002: The Ring of Pangu Bell
  - Chapter 1003: An Arrow Shot From Hiding
  - Chapter 1004: Cut Yi Tian
  - Chapter 1005: Take The Responsibility
  - Chapter 1006: Accompanying
  - Chapter 1007: Chen
  - Chapter 1008: Boy Chen
  - Chapter 1009: Chaos Monster
  - Chapter 1010: Attacked by a Group of Monsters.
  - Chapter 1011: A Long-lasting Hatred
  - Chapter 1012: Ju Fu and Lili
  - Chapter 1013: Original Spirit Creature God
  - Chapter 1014: Supreme Magus, Si Xi
  - Chapter 1015: The Power of A Supreme Magus
  - Chapter 1016: Poor Boy Chen
  - Chapter 1017: He Tu and Lo Shu Great Formation
  - Chapter 1018: Difficult Situation in The Great Formation
  - Chapter 1019: The Power of Si Xi
  - Chapter 1020: The Calculation of the Old Monster
  - Chapter 1021: The True Faces of the Ancient Spirit Creatures
  - Chapter 1022: Mission
  - Chapter 1023: The Fight Never Stopped
  - Chapter 1024: Forced to Bet with Life
  - Chapter 1025: Supreme Magic Treasures Have Souls
  - Chapter 1026: A Great Reversal
  - Chapter 1027: Red Flame Heaven Strike
  - Chapter 1028: The True God of Fire
  - Chapter 1029: Earth God Hou Tu
  - Chapter 1030: Hou Tu Divine Seal
  - Chapter 1031: Feather Mountain Collapses
  - Chapter 1032: Behead Si Xi

Chapter 1033: In A Quiet Place
Chapter 1034: Slaughter the God
Chapter 1035: Another Unexpected Twist
Chapter 1036: Si Xi Goes Up To the Sky
Chapter 1037: Talk About Supreme Magi at Night
Chapter 1038: The Disaster Comes Again
Chapter 1039: Massive Invasion
Chapter 1040: Pu Ban City Is Surrounded by the Water.
Chapter 1041: Inner Hidden Worries
Chapter 1042: Arrogance
Chapter 1043: Water-Kind Monsters Come
Chapter 1044: Lotuses All Over the World
Chapter 1045: Heng Xing
Chapter 1046: What Saints Can Do
Chapter 1047: Rainbow Like Sword Power
Chapter 1048: The Current Situation of Pu Ban City
Chapter 1049: Mob
Chapter 1050: Food Crisis
Chapter 1051: Henggong Fish Slave
Chapter 1052: Internal Problems
Chapter 1053: Dispute Over the Selection of A Person
Chapter 1054: The Problem of Food
Chapter 1055: Rob Food
Chapter 1056: Food Transportation Troop
Chapter 1057: The Bottom-line
Chapter 1058: Interceptions
Chapter 1059: Hou Tu and Gong Gong
Chapter 1060: Food Again
Chapter 1061: Trap Gong Gong with the Bell
Chapter 1062: Fight the Army Alone
Chapter 1063: Flying Bears Kill
Chapter 1064: Burn the Cities
Chapter 1065: A Fire Knows No Morals
Chapter 1066: The Right Person For The Mission
Chapter 1067: Teach People How To Fish
Chapter 1068: The Sunlight Shines
Chapter 1069: The Sun Tower
Chapter 1070: The Sun Terraced Field
Chapter 1071: Enemies Spying

Chapter 1072: The Harvest, The Happiness, The Anger
Chapter 1073: All Streams to The Final Land
Chapter 1074: Five Lands Back into One
Chapter 1075: The City On Water
Chapter 1076: Ignore It
Chapter 1077: Don’t Offend A Woman
Chapter 1078: Precious Cauldron Descends From the Sky
Chapter 1079: A Monkey Jumping Out
Chapter 1080: Strong Oppression
Chapter 1081: The Power of the Cauldron
Chapter 1082: Make Arrows
Chapter 1083: Arrows Like Tidewater
Chapter 1084: Silent Awe
Chapter 1085: Try the Arrows
Chapter 1086: Wolf Tooth
Chapter 1087: Life-giving Spring Breeze and Rain
Chapter 1088: Take A Disciple For His Shifu
Chapter 1089: Make Another Armor
Chapter 1090: All-round Upgrade
Chapter 1091: A Vow of A Broken Arrow
Chapter 1092: His Life
Chapter 1093: A Visitor Late At Night
Chapter 1094: Fight Wuzhi Qi
Chapter 1095: Neck And Neck
Chapter 1096: Fight With Magic Powers
Chapter 1097: A Chance to Live
Chapter 1098: Boil the Rain and Talk at Night
Chapter 1099: The Transformation Between Yin and Yang
Chapter 1100: Force Stop